This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

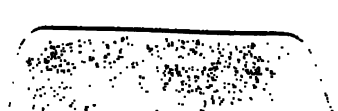
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

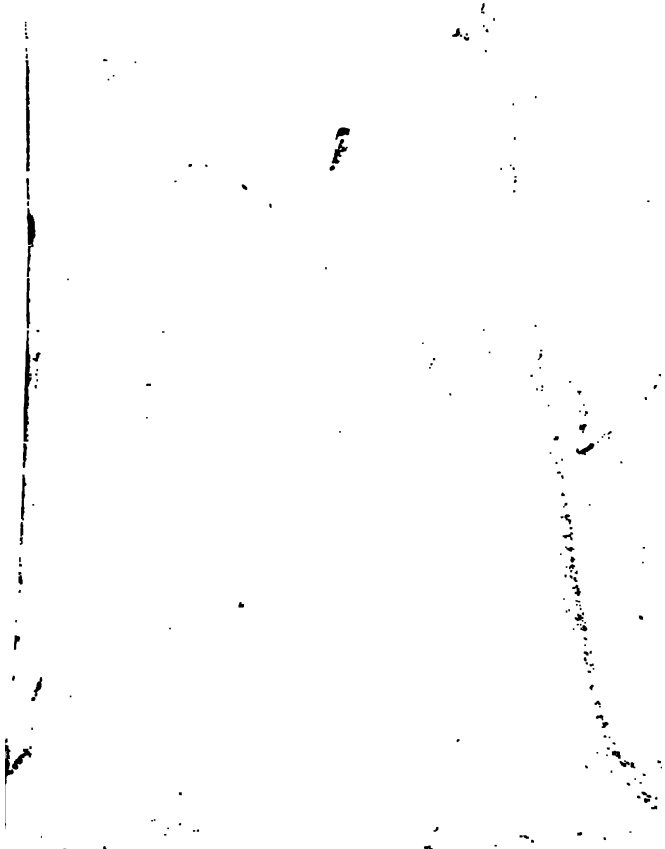
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3433 07609237 2

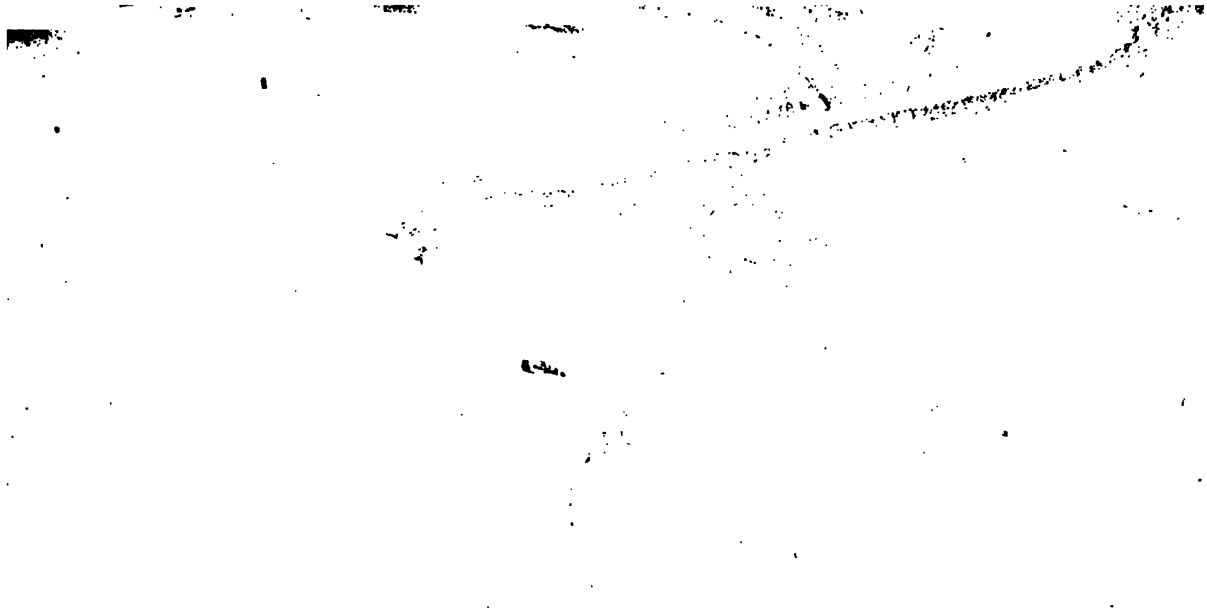


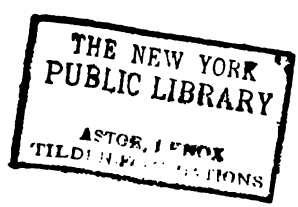
1919
GANSEVOORT-LANSING
OLLECTION
w York Public Library
d Tilden Foundations
HUGO PALTSITS
last will and testament of
RT LANSING
d
junior
Lansing
ork



GANSEVOORT-LANSING
COLLECTION

given to the New York Public Library
Astor Lenox and Tilden Foundations
BY VICTOR HUGO PALTSITS
under the terms of the last will and testament of
CATHERINE GANSEVOORT LANSING
granddaughter of
General Peter Gansevoort, junior
and widow of the
Honorable Abraham Lansing
of Albany, New York




THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

FRONTISPIECE to VOL. XI.

Published according to Act of Parliament Nov 1 84 by

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

WITH

The LIFE of the AUTHOR.

In TWELVE VOLUMES.

VOL. XI.

A NEW EDITION.

TO WHICH IS NOW FIRST ADDED,

THE FATHERS;

OR, THE

GOOD-NATURED MAN.

LONDON:

Printed for W. STRAHAN, J. RIVINGTON and SONS, S. CROWDER, T. LONGMAN, J. ROBSON, C. DILLY, G. KEARSLEY, G. ROBINSON, T. CADELL, T. LOWNDES, R. BALDWIN, J. NICHOLS, W. CATER, G. NICOLL, S. BLADON, J. MURRAY, W. FLEXNEY, T. EVANS, W. OTRIDGE, J. SEWELL, W. LANE, J. BOWEN, and W. FOX.

M DCC LXXXIII.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
482824
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1922 L

CONTENTS OF VOL. XI.

AMELIA.

BOOK VIII.

Chap.		page
1.	BEING the first chapter of the Eighth Book	1
2.	Containing an account of Mr. Booth's fellow-sufferers	5
3.	Containing some extraordinary behaviour in Mrs. Ellison	8
4.	Containing, among many matters, the exemplary behaviour of Colonel James	13
5.	Comments upon Authors	18
6.	Which inclines rather to satire than panegyric	25
7.	Worthy a very serious perusal	29
8.	Consisting of grave matters	32
9.	A curious chapter, from which a curious reader may draw sundry observations	38
10.	In which are many profound secrets of philosophy	43

BOOK IX.

1.	In which the history looks backwards	55
2.	In which the history goes forwards	58
3.	A conversation between Dr. Harrison and others	63
4.	A Dialogue between Booth and Amelia	68
5.	A conversation between Amelia and Dr. Harrison, with the result	74
6.	Containing as surprising an event as is perhaps recorded in history	79
7.	In which the author appears to be master of that profound learning called The Knowledge of the Town	86
8.	In which two strangers make their appearance	90
9.	A scene of modern wit and humour	97

CONTENTS.

BOOK X.

1. To which we ſhall prefix no preface 110
2. What happened at the maſquerade 115
3. Conſequences of the maſquerade, not uncommon nor ſurpriſing 125
4. Conſequences of the maſquerade 128
5. In which colonel Bath appears in great glory 136
6. Read, gameſter, and obſerve 143
7. In which Booth receives a viſit from captain Trent 147
8. Contains a letter, and other matters 152
9. Containing ſome things worthy obſervation 160

BOOK XI.

1. Containing a very polite ſcene 165
2. Matters political 171
3. The hiſtory of Mr. Trent 179
4. Containing ſome diſtreſs 188
5. Containing more wormwood, and other ingredients 192
6. A ſcene of the tragic kind 196
7. In which Mr. Booth meets with more than one adventure 201
8. In which Amelia appears in a light more amiable than gay 205
9. A very tragic ſcene 209

BOOK XII.

1. The book begins with polite hiſtory 214
2. In which Amelia viſits her huſband 217
3. Containing matter pertinent to the hiſtory 223
4. In which Dr. Harriſon viſits Colonel James 229
5. What paſſed at the bailiff's houſe 234
6. What paſſed between the doctor and the ſick man 240
7. In which the hiſtory draws towards a concluſion 247
8. Thus this hiſtory draws nearer to a concluſion 252
9. In which the hiſtory is concluded 259

An ENQUIRY into the CAUSES of the late INCREASE of ROBBERS, &c. 263

AMELIA.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Being the first chapter of the eighth book.

THE history must now look a little backwards to those circumstances, which led to the catastrophe mentioned at the end of the last book.

When Amelia went out in the morning, she left her children to the care of her husband. In this amiable office he had been engaged near an hour; and was at that very time lying along on the floor; and his little things crawling and playing about him, when a most violent knock was heard at the door; and immediately a footman, running up stairs, acquainted him, that his lady was taken violently ill, and carried into Mrs. Chenevix's toy-shop.

Booth no sooner heard this account, which was delivered with great appearance of haste and earnestness, than he leapt suddenly from the floor; and leaving his children roaring at the news of their mother's illness, in strict charge with his maid, he ran as fast as his legs could carry him to the place; or towards the place rather: for, before he arrived at the shop, a gentleman stopt him full butt, crying, 'Captain, 'whither so fast?'—Booth answered eagerly, 'Whoever you are, friend, don't ask me any questions 'now.'—'You must pardon me! captain,' answered the gentleman; 'me; but I have a little busi'ness with your honour—In short, captain, I have 'a small warrant here in my pocket against your

'honour, at the ſuit of one Dr. Harriſon.' 'Y
'are a bailiff then,' ſays Booth. 'I am an officer, ſi
anſwered the other.—'Well, ſir, it is in vain to cc
'tend,' cries Booth; 'but let me beg you will p
'mit me only to ſtep to Mrs. Chenevix's—I will
'tend you, upon my honour, wherever you pleaſ
'but my wife lies violently ill there.'—'O, for th
'matter,' anſwered the bailiff, 'you may ſet yc
'heart at eaſe. Your lady, I hope, is very well.
'aſſure you, ſhe is not there; you will excuſe m
'captain, theſe are only ſtratagems of war. *Bo*
'*and virtus, quis in a hoſteſs equirit?*'—'Sir, I h
'nour your learning,' cries Booth, 'and could
'moſt kiſs you for what you tell me. I aſſure yc
'I would forgive you five hundred arreſts for ſuch
'piece of news. Well, ſir, and whither am I to
'with you?'—'O, any where; where your hono
'pleaſes,' cries the bailiff. 'Then ſuppoſe we go
'Brown's coffee-houſe,' ſaid the priſoner. 'N
anſwered the bailiff, 'that will not do; that's
'the verge of the court.' 'Why then, to the near
'tavern,' ſaid Booth. 'No, not to a tavern,' cr
the other, 'that is not a place of ſecurity; and y
'know, captain, your honour is a ſhy cock; I ha
'been after your honour theſe three months—Com
'ſir, you muſt go to my houſe, if you pleaſe.' 'Wi
'all my heart,' anſwered Booth, 'if it be any wh
'hereabouts.' O, it is but a little ways off,' repli
the bailiff; 'it is only in Gray's-Inn-Lane, juſt
'almoſt.' He then called a coach, and deſired
priſoner to walk in.

Booth entered the coach without any reſiſtan
which had he been inclined to make, he muſt ha
plainly perceived would have been ineffectual, as t
bailiff appeared to have ſeveral followers at han
two of whom, beſide the commander in chief, mou
ed with him into the coach. As Booth was a ſwe
tempered man, as well as ſomewhat of a philoſoph
he behaved with all the good humour imaginab
and, indeed, with more than his companions; wh
however, ſhewed him what they call civility, that
they neither ſtruck him nor ſpit in his face.

Notw

Notwithſtanding the pleaſantry which Booth endeavoured to preſerve, he in reality envied every labourer whom he ſaw paſs by him in his way. The charms of liberty againſt his will ruſhed on his mind; and he could not avoid ſuggeſting to himſelf, how much more happy was the pooreſt wretch, who without controul could repair to his homely habitation, and to his family; compared to him, who was thus violently, and yet lawfully, torn away from the company of his wife and children. And their condition, eſpecially that of his Amelia, gave his heart many a ſevere and bitter pang.

At length he arrived at the bailiff's manſion, and was uſhered into a room, in which were ſeveral perſons. Booth deſired to be alone; upon which the bailiff waited on him up ſtairs, into an apartment, the windows of which were well fortified with iron bars; but the walls had not the leaſt outwork raiſed before them; they were, indeed, what is generally called naked, the bricks having been only covered with a thin plaiſter, which in many places was mouldered away.

The firſt demand made upon Booth was for coach-hire, which amounted to two ſhillings, according to the bailiff's account; that being juſt double the legal fare. He was then aſked if he did not chuſe a bowl of punch; to which, he having anſwered in the negative, the bailiff replied, 'Nay, ſir, juſt as you 'pleaſe. I don't aſk you to drink, if you don't 'chuſe it; but certainly you know the cuſtom; the 'houſe is full of priſoners, and I can't afford gentle-'men a room to themſelves for nothing.'

Booth preſently took this hint, indeed it was a pretty broad one, and told the bailiff, he ſhould not ſcruple to pay him his price; but in fact, he never drank unleſs at his meals. 'As to that, ſir,' cries the bailiff, 'it is juſt as your honour pleaſes. I 'ſcorn to impoſe upon any gentleman in misfor-'tunes: I wiſh you well out of them, for my part. 'Your honour can take nothing amiſs of me, I only 'does my duty, what I am bound to do; and as you

ſays you don't care to drink any thing, what you be pleaſed to have for dinner?'

Booth then complied in beſpeaking a diſh of n and told the bailiff, he would drink a bottle with after dinner. He then deſired the favour of pen, and paper, and a meſſenger; all which were imm ately procured him, the bailiff telling him he m ſend wherever he pleaſed, and repeating his con for Booth's misfortunes, and a hearty deſire to ſe end of them.

The meſſenger was juſt diſpatched with the le when, who ſhould arrive but honeſt Atkinſon? ſoldier of the guards, bolonging to the ſame com with the ſerjeant, and who had known Booth at braltar, had ſeen the arreſt, and heard the order ven to the coachman. This fellow accidentally n ing Atkinſon, had acquainted him with the w affair.

At the appearance of Atkinſon, joy immedi overſpread the countenance of Booth. The cer nials which paſt between them are unneceſſary t repeated. Atkinſon was ſoon diſpatched to the a ney, and to Mrs. Elliſon, as the reader hath b heard from his own mouth.

Booth now greatly lamented that he had writ t wife. He thought ſhe might have been acqua with the affair better by the ſerjeant. Booth be him, however, to do every thing in his power to fort her, to aſſure her that he was in perfect health good ſpirits, and to leſſen as much as poſſible concern, which he knew ſhe would have at rea his letter.

The ſerjeant, however, as the reader hath brought himſelf the firſt account of the arreſt. Ind the other meſſenger did not arrive till a full hou terwards. This was not owing to any ſlowneſs of but to many previous errands which he was to cute before the delivery of the letter: for, not ſtanding the earneſt deſire which the bailiff ha clared to ſee Booth out of his troubles, he had or *the porter*, who was his follower, to call upo *or three* other bailiffs, and as many attorne

try to load his priſoner with as many actions as poſſible.

Here the reader may be apt to conclude, that the bailiff, inſtead of being a friend, was really an enemy to poor Booth; but, in fact, he was not ſo. His deſire was no more than to accumulate bail bonds; for the bailiff was reckoned an honeſt and good ſort of man in his way, and had no more malice againſt the bodies in his cuſtody, than a butcher hath to thoſe in his; and as the latter, when he takes his knife in hand, hath no idea but of the joints into which he is to cut the carcaſe; ſo the former, when he handles his writ, hath no other deſign but to cut out the body into as many bail bonds as poſſible. As to the life of the animal, or the liberty of the man, they are thoughts which never obtrude themſelves on either.

CHAP. II.

Containing an account of Mr. Booth's *fellow-ſufferers.*

BEFORE we return to Amelia, we muſt detain our reader a little longer with Mr. Booth, in the cuſtody of Mr. Bondum the bailiff, who now informed his priſoner, that he was welcome to the liberty of the houſe with the other gentlemen.

Booth aſked who thoſe gentlemen were. 'One of 'them, ſir,' ſays Mr. Bondum, 'is a very great writer 'or author, as they call him — He hath been here 'theſe five weeks, at the ſuit of a bookſeller, for 'eleven pound odd money; but he expects to be diſ'charged in a day or two: for he hath writ out the 'debt. He is now writing for five or ſix bookſellers, 'and he will get you ſometimes, when he ſits to it, 'a matter of fifteen ſhillings a day. For he is a very 'good pen, they ſay; but is apt to be idle. Some 'days he won't write above five hours; but at other 'times I have known him at it above ſixteen.'—— 'Ay!' cries Booth, 'Pray, what are his productions? '—What doth he write?' Why ſometimes,' anſwered Bondum, 'he writes your hiſtory-books for 'your numbers, and ſometimes your verſes, your

'poems, what do you call them? and then again h
'writes news for your news papers.'—'Ay, indeed
'he is a moſt extraordinary man truly—How doth h
'get his news here?'—'Why he makes it, as h
'doth your parliament ſpeeches for your Magazine
'He reads them to us ſometimes over a bowl
'punch.—To be ſure it is all one as if one was i
'the parliament houſe—It is about liberty and fre
'dom, and about the conſtitution of England. I ſa
'nothing for my part, for I will keep my neck out
'a halter; but faith, he makes it out plainly to m
'that all matters are not as they ſhould be. I am a
'for liberty, for my part.' 'Is that ſo conſiſte
'with your calling?' cries Booth. 'I thought, m
'friend, you had lived by depriving men of their li
'berty.' 'That's another matter,' cries the bailif
'that's all according to law, and in the way of bu
'ineſs. To be ſure, men muſt be obliged to pa
'their debts, or elſe there would be an end of ever
'thing.' Booth deſired the bailiff to give him h
opinion of liberty. Upon which, he heſitated
moment, and then cried out, 'O, it is a fine thing
'it is a very fine thing, and the conſtitution of Eng
'land.' Booth told him, that by the old conſtitutio
of England, he had heard that men could not b
arreſted for debt; to which the bailiff anſwered
that muſt have been in very bad times. 'Becauſe a
'why, ſays he, would it not be the hardeſt thin
'in the world if a man could not arreſt another for
'juſt and lawful debt? beſides, ſir, you muſt be mi
'taken: for, how could that ever be! is not libert
'the conſtitution of England? well, and is not th
'conſtitution, as a man may ſay,—whereby th
'conſtitution, that is the law and liberty, and a
'that———'

Booth had a little mercy upon the poor bailif
when he found him rounding in this manner, an
told him he had made the matter very clear. Boot
then proceeded to enquire after the other gentlemen
his fellows in affliction; upon which, Bondum ac
quainted him that one of the priſoners was a poor fe
low. 'He calls himſelf a gentleman,' ſaid Bondum

'but I am ſure I never ſaw any thing genteel by him. 'In a week that he hath been in my houſe, he hath 'drank only part of one bottle of wine. I intend to 'carry him to Newgate within a day or two, if he 'cannot find bail, which, I ſuppoſe, he will not be 'able to do: for every body ſays, he is an undone 'man. He hath run out all he hath by loſſes in buſi-'neſs, and one way or other; and he hath a wife and 'ſeven children.—Here was the whole family here 'the other day, all howling together. I never ſaw 'ſuch a beggarly crew; I was almoſt aſhamed to ſee 'them in my houſe. I thought they ſeemed fitter for 'Bridewell than any other place. To be ſure, I do 'not reckon him as proper company for ſuch as you, 'ſir; but there is another priſoner in the houſe that 'I dare ſay you will like very much. He is, indeed, 'very much of a gentleman, and ſpends his money 'like one. I have had him only three days, and I 'am afraid he won't ſtay much longer. They ſay, 'indeed, he is a gameſter; but what is that to me or 'any one, as long as a man appears as a gentleman? 'I always love to ſpeak by people as I find. And, in 'my opinion, he is fit company for the greateſt lord 'in the land; for he hath very good cloaths, and 'money enough. He is not here for debt, but upon 'a judge's warrant for an aſſault and battery; for 'the tipſtaff locks up here.'

The bailiff was thus haranguing, when he was interrupted by the arrival of the attorney, whom the truſty ſerjeant had, with the utmoſt expedition, found out, and diſpatched to the relief of his diſtreſſed friend. But before we proceed any further with the captain, we will return to poor Amelia, for whom, conſidering the ſituation in which we left her, the good-natured reader may be, perhaps, in no ſmall degree ſolicitous.

CHAP. III.

Containing ſome extraordinary behaviour in Mrs. Elliſon.

THE ſerjeant being departed to convey Mrs. Elliſon to the captain, his wife went to fetch Amelia's children to their mother.

Amelia's concern for the diſtreſſes of her huſband was aggravated at the ſight of her children. 'Good 'Heavens!' ſhe cried, 'what will, what can, become 'of theſe poor little wretches! why have I produced 'theſe little creatures only to give them a ſhare of 'poverty and miſery!' At which words ſhe embraced them eagerly in her arms, and bedewed them both with her tears.

The childrens eyes ſoon overflowed as faſt as their mother's, though neither of them knew the cauſe of her affliction. The little boy, who was the elder, and much the ſharper of the two, imputed the agonies of his mother to her illneſs, according to the account brought to his father in his preſence.

When Amelia became acquainted with the child's apprehenſions, ſhe ſoon ſatisfied him that ſhe was in a perfect ſtate of health; at which the little thing expreſſed great ſatisfaction, and ſaid, he was glad ſhe was well again.—Amelia told him ſhe had not been in the leaſt diſordered.—Upon which, the innocent cried out, 'La! how can people tell ſuch fibs! a great 'tall man told my papa you was taken very ill at 'Mrs. ſomebody's ſhop; and my poor papa pre-'ſently ran down ſtairs, I was afraid he would have 'broke his neck, to come to you.'

'O the villains,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'what a 'ſtratagem was here to take away your huſband!'

'Take away!' anſwered the child—'What, hath 'any body taken away papa?—Sure that naughty 'fibbing man hath not taken away papa?'

Amelia begged Mrs. Atkinſon to ſay ſomething to her children; for that her ſpirits were overpowered. She then threw herſelf into a chair, and gave a full

a full vent to a paſſion almoſt too ſtrong for her delicate conſtitution.

The ſcene that followed, during ſome minutes, is beyond my power of deſcription: I muſt beg the readers hearts to ſuggeſt it to themſelves. The children hung on the mother, whom they endeavoured in vain to comfort; as Mrs. Atkinſon did in vain attempt to pacify them, telling them, all would be well, and they would ſoon ſee their papa again.

At length, partly by the perſuaſions of Mrs. Atkinſon, partly from conſideration of her little ones, and more, perhaps, from the relief which ſhe had acquired by her tears, Amelia became a little compoſed.

Nothing worth notice paſt in this miſerable company from this time till the return of Mrs. Elliſon from the bailiff's houſe; and to draw out ſcenes of wretchedneſs to too great a length, is a taſk very uneaſy to the writer, and for which none but readers of a moſt gloomy complexion will think themſelves ever obliged to his labours.

At length, Mrs. Elliſon arrived, and entered the room with an air of gaiety, rather miſbecoming the occaſion. When ſhe had ſeated herſelf in a chair, ſhe told Amelia that the captain was very well, and in good ſpirits; and that he earneſtly deſired her to keep up hers. 'Come, madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'don't 'be diſconſolate; I hope we ſhall ſoon be able to get 'him out of his troubles. The debts, indeed, amount 'to more than I expected; however, ways may be 'found to redeem him. He muſt own himſelf guilty 'of ſome raſhneſs in going out of the verge, when he 'knew to what he was liable; but that is now not to 'be remedied. If he had followed my advice, this 'had not happened; but men will be head-ſtrong.'

'I cannot hear this,' cries Amelia; 'ſhall I hear 'that beſt of creatures blamed for his tenderneſs 'to me?'

'Well, I will not blame him,' anſwered Mrs. Elliſon, 'I am ſure I propoſe nothing but to ſerve 'him: and if you will do as much to ſerve him your-'ſelf, he *will not long* be a priſoner.'

'I do?' cries Amelia; 'Oh Heavens! is there a 'thing upon earth——'

'Yes; there is a thing upon earth,' ſaid Mrs. Elliſon, 'and a very eaſy thing too.—And yet I will 'venture my life, you ſtart when I propoſe it. And 'yet when I conſider that you are a woman of under-'ſtanding, I know not why I ſhould think ſo; for 'ſure you muſt have too much good ſenſe to imagine 'that you can cry your huſband out of priſon. If 'this would have done, I ſee you have almoſt cried 'your eyes out already. And yet you may do the bu-'ſineſs by a much pleaſanter way than by crying and 'bawling.'

'What do you mean, madam!' cries Amelia.—'For my part, I cannot gueſs your meaning.

'Before I tell you then, madam,' anſwered Mrs. Elliſon, 'I muſt inform you, if you do not already 'know it, that the captain is charged with actions to 'the amount of near five hundred pound. I am ſure 'I would willingly be his bail; but I know my bail 'would not be taken for that ſum. You muſt conſi-'der, therefore, madam, what chance you have of 'redeeming him; unleſs you chuſe, as perhaps ſome 'wives would, that he ſhould lie all his life in priſon.'

At theſe words, Amelia diſcharged a ſhower of tears, and gave every mark of the moſt frantic grief.

'Why there now,' cries Mrs. Elliſon, 'while 'you will indulge theſe extravagant paſſions, how 'can you be capable of liſtening to the voice of rea-'ſon? I know I am a fool in concerning myſelf thus 'with the affairs of others. I know the thankleſs of-'fice I undertake; and yet I love you ſo, my dear 'Mrs. Booth, that I cannot bear to ſee you afflicted, 'and I would comfort you, if you would ſuffer me. 'Let me beg you to make your mind eaſy; and with-'in theſe two days, I will engage to ſet your huſband 'at liberty.

'Harkee, child, only behave like a woman of ſpirit 'this evening, and keep your appointment, not-'withſtanding what hath happened; and I am con-'*vinced there* is one, who hath the power and th' '*will to ſerve* you.'

Mrs. Elliſon ſpoke the latter part of her ſpeech in a whiſper; ſo that Mrs. Atkinſon, who was then engaged with the children, might not hear her; but Amelia anſwered aloud, and ſaid, 'what appointment would you have me keep this evening?'

'Nay, nay, if you have forgot,' cries Mrs. Elliſon, 'I will tell you more another time; but come, will 'you go home? my dinner is ready by this time, and 'you ſhall dine with me.'

'Talk not to me of dinners,' cries Amelia. 'My 'ſtomach is too full already.'

'Nay, but, dear madam,' anſwered Mrs. Elliſon, —'let me beſeech you to go home with me. I do 'not care,' ſays ſhe, whiſpering, 'to ſpeak before 'ſome folks.'

'I have no ſecret, madam, in the world,' replied Amelia aloud, 'which I would not communicate to 'this lady: for I ſhall always acknowledge the high-'eſt obligations to her for the ſecrets ſhe hath im-'parted to me.'

'Madam,' ſaid Mrs. Elliſon, 'I do not interfere 'with obligations; I am glad the lady hath obliged 'you ſo much; and I wiſh all people were equally 'mindful of obligations. I hope, I have omitted no 'opportunity of endeavouring to oblige Mrs. Booth, 'as well as I have ſome other folks.'

'If by other folks, madam, you mean me,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'I confeſs, I ſincerely believe you 'intended the ſame obligation to us both: and I have 'the pleaſure to think it is owing to me that this 'lady is not as much obliged to you as I am.'

'I proteſt, madam, I can hardly gueſs your mean-'ing,' ſaid Mrs. Elliſon.—'Do you really intend to 'affront me, madam?'

'I intend to preſerve innocence and virtue, if it be 'in my power, madam,' anſwered the other. 'And 'ſure nothing but the moſt eager reſolution to deſtroy 'it, could induce you to mention ſuch an appoint-'ment at ſuch a time.'

'I did not expect this treatment from you, ma-'dam,' cries Mrs. Elliſon: 'Such ingratitude I could 'not have believed, had it been reported to me by 'any other.'

'Such impudence,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon, 'muſt exceed, I think, all belief; but when women once abandon that modeſty which is the characteriſtic of their ſex, they ſeldom ſet any bounds to their aſſurance.'

'I could not have believed this to have been in human nature,' cries Mrs. Elliſon. 'Is this the woman whom I have fed, have cloathed, have ſupported? who owes to my charity, and my interceſſions, that ſhe is not at this day deſtitute of all the neceſſaries of life!'

'I own it all,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon.—'And I add the favour of a maſquerade ticket to the number. Could I have thought, madam, that you would, before my face, have aſked another lady to go to the ſame place with the ſame man!—But I aſk your pardon, I impute rather more aſſurance to you than you are miſtreſs of—You have endeavoured to keep the aſſignation a ſecret from me; and it was by mere accident only that I diſcovered it; unleſs there are ſome guardian angels, that in general protect innocence and virtue, though I may ſay I have not always found them ſo watchful.'

'Indeed, madam,' ſaid Mrs. Elliſon, 'you are not worth my anſwer, nor will I ſtay a moment longer with ſuch a perſon.—So, Mrs. Booth, you have your choice, madam, whether you will go with me, or remain in the company of this lady.'

'If ſo, madam,' anſwered Mrs. Booth, 'I ſhall not be long in determining to ſtay where I am.'

Mrs. Elliſon then, caſting a look of great indignation at both the ladies, made a ſhort ſpeech full of invectives againſt Mrs. Atkinſon, and not without oblique hints of ingratitude againſt poor Amelia; after which, ſhe burſt out of the room, and out of the houſe; and made haſte to her own home, in a condition of mind, to which fortune without guilt cannot, I believe, reduce any one.

Indeed, how much the ſuperiority of miſery is on the ſide of wickedneſs, may appear to every reader who will compare the preſent ſituation of Amelia *with that of* Mrs. Elliſon. Fortune had attacked the

ſo

former with almoſt the higheſt degree of her malice. She was involved in a ſcene of moſt exquiſite diſtreſs; and her huſband, her principal comfort, torn violently from her arms; yet her ſorrow, however exquiſite, was all ſoft and tender; nor was ſhe without many conſolations. Her caſe, however hard, was not abſolutely deſperate; for ſcarce any condition of fortune can be ſo. Art and induſtry, chance and friends, have often relieved the moſt diſtreſt circumſtances, and converted them into opulence. In all theſe ſhe had hopes on this ſide the grave, and perfect virtue and innocence gave her the ſtrongeſt aſſurances on the other. Whereas, in the boſom of Mrs. Elliſon all was ſtorm and tempeſt; anger, revenge, fear, and pride, like ſo many raging furies, poſſeſſed her mind, and tortured her with diſappointment and ſhame. Loſs of reputation, which is generally irreparable, was to be her lot; loſs of friends is of this the certain conſequence; all on this ſide the grave appeared dreary and comfortleſs; and endleſs miſery on the other, cloſed the gloomy proſpect.

Hence, my worthy reader, conſole thyſelf, that however few of the other good things of life are thy lot; the beſt of all things, which is innocence, is always within thy own power; and though fortune may make thee often unhappy, ſhe can never make thee completely and irreparably miſerable without thy own conſent.

CHAP. IV.

Containing, among many matters, the exemplary behaviour of Cölonel James.

WHEN Mrs. Elliſon was departed, Mrs. Atkinſon began to apply all her art to ſooth and comfort Amelia; but was preſently prevented by her: 'I am aſhamed, dear madam,' ſaid Amelia, 'of 'having indulged my affliction ſo much at your ex- 'pence. The ſuddenneſs of the occaſion is my only 'excuſe; for had I had time to ſummon my reſolution 'to my aſſiſtance, I hope I am miſtreſs of more pati-

'ence

'ence than you have hitherto ſeen me exert. I know, 'madam, in my unwarrantable exceſſes, I have been 'guilty of many tranſgreſſions. Firſt, againſt that 'divine will and pleaſure, without whoſe permiſſion 'at leaſt, no human accident can happen; in the 'next place, madam, if any thing can aggravate ſuch 'a fault, I have tranſgreſſed the laws of friendſhip, 'as well as decency, in throwing upon you ſome part 'of the load of my grief; and again, I have ſinned 'againſt common ſenſe, which ſhould teach me, in'ſtead of weakly and heavily lamenting my misfor'tunes, to rouſe all my ſpirits to remove them. In 'this light, I am ſhocked at my own folly, and am 'reſolved to leave my children under your care, and 'go directly to my huſband. I may comfort him. I 'may aſſiſt him. I may relieve him. There is no'thing now too difficult for me to undertake.'

Mrs. Atkinſon greatly approved and complimented her friend on all the former part of her ſpeech, except what related to herſelf, on which ſhe ſpoke very civilly, and I believe with great truth; but as to her determination of going to her huſband, ſhe endeavoured to diſſuade her, at leaſt ſhe begged her to defer it for the preſent, and till the ſerjeant returned home. She then reminded Amelia that it was now paſt five in the afternoon, and that ſhe had not taken any refreſhment but a diſh of tea the whole day, and deſired ſhe would give her leave to procure her a chick, or any thing ſhe liked better, for her dinner.

Amelia thanked her friend, and ſaid, ſhe would ſit down with her to whatever ſhe pleaſed; 'but, if 'I do not eat,' ſaid ſhe, 'I would not have you im'pute it to any thing but want of appetite: for I aſ'ſure you, all things are equally indifferent to me. I 'am more ſolicitous about theſe poor little things, 'who have not been uſed to faſt ſo long. Heaven 'knows what may hereafter be their fate.'

Mrs. Atkinſon bid her hope the beſt, and then recommended the children to the care of her maid.

And now arrived a ſervant from Mrs. James, with an invitation to Captain Booth and his lady, to dine with the colonel the day after the next. This a little

perplexed

perplexed Amelia; but after a ſhort conſideration ſhe diſpatched an anſwer to Mrs. James, in which ſhe conciſely informed her of what had happened.

The honeſt ſerjeant, who had been on his legs almoſt the whole day, now returned, and brought Amelia a ſhort letter from her huſband; in which he gave her the moſt ſolemn aſſurances of his health and ſpirits, and begged her, with great earneſtneſs, to take care to preſerve her own; which, if ſhe did, he ſaid he had no doubt but that they ſhould ſhortly be happy. He added ſomething of hopes from my lord, with which Mrs. Elliſon had amuſed him; and which ſerved only to deſtroy the comfort that Amelia received from the reſt of his letter.

Whilſt Amelia, the ſerjeant and his lady were engaged in a cold collation, for which purpoſe a cold chick was procured from the tavern for the ladies, and two pound of cold beef for the ſerjeant; a violent knocking was heard at the door, and preſently afterwards Colonel James entered the room. After proper compliments had paſt, the colonel told Amelia, that her letter was brought to Mrs. James while they were at table, and that on her ſhewing it him, he had immediately roſe up, made an apology to his company, and took a chair to her. He ſpoke to her with great tenderneſs on the occaſion, and deſired her to make herſelf eaſy; aſſuring her, that he would leave nothing in his power undone to ſerve her huſband. He then gave her an invitation, in his wife's name, to his own houſe, in the moſt preſſing manner.

Amelia returned him very hearty thanks for all his kind offers; but begged to decline that of an apartment in his houſe. She ſaid, as ſhe could not leave her children, ſo neither could ſhe think of bringing ſuch a trouble with her into his family; and though the colonel gave her many aſſurances that her children as well as herſelf would be very welcome to Mrs. James, and even betook himſelf to entreaties, ſhe ſtill perſiſted obſtinately in her refuſal.

In real truth, Amelia had taken a vaſt affection for Mrs. Atkinſon, of the comfort of whoſe company ſhe *could not bear to be* deprived in her diſtreſs; nor to exchange

exchange it for that of Mrs. James, to whom ſhe had lately conceived no little diſlike.

The colonel, when he found he could not prevail with Amelia to accept his invitation, deſiſted from any further ſolicitations. He then took a bank-bill of fifty pounds from his pocket-book, and ſaid—'You will pardon me, dear madam, if I chuſe to impute your refuſal of my houſe, rather to a diſlike of my wife, who I will not pretend to be the moſt agreeable of women (all men,' ſaid he ſighing, 'have not Captain Booth's fortune,) than to any averſion or anger to me. I muſt inſiſt upon it therefore, to make your preſent habitation as eaſy to you as poſſible.—I hope, madam, you will not deny me this happineſs; I beg you will honour me with the acceptance of this trifle.' He then put the note into her hand, and declared that the honour of touching it was worth a hundred times that ſum.'

'I proteſt, Colonel James,' cried Amelia bluſhing, 'I know not what to do or ſay, your goodneſs ſo greatly confounds me. Can I, who am ſo well acquainted with the many great obligations Mr. Booth already hath to your generoſity, conſent that you ſhould add more to a debt we never can pay?'—

The colonel ſtopt her ſhort, proteſting that ſhe miſplaced the obligation: for that, if to confer the higheſt happineſs was to oblige, he was obliged to her acceptance. 'And I do aſſure you, madam,' ſaid he, 'if this trifling ſum, or a much larger, can contribute to your eaſe, I ſhall conſider myſelf as the happieſt man upon earth, in being able to ſupply it; and you, madam, my greateſt benefactor in receiving it.'

Amelia then put the note in her pocket; and they entered into a converſation, in which many civil things were ſaid on both ſides; but what was chiefly worth remark was, that Amelia had almoſt her huſband conſtantly in her mouth, and the colonel never mentioned him: the former ſeemed deſirous to lay all obligations, as much as poſſible, to the account of her huſband; and the latter endeavoured with the utmoſt

moſt delicacy to inſinuate that her happineſs was the main and indeed only point which he had in view.

Amelia had made no doubt, at the colonel's firſt appearance, but that he intended to go directly to her huſband. When he dropt therefore a hint of his intention to viſit him next morning, ſhe appeared viſibly ſhocked at the delay. The colonel perceiving this, ſaid, 'However inconvenient it may be; yet, 'madam, if it will oblige you, or if you deſire it, I 'will even go to-night.' Amelia anſwered, 'My 'huſband would be far from deſiring to derive any good 'from your inconvenience; but if you put it to me, I 'muſt be excuſed for ſaying, I deſire nothing more 'in the world than to ſend him ſo great a comfort as 'I know he will receive from the preſence of ſuch a 'friend.' 'Then to ſhew you, madam,' cries the colonel, 'that I deſire nothing more in the world than 'to give you pleaſure, I will go to him immedi-'ately.'

Amelia then bethought herſelf of the ſerjeant, and told the colonel, his old acquaintance Atkinſon, whom he had known at Gibraltar, was then in the houſe, and would conduct him to the place. The ſerjeant was immediately called in, paid his reſpects to the colonel, and was acknowledged by him. They both immediately ſet forward, Amelia to the utmoſt of her power preſſing their departure.

Mrs. Atkinſon now returned to Amelia, and was by her acquainted with the colonel's late generoſity: for her heart ſo boiled over with gratitude, that ſhe could not conceal the ebullition. Amelia likewiſe gave her friend a full narrative of the colonel's former behaviour and friendſhip to her huſband, as well abroad as in England; and ended with declaring, that ſhe believed him to be the moſt generous man upon earth.

Mrs. Atkinſon agreed with Amelia's concluſion, and ſaid ſhe was glad to hear there was any ſuch man. They then proceeded with the children to the tea-table, where panegyric, and not ſcandal, was the topic of their converſation; and of this panegyric the colonel was *the ſubject*: both the ladies ſeeming to vie with

with each other in celebrating the praiſes of his goodneſs.

CHAP. V.

Comments upon authors.

HAVING left Amelia in as comfortable a ſituation as could poſſibly be expected, her immediate diſtreſſes relieved, and her heart filled with great hopes from the friendſhip of the colonel; we will now return to Booth, who, when the attorney and ſerjeant had left him, received a viſit from that great author of whom honourable mention is made in our ſecond chapter.

Booth, as the reader may be pleaſed to remember, was a pretty good maſter of the claſſics: for his father, though he deſigned his ſon for the army, did not think it neceſſary to breed him up a blockhead. He did not, perhaps, imagine that a competent ſhare of Latin and Greek would make his ſon either a pedant or a coward. He conſidered likewiſe, probably, that the life of a ſoldier is in general a life of idleneſs; and might think that the ſpare hours of an officer in country quarters would be as well employed with a book, as in ſauntering about the ſtreets, loitering in a coffee-houſe, ſotting in a tavern, or in laying ſchemes to debauch and ruin a ſett of harmleſs ignorant country girls.

As Booth was therefore what might well be called, in this age at leaſt, a man of learning, he began to diſcourſe our author on ſubjects of literature. 'I 'think, ſir,' ſays he, 'that Doctor Swift hath been 'generally allowed by the critics in this kingdom, to 'be the greateſt maſter of humour that ever wrote. 'Indeed, I allow him to have poſſeſſed moſt admira-'ble talents of this kind; and if Rabelais was his 'maſter, I think he proves the truth of the common 'Greek proverb—That the ſcholar is often ſuperior 'to the maſter. As to Cervantes, I do not think we 'can make any juſt compariſon; for though Mr. Pope 'compliments him with ſometimes taking Cervantes'

'ſerious

ſerious air.'—'I remember the paſſage,' cries the author:

'Oh thou, whatever title pleaſe thine ear,
'Dean, Drapier, Bickerſtaff or Gulliver;
'Whether you take Cervantes' ſerious air,
'Or laugh and ſhake in Rabelais' eaſy chair.'

'You are right, ſir,' ſaid Booth; 'but though I 'ſhould agree that the doctor hath ſometimes conde-'ſcended to imitate Rabelais, I do not remember to 'have ſeen in his works the leaſt attempt in the man-'ner of Cervantes. But there is one in his own way, 'and whom I am convinced he ſtudied above all 'others ——— You gueſs, I believe, I am going to 'name Lucian. 'This author, I ſay, I am convinced 'he followed: but I think he followed him at a 'diſtance; as, to ſay the truth, every other writer 'of this kind hath done in my opinion: for 'none, I think, hath yet equalled him. I agree, 'indeed, entirely with Mr. Moile, in his Diſcourſe 'on the age of the Philopatris, when he gives 'him the epithet of the incomparable Lucian; and 'incomparable, I believe, he will remain as long as 'the language in which he wrote ſhall endure. What 'an inimitable piece of humour is his Cock—'I 'remember it very well,' cries the author, 'his ſtory 'of a Cock and a Bull is excellent.' Booth ſtared at this, and aſked the author what he meant by the Bull? 'Nay,' anſwered he, 'I don't know very 'well upon my ſoul. It is a long time ſince I read 'him. I learnt him all over at ſchool, I have not read 'him much ſince. And pray, ſir,' ſaid he, 'how do 'you like his Pharſalia? don't you think Mr. Rowe's 'tranſlation a very fine one?' Booth replied, 'I 'believe we are talking of different authors. The 'Pharſalia, which Mr. Rowe tranſlated, was written 'by Lucan; but I have been ſpeaking of Lucian, a 'Greek writer, and, in my opinion, the greateſt in 'the humourous way, that ever the world produced.' 'Ay!' cries the author, 'he was indeed ſo, a very 'excellent *writer indeed*. I fancy a tranſlation of

him

'him would ſell very well.' 'I do not know, in-'deed,' cries Booth. 'A good tranſlation of him 'would be a valuable book. I have ſeen a wretched 'one publiſhed by Mr. Dryden, but tranſlated by 'others, who in many places have miſunderſtood Lu-'cian's meaning, and have no where preſerved the 'ſpirit of the original.' 'That is great pity,' ſays the author. 'Pray, ſir, is he well tranſlated into 'French?' Booth anſwered, he could not tell; but that he doubted it very much, having never ſeen a good verſion into that language, out of the Greek. 'To confeſs the truth, I believe,' ſaid he, 'the 'French tranſlators have generally conſulted the La-'tin only; which, in ſome of the few Greek writers 'I have read, is tolerably bad. And as the Engliſh 'tranſlators, for the moſt part, purſue the French, 'we may eaſily gueſs, what ſpirit thoſe copies of bad 'copies muſt preſerve of the original.'

'Egad, you are a ſhrewd gueſſer,' cries the author. 'I am glad the bookſellers have not your ſagacity. 'But how ſhould it be otherwiſe, conſidering the 'price they pay by the ſheet? The Greek, you will 'allow, is a hard language; and there are few gen-'tlemen that write, who can read it without a good 'lexicon. Now, ſir, if we were to afford time to 'find out the true meaning of words, a gentleman 'would not get bread and cheeſe by his work. If 'one was to be paid, indeed, as Mr. Pope was for 'his Homer.—Pray, ſir, don't you think that the 'beſt tranſlation in the world?'

'Indeed, ſir,' cries Booth, 'I think, though it 'is certainly a noble paraphraſe, and of itſelf a fine 'poem, yet, in ſome places, it is no tranſlation at 'all. In the very beginning, for inſtance, he hath 'not rendered the true force of the author. Homer 'invokes his Muſe in the five firſt lines of the Iliad; 'and, at the end of the fifth, he gives his reaſon;

'Διὸς δ' ἐτελείετο βουλή.

'For all theſe things,' ſays he, 'were brought 'about by the decree of Jupiter; and, therefore, he

'ſuppoſ

'ſuppoſes their true ſources are known only to the 'deities. Now, the tranſlation takes no more no-'tice of the ΔΕ, than if no ſuch word had been there.'

'Very poſſibly,' anſwered the author; 'it is a 'long time ſince I read the original. Perhaps, then, 'he followed the French tranſlations. I obſerve, in-'deed, he talks much in the notes of Madam Dacier, 'and Monſieur Euſtathius.'

Booth had now received conviction enough of his friend's knowledge of the Greek language; without attempting, therefore, to ſet him right, he made a ſudden tranſition to the Latin. 'Pray ſir,' ſaid he, 'as you have mentioned Rowe's tranſlation of the 'Pharſalia, do you remember, how he hath rendered 'that paſſage in the character of Cato?

——— *Veneriſque huic maximus uſus*
Progenies; urbi Pater eſt, urbique Maritus.

'For I apprehend that paſſage is generally miſunder-'ſtood.'

'I really do not remember,' anſwered the author.— 'Pray ſir, what do you take to be the meaning?'

'I apprehend, ſir,' replied Booth, 'that, by theſe 'words, *Urbi Pater eſt, Urbique Maritus*, Cato is re-'preſented as the father and huſband to the city of 'Rome.'

'Very true, ſir,' cries the author; 'very fine, in-'deed.—Not only the father of his country, but the 'huſband too; very noble, truly.'

'Pardon me, ſir,' cries Booth, 'I do not conceive 'that to have been Lucan's meaning. If you pleaſe 'to obſerve the context: Lucan, having commend-'ed the temperance of Cato, in the inſtances of 'diet and clothes, proceeds to venereal pleaſures; of 'which, ſays the poet, his principal uſe was pro-'creation: then he adds, *Urbi pater eſt, Urbique Ma-'ritus*; that he became a father and a huſband, for 'the ſake only of the city.'

'Upon my word, that's true,' cries the author; 'I 'did not think of it. It is much finer than the other.

'—Urbis

—*Urbis Pater eſt*—what is the other?—ay—*Urbis Maritus*.—It is certainly as you ſay, ſir.'

Booth was, by this, pretty well ſatisfied of the author's profound learning; however, he was willing to try him a little further. He aſked him, therefore, what was his opinion of Lucan in general, and in what claſs of writers he ranked him.

The author ſtared a little at this queſtion; and, after ſome heſitation, anſwered, 'Certainly, ſir, I think he is a fine writer, and a very great poet.'

'I am very much of the ſame opinion,' cries Booth; 'but where do you claſs him, next to what poet do you place him?'

'Let me ſee,' cries the author, 'where do I claſs him! next to whom do I place him!—Ay!—why! —why, pray, where do you yourſelf place him?'

'Why, ſurely,' cries Booth, 'if he is not to be placed in the firſt rank, with Homer, and Virgil, and Milton—I think clearly, he is at the head of the ſecond; before either Statius, or Silius Italicus. —Though I allow to each of theſe their merits; but, perhaps, an epic poem was beyond the genius of either. I own, I have often thought, if Statius had ventured no farther than Ovid or Claudian, he would have ſucceeded better: for his Sylvæ are, in my opinion, much better than his Thebaïs.'

'I believe, I was of the ſame opinion formerly,' ſaid the author.

'And for what reaſon have you altered it?' cries Booth.

'I have not altered it,' anſwered the author; 'but to tell you the truth, I have not any opinion at all about theſe matters at preſent. I do not trouble my head much with poetry: for there is no encouragement to ſuch ſtudies in this age. It is true indeed, I have now and then wrote a poem or two in the Magazines; but I never intend to write more: for a gentleman is not paid for his time. A ſheet is a ſheet with the bookſellers; and, whether it be in proſe or verſe, they make no difference; though certainly there is as much difference to a *gentleman* in the work, as there is to a tay-

tween making a plain and a laced ſuit. Rhimes are difficult things; they are ſtubborn things, ſir. I have been ſometimes longer in tagging a couplet, than I have been in writing a ſpeech on the ſide of the oppoſition, which hath been read with great applauſe all over the kingdom.'

'I am glad you are pleaſed to confirm that,' cries Booth: 'for I proteſt, it was an entire ſecret to me till this day. I was ſo perfectly ignorant, that I thought the ſpeeches, publiſhed in the Magazines, were really made by the members themſelves.'

'Some of them, and I believe I may, without vanity, ſay, the beſt,' cries the author, 'are all the production of my own pen; but, I believe, I ſhall leave it off ſoon, unleſs a ſheet of ſpeech will fetch more than it does at preſent. In truth, the romance-writing is the only branch of our buſineſs now, that is worth following. Goods of that ſort have had ſo much ſucceſs lately in the market, that a bookſeller ſcarce cares what he bids for them. And it is certainly the eaſieſt work in the world; you may write it almoſt as faſt as you can ſet pen to paper; and if you interlard it with a little ſcandal, a little abuſe on ſome living characters of note, you cannot fail of ſucceſs.'

'Upon my word, ſir,' cries Booth, 'you have greatly inſtructed me. I could not have imagined, there had been ſo much regularity in the trade of writing, as you are pleaſed to mention; by what I can perceive, the pen and ink is likely to become the ſtaple commodity of the kingdom.'

'Alas! ſir,' anſwered the author, 'it is over-ſtocked.—The market is over-ſtocked. There is no encouragement to merit, no patrons. I have been theſe five years ſoliciting a ſubſcription for my new tranſlation of Ovid's Metamorphoſes, with notes explanatory, hiſtorical, and critical; and I have ſcarce collected five hundred names yet.'

The mention of this tranſlation a little ſurpriſed Booth; not only as the author had juſt declared his intentions to forſake the tuneful Muſes; but for ſome other *reaſons, which* he had collected from his converſation

verſation with our author, he little expected to hear of a propoſal to tranſlate any of the Latin poets. He proceeded, therefore, to catechiſe him a little farther; and by his anſwers was fully ſatisfied, that he had the very ſame acquaintance with Ovid, that he had appeared to have with Lucan.

The author then pulled out a bundle of papers, containing propoſals for his ſubſcription, and receipts; and addreſſing himſelf to Booth, ſaid, 'Though the 'place in which we meet, ſir, is an improper place to 'ſolicit favours of this kind; yet, perhaps, it may be 'in your power to ſerve me, if you will charge your 'pockets with ſome of theſe.' Booth was juſt offer-'ing at an excuſe, when the bailiff introduced Colonel James, and the ſerjeant.

The unexpected viſit of a beloved friend to a man in affliction, eſpecially in Mr. Booth's ſituation, is a comfort which can ſcarce be equalled; not barely from the hopes of relief, or redreſs, by his aſſiſtance; but as it is an evidence of ſincere friendſhip, which ſcarce admits of any doubt or ſuſpicion. Such an inſtance doth, indeed, make a man amends for all ordinary troubles and diſtreſſes; and we ought to think ourſelves gainers, by having had ſuch an opportunity of diſcovering, that we are poſſeſſed of one of the moſt valuable of all human poſſeſſions.

Booth was ſo tranſported at the ſight of the colonel, that he dropt the propoſals which the author had put into his hand, and burſt forth into the higheſt profeſſions of gratitude to his friend, who behaved very properly on his ſide, and ſaid every thing which became the mouth of a friend on the occaſion.

It is true, indeed, he ſeemed not moved equally, either with Booth or the ſerjeant; both whoſe eyes watered at the ſcene. In truth, the colonel, though very generous man, had not the leaſt grain of tenderneſs in his diſpoſition. His mind was formed of thoſe firm materials, of which nature formerly hammered out the Stoic, and upon which, the ſorrows of no man living could make an impreſſion. A man of this temper, who doth not much value danger, will fight for *the perſon* he calls his friend; and the man that hath

but little value for his money will give it him; but such friendſhip is never to be abſolutely depended on: for whenever the favourite paſſion interpoſes with it, it is ſure to ſubſide and vaniſh into air. Whereas, the man, whoſe tender diſpoſition really feels the miſeries of another, will endeavour to relieve them for his own ſake; and, in ſuch a mind, friendſhip will often get the ſuperiority over every other paſſion.

But, from whatever motive it ſprung, the colonel's behaviour to Booth ſeemed truly amiable; and ſo it appeared to the author, who took the firſt occaſion to applaud it in a very florid oration; which the reader, when he recollects that he was a ſpeech-maker by profeſſion, will not be ſurprized at; nor, perhaps, will be much more ſurprized, that he ſoon after took an occaſion of clapping a propoſal into the colonel's hands; holding at the ſame time a receipt very viſible in his own.

The colonel received both, and gave the author a guinea in exchange, which was double the ſum mentioned in the receipt; for which the author made a low bow, and very politely took his leave, ſaying, 'I ſuppoſe, gentlemen, you may have ſome private 'buſineſs together; I heartily wiſh a ſpeedy end to 'your confinement; and I congratulate you on the 'poſſeſſing ſo great, ſo noble, and ſo generous a 'friend.'

CHAP. VI.

Which inclines rather to ſatire than panegyric.

THE colonel had the curioſity to aſk Booth the name of the gentleman, who, in the vulgar language, had ſtruck, or taken him in for a guinea, with ſo much eaſe and dexterity. Booth anſwered, he did not know his name; all that he knew of him was, that he was the moſt impudent and illiterate fellow he had ever ſeen; and that, by his own account, he was the author of moſt of the wonderful productions of the age. 'Perhaps,' ſaid he, 'it may look uncha-'ritable in *me*, to blame you for your generoſity;

'but I am convinced the fellow hath not the leaſt merit or capacity; and you have ſubſcribed to the moſt horrid traſh that ever was publiſhed!'

'I care not a farthing what he publiſhes,' cries the colonel. 'Heaven forbid, I ſhould be obliged to read half the nonſenſe I have ſubſcribed to.'

'But, don't you think,' ſaid Booth, 'that by ſuch indiſcriminate encouragement of authors, you do a real miſchief to the ſociety? by propagating the ſubſcriptions of ſuch fellows, people are tired out, and with-hold their contributions to men of real merit; and, at the ſame time, you are contributing to fill the world, not only with nonſenſe, but with all the ſcurrility, indecency, and profaneneſs, with which the age abounds; and with which all bad writers ſupply the defect of genius.'

'Pugh!' cries the colonel, 'I never conſider theſe matters. Good or bad, it is all one to me; but there's an acquaintance of mine, and a man of great wit too, that thinks the worſt the beſt, as they are the ſureſt to make him laugh.'

'I aſk pardon, ſir,' ſays the ſerjeant; 'but I wiſh your honour would conſider your own affairs a little; for it grows late in the evening.'

'The ſerjeant ſays true,' anſwered the colonel. 'What is it you intend to do?'

'Faith, colonel, I know not what I ſhall do. My affairs ſeem ſo irreparable, that I have been driving them, as much as poſſibly I could, from my mind. If I was to ſuffer alone, I think, I could bear them with ſome philoſophy; but when I conſider who are to be the ſharers in my fortune — the deareſt of children; and the beſt, the worthieſt, and the nobleſt of women. Pardon me, my dear friend; the ſenſations are above me, they convert me into woman; they drive me to deſpair, to madneſs.'

The colonel adviſed him to command himſelf and told him this was not the way to retrieve fortune. 'As to me, my dear Booth,' ſaid he, 'you know, you may command me as far as is re within my power.'

Booth anſwered eagerly, that he was ſo far from expecting any more favours from the colonel, that he had reſolved not to let him know any thing of his misfortune. 'No, my dear friend,' cries he, 'I am 'too much obliged to you already;' and then burſt into many fervent expreſſions of gratitude; till the colonel himſelf ſtopt him, and begged him to give an account of the debt or debts, for which he was detained in that horrid place.

Booth anſwered, he could not be very exact; but he feared it was upwards of four hundred pounds.

'It is but three hundred pounds, indeed, ſir,' cries the ſerjeant; 'if you can raiſe three hundred pounds, 'you are a free man this moment.'

Booth, who did not apprehend the generous meaning of the ſerjeant, as well as, I believe, the reader will, anſwered, he was miſtaken; that he had computed his debts, and they amounted to upwards of four hundred pounds: nay, that the bailiff had ſhewn him writs for above that ſum.

'Whether your debts are three or four hundred,' cries the colonel, 'the preſent buſineſs is to give 'bail only; and then you will have ſome time to try 'your friends. I think you might get a company 'abroad; and then I would advance the money on 'the ſecurity of half your pay: and, in the mean 'time, I will be one of your bail with all my heart.'

While Booth poured forth his gratitude for all this kindneſs, the ſerjeant ran down ſtairs for the bailiff; and ſhortly after returned with him into the room.

The bailiff, being informed that the colonel offered to be bail for his priſoner, anſwered a little ſurly, 'Well, ſir, and who will be the other? you know, I 'ſuppoſe, there muſt be two; and I muſt have time 'to enquire after them.'

The colonel replied, 'I believe, ſir, I am well 'known to be reſponſible for a much larger ſum than 'your demand on this gentleman; but if your forms 'require two, I ſuppoſe the ſerjeant here will do for 'the other.'

'I don't know the ſerjeant, nor you either, ſir,' cries Bondum; 'and if you propoſe yourſelves bail 'for the gentleman, I muſt have time to enquire after 'you.'

'You need very little time to enquire after me,' ſays the colonel; 'for I can ſend for ſeveral of the 'law, whom I ſuppoſe you know, to ſatisfy you; but 'conſider, it is very late.'

'Yes, ſir,' anſwered Bondum, 'I do conſider it is 'too late for the captain to be bailed to-night.'

'What do you mean by too late?' cries the colonel.

'I mean, ſir, that I muſt ſearch the office, and that is 'now ſhut up: for if my lord mayor and the court of 'aldermen would be bound for him, I would not diſ-'charge him, till I had ſearched the office.'

'How, ſir,' cries the colonel, 'hath the law of 'England no more regard for the liberty of the ſub-'ject, than to ſuffer ſuch fellows as you to detain a 'man in cuſtody for debt, when he can give undeni-'able ſecurity?'

'Don't fellow me,' ſaid the bailiff, 'I am as good a 'fello was yourſelf, I believe, though you have that 'ribband in your hat there.'

'Do you know who you are ſpeaking to?' ſaid the ſerjeant. 'Do you know you are talking to a colonel 'of the army?'

'What's a colonel of the army to me!'——cries the bailiff. 'I have had as good as he in my cuſ-'tody before now.'

'And a member of parliament,'——cries the ſerjeant.

'Is the gentleman a member of parliament?—— 'Well, and what harm have I ſaid—I am ſure, I meant 'no harm, and if his honour is offended, I aſk his 'pardon; to be ſure, his honour muſt know that the 'ſheriff is anſwerable for all the writs in the office, 'though they were never ſo many, and I am anſwer-'able to the ſheriff. I am ſure the captain can't ſay 'that I have ſhewn him any manner of incivility ſince 'he hath been here.—And I hope, honourable ſir,' cries he, turning to the colonel, 'you don't take 'any thing amiſs that I ſaid, or meant by way of

'a

'diſreſpect, or any ſuch matter. I did not, indeed, 'as the gentleman here ſays, know who I was ſpeak-'ing to; but I did not ſay any thing uncivil as I 'know of, and I hope no offence.'

The colonel was more eaſily pacified than might have been expected, and told the bailiff that if it was againſt the rules of law to diſcharge Mr. Booth that evening, he muſt be contented. He then addreſſed himſelf to his friend, and began to preſcribe comfort and patience to him; ſaying, he muſt reſt ſatisfied with his confinement that night, and the next morning he promiſed to viſit him again.

Booth anſwered, that as for himſelf, the lying one night in any place was very little worth his regard. 'You and I, my dear friend, have both ſpent our 'evening in a worſe ſituation than I ſhall in this houſe. 'All my concern is for my poor Amelia, whoſe ſuf-'ferings on account of my abſence I know, and I feel 'with unſpeakable tenderneſs. Could I be aſſured 'ſhe was tolerably eaſy, I could be contented in chains 'or in a dungeon.'

'Give yourſelf no concern on her account,' ſaid the colonel. 'I will wait on her myſelf, though I 'break an engagement for that purpoſe, and will 'give her ſuch aſſurances as I am convinced will make 'her perfectly eaſy.'

Booth embraced his friend, and weeping over him, paid his acknowledgments with tears, for all his goodneſs. In words, indeed, he was not able to thank him; for gratitude joining with his other paſſions almoſt choaked him, and ſtopt his utterance.

After a ſhort ſcene, in which nothing paſt worth recounting, the colonel bid his friend good night; and leaving the ſerjeant with him, made the beſt of his way back to Amelia.

CHAP. VII.

Worthy a very ſerious peruſal.

THE colonel found Amelia ſitting very diſconſolate with Mrs. Atkinſon. He entered the *room with an air of great gaiety*, aſſured Amelia that

her husband was perfectly well, and that he hoped the next day he would again be with her.

Amelia was a little comforted at this account; and vented many grateful expressions to the colonel, for his unparalleled friendship, as she was pleased to call it. She could not, however, help giving way soon after to a sigh, at the thoughts of her husband's bondage, and declared that night would be the longest she had ever known.

'This lady, madam,' cries the colonel, 'must 'endeavour to make it shorter. And if you will give 'me leave, I will join in the same endeavour.' Then after some more consolatory speeches, the colonel attempted to give a gay turn to the discourse; and said, 'I was engaged to have spent this evening disagree-'ably at Ranelagh, with a sett of company I did not 'like. How vastly am I obliged to you, dear Mrs. 'Booth, that I pass it so infinitely more to my satis-'faction!'

'Indeed, colonel,' said Amelia, 'I am convinced 'that to a mind so rightly turned as yours, there must 'be a much sweeter relish in the highest offices of 'friendship, than in any pleasures which the gayest 'public places can afford.'

'Upon my word, madam,' said the colonel, 'you 'now do me no more than justice. I have, and always 'had, the utmost indifference for such pleasures. In-'deed, I hardly allow them worthy of that name, or, 'if they are so at all, it is in a very low degree. In 'my opinion, the highest friendship must always lead 'us to the highest pleasure.'

Here Amelia entered into a long dissertation on friendship, in which she pointed several times directly at the colonel as the hero of her tale.

The colonel highly applauded all her sentiments; and when he could not avoid taking the compliment to himself, he received it with a most respectful bow. He then tried his hand likewise at description, in which he found means to repay all Amelia's panegyric in kind. This though he did with all possible delicacy, yet a curious observer might have been apt to suspect

that

that it was chiefly on her account that the colonel had avoided the maſquerade.

In diſcourſes of this kind they paſt the evening, till it was very late, the colonel never offering to ſtir from his chair before the clock had ſtruck one; when he thought, perhaps, that decency obliged him to take his leave.

As ſoon as he was gone, Mrs. Atkinſon ſaid to Mrs. Booth, 'I think, madam, you told me this afternoon, 'that the colonel was married.'

Amelia anſwered, ſhe did ſo.

'I think, likewiſe, madam,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you was acquainted with the colonel's lady.'

Amelia anſwered, that ſhe had been extremely intimate with her abroad.

'Is ſhe young, and handſome?' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon: 'In ſhort, pray, was it a match of love or convenience?'

Amelia anſwered, entirely of love, ſhe believed, on his ſide: for that the lady had little or no fortune.

'I am very glad to hear it,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon: 'For I am ſure the colonel is in love with ſomebody. 'I think, I never ſaw a more luſcious picture of love 'drawn than that which he was pleaſed to give us, 'as the portraiture of friendſhip. I have read, indeed, of Pylades and Oreſtes, Damon and Pythias, 'and other great friends of old; nay, I ſometimes 'flatter myſelf that I am capable of being a friend myſelf; but as for that fine, ſoft, tender, delicate 'paſſion, which he was pleaſed to deſcribe, I am convinced there muſt go a he and a ſhe to the compoſition.'

'Upon my word, my dear, you are miſtaken,' cries Amelia. 'If you had known the friendſhip which 'hath always ſubſiſted between the colonel and my 'huſband, you would not imagine it poſſible for any 'deſcription to exceed it. Nay, I think his behaviour 'this very day is ſufficient to convince you.'

'I own what he hath done to-day hath great merit,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'and yet, from what he hath 'ſaid to-night ——— You will pardon me, dear ma-

'dam; perhaps I am too quick-ſighted in my obſer-
'vations, nay, I am afraid I am even impertinent.'

'Fie upon it,' cries Amelia, 'how can you talk in
'that ſtrain? do you imagine I expect ceremony;
'———Pray ſpeak what you think with the utmoſt
'freedom.'

'Did he not then,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'repeat
'the words, *the fineſt woman in the world*, more than
'once? did he not make uſe of an expreſſion which
'might have become the mouth of Oroondates him-
'ſelf?——If I remember, the words were theſe,
"That had he been Alexander the Great, he ſhould
"have thought it more glory to have wiped off a tear
"from the bright eyes of Statira, than to have con-
"quered fifty worlds."

'Did he ſay ſo?' cries Amelia——'I think he
'did ſay ſomething like it; but my thoughts were ſo
'full of my huſband, that I took little notice. But
'what would you infer from what he ſaid? I hope you
'don't think he is in love with me!'

'I hope he doth not think ſo himſelf,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon; 'though when he mentioned the 'bright eyes of Statira, he fixed his own eyes on 'yours with the moſt languiſhing air I ever beheld.'

Amelia was going to anſwer, when the ſerjeant arrived, and then ſhe immediately fell to enquiring after her huſband; and received ſuch ſatisfactory anſwers to all her many queſtions concerning him, that ſhe expreſſed great pleaſure. Theſe ideas ſo poſſeſſed her mind, that without once caſting her thoughts on any other matters, ſhe took her leave of the ſerjeant and his lady, and repaired to bed to her children, in a room which Mrs. Atkinſon had provided her in the ſame houſe; where we will at preſent wiſh her a good night.

CHAP. VIII.

Conſiſting of grave matters.

WHILE innocence and chearful hope, in ſpit *of* the malice of fortune, cloſed the eyes o

the gentle Amelia, on her homely bed, and ſhe enjoyed a ſweet and profound ſleep; the colonel lay reſtleſs all night on his down; his mind was affected with a kind of ague fit; ſometimes ſcorched up with flaming deſires, and again chilled with the coldeſt deſpair.

There is a time, I think, according to one of our poets, *When luſt and envy ſleep*. This, I ſuppoſe, is when they are well gorged with the food they moſt delight in; but while either of theſe are hungry,

> Nor poppy, nor mandragora,
> Nor all the drouſy ſyrups of the eaſt,
> Will ever medicine them to ſlumber.

The colonel was, at preſent, unhappily tormented by both theſe fiends. His laſt evening's converſation with Amelia had done his buſineſs effectually. The many kind words ſhe had ſpoken to him, the many kind looks ſhe had given him, as being, ſhe conceived, the friend and preſerver of her huſband, had made an entire conqueſt of his heart. Thus, the very love which ſhe bore him, as the perſon to whom her little family were to owe their preſervation and happineſs, inſpired him with thoughts of ſinking them all in the loweſt abyſs of ruin and miſery; and while ſhe ſmiled with all her ſweetneſs on the ſuppoſed friend of her huſband, ſhe was converting that friend into his moſt bitter enemy.

> Friendſhip, take heed; if woman interfere,
> Be ſure the hour of thy deſtruction's near.

Theſe are the lines of Vanbrugh; and the ſentiment is better than the poetry. To ſay the truth, as a handſome wife is the cauſe and cement of many falſe friendſhips, ſhe is often too liable to deſtroy the real ones.

Thus the object of the colonel's luſt very plainly appears; but the object of his envy may be more difficult to diſcover. Nature and fortune had ſeemed to ſtrive with a kind of rivalſhip, which ſhould beſtow moſt on

the colonel. The former had given him perſon, parts, and conſtitution, in all which he was ſuperior to almoſt every other man. The latter had given him rank in life, and riches, both in a very eminent degree. Whom then ſhould this happy man envy? here, leſt ambition ſhould miſlead the reader to ſearch the palaces of the great, we will direct him at once to Gray's-Inn-Lane; where, in a miſerable bed, in a miſerable room, he will ſee a miſerable broken lieutenant, in a miſerable condition, with ſeveral heavy debts on his back, and without a penny in his pocket. This, and no other, was the object of the colonel's envy. And why? becauſe this wretch was poſſeſſed of the affections of a poor little lamb; which all the vaſt flocks that were within the power and reach of the colonel, could not prevent that glutton's longing for. And ſure this image of the lamb is not improperly adduced on this occaſion: for what was the colonel's deſire but to lead this poor lamb, as it were, to the ſlaughter, in order to purchaſe a feaſt of a few days by her final deſtruction, and to tear her away from the arms of one where ſhe was ſure of being fondled and careſſed all the days of her life.

While the colonel was agitated with theſe thoughts, his greateſt comfort was, that Amelia and Booth were now ſeparated, and his greateſt terror was of their coming again together. From wiſhes therefore he began to meditate deſigns; and ſo far was he from any intention of procuring the liberty of his friend, that he began to form ſchemes of prolonging his confinement, till he could procure ſome means of ſending him away far from her; in which caſe he doubted not but of ſucceeding in all he deſired.

He was forming this plan in his mind, when a ſervant informed him, that one ſerjeant Atkinſon deſired to ſpeak with his honour. The ſerjeant was immediately admitted, and acquainted the colonel, that if he pleaſed to go and become bail for Mr. Booth, another unexceptionable houſe-keeper would be there to join with him. This perſon the ſerjeant had procured that morning, and had, by leave of his wife, given him a *bond of indemnification* for the purpoſe.

The colonel did not ſeem ſo elated with this news as Atkinſon expected. On the contrary, inſtead of making a direct anſwer to what Atkinſon ſaid, the colonel began thus: 'I think, ſerjeant, Mr. Booth 'hath told me that you was foſter-brother to his 'lady. She is really a charming woman, and it is a 'thouſand pities ſhe ſhould ever have been placed in 'the dreadful ſituation ſhe is now in. There is no-'thing ſo ſilly as for ſubaltern officers of the army to 'marry, unleſs where they meet with women of very 'great fortunes indeed. What can be the event of 'their marrying otherwiſe, but entailing miſery and 'beggary on their wives and their poſterity?'

'Ah! ſir!' cries the ſerjeant, 'it is too late to 'think of thoſe matters now. To be ſure, my lady 'might have married one of the top gentlemen in the 'country: for ſhe is certainly one of the beſt, as well 'as one of the handſomeſt women in the kingdom; 'and if ſhe had been fairly dealt by, would have had 'a very great fortune into the bargain. Indeed ſhe 'is worthy of the greateſt prince in the world; and if 'I had been the greateſt prince in the world, I ſhould 'have thought myſelf happy with ſuch a wife; but 'ſhe was pleaſed to like the lieutenant, and certainly 'there can be no happineſs in marriage without 'liking.'

'Lookee, ſerjeant,' ſaid the colonel, 'you know 'very well that I am the lieutenant's friend. I think 'I have ſhewn myſelf ſo.'

'Indeed, your honour hath,' quoth the ſerjeant, 'more than once, to my knowledge.'

'But I am angry with him for his imprudence, 'greatly angry with him for his imprudence; and 'the more ſo, as it affects a lady of ſo much worth.'

'She is, indeed, a lady of the higheſt worth,' cries the ſerjeant. 'Poor dear lady! I knew her, an't 'pleaſe your honour, from her infancy; and the 'ſweeteſt-tempered, beſt-natured lady ſhe is, that 'ever trod on Engliſh ground. I have always loved 'her as if ſhe was my own ſiſter.—Nay, ſhe hath very 'often called me brother; and I have taken it to be

'a greater honour than if I was to be called a genera
'officer.'

'What pity it is,' ſaid the colonel, 'that this
'worthy creature ſhould be expoſed to ſo much mi-
'ſery by the thoughtleſs behaviour of a man, who,
'though I am his friend, I cannot help ſaying, hath
'been guilty of imprudence, at leaſt. Why could he
'not live upon his half-pay? what had he to do to
'run himſelf into debt in this outrageous manner?'

'I wiſh indeed,' cries the ſerjeant, 'he had been
'a little more conſiderative; but, I hope, this will be
'a warning to him.'

'How am I ſure of that,' anſwered the colonel;
'or what reaſon is there to expect it? extravagance is
'a vice of which men are not ſo eaſily cured. I
'have thought a great deal of this matter, Mr. ſer-
'jeant; and upon the moſt mature deliberation, I am
'of opinion, that it will be bette: both for him and
'his poor lady, that he ſhould ſmart a little more.'

'Your honour, ſir, to be ſure is in the right,' re-
plied the ſerjeant; 'but yet, ſir, if you will pardon
'me for ſpeaking, I hope you will be pleaſed to con-
'ſider my poor lady's caſe. She ſuffers, all this
'while, as much or more than the lieutenant; for I
'know her ſo well, that I am certain ſhe will never
'have a moment's eaſe till her huſband is out of con-
'finement.'

'I know women better than you, ſerjeant,' cries
the colonel: 'they ſometimes place their affections
'on a huſband, as children do on their nurſe; but
'they are both to be weaned. I know you, ſerjeant,
'to be a fellow of ſenſe as well as ſpirit, or I ſhould
'not ſpeak ſo freely to you; but I took a fancy t
'you a long time ago, and I intend to ſerve you
'but firſt, I aſk you this queſtion, is your attachmen
'to Mr. Booth, or to his lady?'

'Certainly, ſir,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'I muſt lov
'my lady beſt. Not but I have a great affection f
'the lieutenant too, becauſe I know my lady h
'the ſame; and, indeed, he hath been always
'good to me, as far as was in his power. A li
'*nant, your* honour knows, can't do a great c

'but I have always found him my friend upon all 'occaſions.'

'You ſay true,' cries the colonel, 'a lieutenant 'can do but little; but I can do much to ſerve you, 'and will too—But let me aſk you one queſtion— 'Who was the lady whom I ſaw laſt night with Mrs. 'Booth at her lodgings?'

Here the ſerjeant bluſhed, and repeated, 'The 'lady, ſir!'

'Ay, a lady, a woman,' cries the colonel, 'who 'ſupped with us laſt night. She looked rather too 'much like a gentlewoman for the miſtreſs of a lodg-'ing houſe.'

The ſerjeant's cheeks glowed at this compliment to his wife, and he was juſt going to own her, when the colonel proceeded. 'I think I never ſaw in my life 'ſo ill-looking, ſly, demure a b——, I would give 'ſomething, methinks, to know who ſhe was.'

'I don't know, indeed,' cries the ſerjeant in great confuſion.—'I know nothing about her.'

'I wiſh you would enquire,' ſaid the colonel, 'and 'let me know her name, and likewiſe what ſhe is. 'I have a ſtrange curioſity to know, and let me ſee 'you again this evening exactly at ſeven.'

'And will not your honour then go to the lieute-'nant this morning?' ſaid Atkinſon.

'It is not in my power,' anſwered the colonel: 'I 'am engaged another way. Beſides, there is no haſte 'in this affair. If men will be imprudent, they muſt 'ſuffer the conſequences. Come to me at ſeven, and 'bring me all the particulars you can concerning that 'ill-looked jade, I mentioned to you; for I am re-'ſolved to know who ſhe is. And ſo, good-morrow 'to you, ſerjeant; be aſſured I will take an opportu-'nity to do ſomething for you.'

Though ſome readers may, perhaps, think the ſer-jeant not unworthy of the freedom with which the co-lonel treated him, yet that haughty officer would have been very backward to have condeſcended to ſuch fa-miliarity with one of his rank, had he not propoſed ſome deſign from it. In truth, he began to conceive

hopes

hopes of making the ſerjeant inſtrumental to his deſign on Amelia; in other words, to convert him into a pimp; an office, in which the colonel had been ſerved by Atkinſon's betters; and which, as he knew it was in his power very well to reward him, he had no apprehenſion that the ſerjeant would decline: an opinion which the ſerjeant might have pardoned, though he had never given the leaſt grounds for it, ſince the colonel borrowed it from the knowledge of his own heart. This dictated to him, that he, from a bad motive, was capable of deſiring to debauch his friend's wife; and the ſame heart inſpired him to hope that another, from another bad motive, might be guilty of the ſame breach of friendſhip, in aſſiſting him. Few men, I believe, think better of others than of themſelves; nor do they eaſily allow the exiſtence of any virtue of which they perceive no traces in their own minds: for which reaſon I have obſerved, that it is extremely difficult to perſuade a rogue that you are an honeſt man; nor would you ever ſucceed in the attempt by the ſtrongeſt evidence, was it not for the comfortable concluſion which the rogue draws, that he who proves himſelf to be honeſt, proves himſelf to be a fool at the ſame time.

CHAP. IX.

A curious chapter, from which a curious reader may draw ſundry obſervations.

THE ſerjeant retired from the colonel in a very dejected ſtate of mind; in which, however, we muſt leave him a while, and return to Amelia; who, as ſoon as ſhe was up, had diſpatched Mrs. Atkinſon to pay off her former lodgings, and to bring off all cloaths and other moveables.

The truſty meſſenger returned without performing her errand: for Mrs. Elliſon had locked up all her rooms, and was gone out very early that morning, and the ſervant knew not whither ſhe was gone.

The two ladies now ſat down to breakfaſt, together with Amelia's two children; after which, Amelia declared

clared ſhe would take a coach and viſit her huſband. To this motion Mrs. Atkinſon ſoon agreed, and offered to be her companion. To ſay truth, I think it was reaſonable enough; and the great abhorrence which Booth had of ſeeing his wife in a bailiff's houſe, was, perhaps, rather too nice and delicate.

When the ladies were both dreſt, and juſt going to ſend for their vehicle, a great knocking was heard at the door, and preſently Mrs. James was uſhered into the room.

This viſit was diſagreeable enough to Amelia, as it detained her from the ſight of her huſband, for which ſhe ſo eagerly longed. However, as ſhe had no doubt but that the viſit would be reaſonably ſhort, ſhe reſolved to receive the lady with all the complaiſance in her power.

Mrs. James now behaved herſelf ſo very unlike the perſon that ſhe lately appeared, that it might have ſurpriſed any one who doth not know, that beſides that of a fine lady, which is all mere art and mummery, every ſuch woman hath ſome real character at the bottom, in which, whenever nature gets the better of her, ſhe acts. Thus the fineſt ladies in the world will ſometimes love, and ſometimes ſcratch, according to their different natural diſpoſitions, with great fury and violence, though both of theſe are equally inconſiſtent with a fine lady's artificial character.

Mrs. James then was at the bottom a very good-natured woman; and the moment ſhe heard of Amelia's misfortune, was ſincerely grieved at it. She had acquieſced on the very firſt motion with the colonel's deſign of inviting her to her houſe; and this morning at breakfaſt, when he had acquainted her that Amelia made ſome difficulty in accepting the offer, very readily undertook to go herſelf and perſuade her friend to accept the invitation.

She now preſſed this matter with ſuch earneſtneſs, that Amelia, who was not extremely verſed in the art of denying, was hardly able to refuſe her importunity; nothing, indeed, but her affection to Mrs. Atkinſon could have prevailed on her to refuſe; that point, however, ſhe *would not* give up, and Mrs. James, at laſt,

was

was contented with a promiſe, that as ſoon as their affairs were ſettled, Amelia, with her huſband and family, would make her a viſit, and ſtay ſome time with her in the country, whither ſhe was ſoon to retire.

Having obtained this promiſe, Mrs. James, after many very friendly profeſſions, took her leave; and ſtepping into her coach, re-aſſumed the fine lady, and drove away to join her company at an auction.

The moment ſhe was gone, Mrs. Atkinſon, who had left the room upon the approach of Mrs. James, returned into it, and was informed by Amelia of all that had paſt.

'Pray, madam,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'do this 'colonel and his lady live, as it is called, well toge-'ther?'

'If you mean to aſk,' cries Amelia, 'whether they 'are a very fond couple, I muſt anſwer that I believe 'they are not.'

'I have been told,' ſays Mrs. Atkinſon, 'that 'there have been inſtances of women who have be-'come bawds to their own huſbands, and the huſbands 'pimps for them.'

'Fie upon it,' cries Amelia. 'I hope there are 'no ſuch people. Indeed, my dear, this is being a 'little too cenſorious.'

'Call it what you pleaſe,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon, 'it ariſes from my love to you, and my fears for your 'danger. You know the proverb of a burnt child; 'and if ſuch a one hath any good-nature, it will 'dread the fire, on the account of others as well as on 'its own. And if I may ſpeak my ſentiments freely, 'I cannot think you will be in ſafety at this colonel's 'houſe.'

'I cannot but believe your apprehenſions to be 'ſincere,' replied Amelia, 'and I muſt think myſelf 'obliged to you for them; but I am convinced you 'are entirely in an error. I look on Colonel James 'as the moſt generous and beſt of men. He was 'friend, and an excellent friend too, to my huſband 'long before I was acquainted with him, and he 'done him a thouſand good offices. What do 'ſay of his behaviour yeſterday?'

'I wiſh,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'that his behaviour to-day had been equal. What I am now going to undertake is the moſt diſagreeable office of friendſhip, but it is a neceſſary one. I muſt tell you therefore what paſt this morning between the colonel and Mr. Atkinſon; for though it will hurt you, you ought, on many accounts, to know it.' Here ſhe related the whole which we have recorded in the preceding chapter, and with which the ſerjeant had acquainted her, while Mrs. James was paying her viſit to Amelia. And as the ſerjeant had painted the matter rather in ſtronger colours than the colonel; ſo Mrs. Atkinſon again a little improved on the ſerjeant. Neither of theſe good people, perhaps, intended to aggravate any circumſtance; but ſuch is, I believe, the unavoidable conſequence of all reports. Mrs. Atkinſon, indeed, may be ſuppoſed not to ſee what related to James in the moſt favourable light, as the ſerjeant, with more honeſty than prudence, had ſuggeſted to his wife, that the colonel had not the kindeſt opinion of her, and had called her a ſly and demure—; it is true he omitted ill-looking b—; two words, which are, perhaps, ſuperior to the patience of any Job in petticoats that ever lived. He made amends, however, by ſubſtituting ſome other phraſes in their ſtead, not extremely agreeable to a female ear.

It appeared to Amelia, from Mrs. Atkinſon's relation, that the colonel had groſsly abuſed Booth to the ſerjeant, and had abſolutely refuſed to become his bail. Poor Amelia became a pale and motionleſs ſtatue at this account. At length, ſhe cried, 'If this be true, I and mine are all, indeed, undone. We have no comfort, no hope, no friend left.—I cannot diſbelieve you.—I know you would not deceive me?—Why ſhould you, indeed, deceive me? But what can have cauſed this alteration ſince laſt night? —Did I ſay or do any thing to offend him?'

'You ſaid, and did rather, I believe, a great deal too much to pleaſe him,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon. 'Beſides, he is not in the leaſt offended with you. On the contrary, he ſaid many kind things'—

'*What can my* poor love have done?' ſaid Amelia.

'He

'He hath not ſeen the colonel ſince laſt night. S
'villain hath ſet him againſt my huſband; he
'once before ſuſpicious of ſuch a perſon. Some c
'monſter hath belied his innocence.'

'Pardon me, dear madam,' ſaid Mrs. Atkin
'I believe the perſon who hath injured the ca
'with this friend of his, is one of the worthieſt
'beſt of creatures—Nay, do not be ſurpriſed;
'perſon I mean, is even your fair ſelf: ſure you w
'not be ſo dull in any other caſe; but in this, g
'tude, humility, modeſty, every virtue, ſhuts
'eyes.

Mortales hebitant viſus,

'as Virgils ſays. What in the world can be
'conſiſtent, than his deſire to have you at his
'houſe; and to keep your huſband confined in
'ther? all that he ſaid, and all that he did ye
'day, and, what is more convincing to me
'both, all that he looked laſt night, are very
'ſiſtent with both theſe deſigns.'

'O Heaven!' cries Amelia, 'you chill my b
'with horror! the idea freezes me to death: I
'not, muſt not, will not think it. Nothing but
'viction—Heaven forbid, I ſhould ever have more
'viction! and did he abuſe my huſband! what!
'he abuſe a poor, unhappy, diſtreſt creature; opp
'ruined, torn from his children, torn away from
'wretched wife; the honeſteſt, worthieſt, nob
'tendereſt, fondeſt, beſt!'—Here ſhe burſt into
agony of grief, which exceeds the power of deſcript

In this ſituation, Mrs. Atkinſon was doing her
moſt to ſupport her, when a moſt violent knoc
was heard at the door, and immediately the ſerj
ran haſtily into the room; bringing with him a
dial, which preſently relieved Amelia. What
cordial was, we ſhall inform the reader in due t
In the mean while, he muſt ſuſpend his curioſity;
the gentlemen at White's may lay wagers, whet
was Ward's pill, or Doctor James's powder.

But before we cloſe this chapter, and return b
the bailiff's houſe, we muſt do our beſt to reſc

cha

racter of our heroine from the dulneſs of apprehen-
, which ſeveral of our quickſighted readers may lay
e heavily to her charge than was done by her friend
. Atkinſon.

muſt inform, therefore, all ſuch readers, that it
ıot, becauſe innocence is more blind than guilt,
t the former often overlooks and tumbles into the
which the latter foreſees and avoids. The truth
that it is almoſt impoſſible guilt ſhould miſs the diſ-
ering of all the ſnares in its way; as it is conſtantly
ing cloſely into every corner, in order to lay ſnares
others. Whereas innocence, having no ſuch pur-
e, walks fearleſsly and careleſsly through life; and
onſequently liable to tread on the gins, which cun-
g has laid to entrap it. To ſpeak plainly, and
hout allegory or figure, it is not want of ſenſe, but
at of ſuſpicion, by which innocence is often betrayed.
ain, we often admire at the folly of the dupe, when
ſhould transfer our whole ſurpriſe to the aſtoniſh-
guilt of the betrayer. In a word, many an inno-
t perſon hath owed his ruin to this circumſtance
ne, that the degree of villainy was ſuch as muſt
e exceeded the faith of every man who was not him-
f a villain.

CHAP. X.

In which are many profound ſecrets of philoſophy.

OOTH, having had enough of the author's
company the preceding day, choſe now another
npanion. Indeed the author was not very ſolicitous
a ſecond interview; for, as he could have no hope
m Booth's pocket, ſo he was not likely to receive
ch increaſe to his vanity from Booth's converſation:
, low as this wretch was in virtue, ſenſe, learning,
th and fortune, he was by no means low in his
nity. This paſſion, indeed, was ſo high in him,
d at the ſame time ſo blinded him to his own de-
rits, that he hated every man, who did not either
tter him or give him money. In ſhort, he claimed
ſtrange *kind of right*; either to cheat all his ac-
quaintance

quaintance of their praiſe, or to pick their pockets their pence; in which latter caſe, he himſelf repa very liberally with panegyric.

A very little ſpecimen of ſuch a fellow muſt ha ſatisfied a man of Mr. Booth's temper. He cho therefore, now to aſſociate himſelf with that gent man, of whom Bondum had given ſo ſhabby a ch racter. In ſhort, Mr. Booth's opinion of the bai was ſuch, that he recommended a man moſt, wh he leaſt intended it. Nay, the bailiff, in the preſ inſtance, though he had drawn a malicious conclufi honeſtly avowed, that this was drawn only from poverty of the perſon; which is never, I believe, a forcible diſrecommendation to a good mind: but muſt have had a very bad mind, indeed, who, Mr. Booth's circumſtances, could have diſliked deſpiſed another man, becauſe that other man poor.

Some previous converſation having paſt betw this gentleman and Booth, in which they had b opened their ſeveral ſituations to each other; former caſting an affectionate look on the latter, preſt great compaſſion for his circumſtances; for whi Booth thanking him, ſaid, 'You muſt have a gr 'deal of compaſſion, and be a very good man, 'ſuch a terrible ſituation as you deſcribe yourſelf, 'have any pity to ſpare for other people.'

'My affairs, ſir,' anſwered the gentleman, ' 'very bad, it is true; and yet there is one circu 'ſtance, which makes you appear to me more 'object of pity than I am to myſelf; and it is t 'that you muſt from your years be a novice in aff 'tion; whereas I have ſerved a long apprenticeſ 'to miſery, and ought, by this time, to be a pre 'good maſter of my trade. To ſay the truth, I 'lieve, habit teaches men to bear the burthens of 'mind, as it enures them to bear heavy burthens 'their ſhoulders. Without uſe and experience, 'ſtrongeſt minds and bodies both will ſtagger un 'a weight, which habit might render eaſy, and e 'contemptible.'

'Th

'There is great juſtice, cries Booth, in the compariſon; and, I think, I have myſelf experienced the truth of it: for I am not that Tyro in affliction, which you ſeem to apprehend me. And, perhaps, it is from the very habit you mention, that I am able to ſupport my preſent misfortunes a little like a man.'

The gentleman ſmiled at this, and cried, 'Indeed captain, you are a young philoſopher.'

'I think,' cries Booth, 'I have ſome pretenſions to that philoſophy which is taught by misfortunes; and you ſeem to be of opinion, ſir, that it is one of the beſt ſchools of philoſophy.'

'I mean no more, ſir,' ſaid the gentleman, 'than that in the days of our affliction, we are inclined to think more ſeriouſly, than in thoſe ſeaſons of life, when we are engaged in the hurrying purſuits of buſineſs or pleaſure, when we have neither leiſure nor inclination to ſift and examine things to the bottom. Now there are two conſiderations, which, from my having long fixed my thoughts upon them, have greatly ſupported me under all my afflictions. The one is the brevity of life, even at its longeſt duration, which the wiſeſt of men hath compared to the ſhort dimenſion of a ſpan. One of the Roman poets compares it to the duration of a race; and another, to the much ſhorter tranſition of a wave.

'The ſecond conſideration is the uncertainty of it. Short as its utmoſt limits are, it is far from being aſſured of reaching thoſe limits. The next day, the next hour, the next moment, may be the end of our courſe. Now of what value is ſo uncertain, ſo precarious a ſtation? This conſideration, indeed, however lightly it is paſſed over in our conception, doth in a great meaſure level all fortunes and conditions, and gives no man a right to triumph in the happieſt ſtate, or any reaſon to repine in the moſt miſerable. Would the moſt worldly men ſee this in the light in which they examine all other matters, they would ſoon feel and acknowledge the force of this way of reaſoning; for *which of them* would give any price for an eſtate,

'from

'from which they were liable to be immedia
'ejected; or, would they not laugh at him as a n
'man, who accounted himself rich from such an un
'tain possession! This is the fountain, sir, from wh
'I have drawn my philosophy. Hence it is, that I l
'learnt to look on all those things, which are estee
'the blessings of life, and those which are dreade
'its evils, with such a degree of indifference, th
'I should not be elated with possessing the former
'neither am I greatly dejected and depressed by
'fering the latter. Is the actor esteemed happier
'whose lot it falls to play the principal part, tha
'who plays the lowest? and yet the drama may
'twenty nights together, and by consequence
'out-last our lives; but, at the best, life is or
'little longer drama; and the business of the
'stage is consequently a little more serious than
'which is performed at the theatre royal. But
'here, the catastrophes and calamities which ar
'presented, are capable of affecting us. The
'men can deceive themselves into feeling the dist
'of a tragedy, though they know them to be m
'imaginary; and the children will often lament
'as realities: what wonder then, if these tra
'scenes, which I allow to be a little more ser
'should a little more affect us? where then is th
'medy, but in the philosophy I have mentio
'which, when once by a long course of mediati
'is reduced to a habit, teaches us to set a just val
'every thing; and cures at once all eager wishe
'abject fears, all violent joy and grief conce
'objects which cannot endure long, and may not
'a moment.'

'You have expresst yourself extremely well,' Booth, 'and I entirely agree with the justice of 'sentiments; but, however true all this may 'theory, I still doubt its efficacy in practice. 'the cause of the difference between these two is 'that we reason from our heads, but act fr 'hearts:

——*Video meliora, proboque:*
Deteriora sequor.

hing can differ more widely than wiſe men and
s, in their eſtimation of things; but as both act
n their uppermoſt paſſion, they both often act
e. What comfort then can your philoſophy give
n avaricious man, who is deprived of his riches;
o an ambitious man, who is ſtript of his power?
he fond lover, who is torn from his miſtreſs; or,
the tender huſband, who is dragged from his
e? do you really think, that any meditations on
ſhortneſs of life will ſooth them in their afflic-
ns? is not this very ſhortneſs itſelf one of their
ictions? and if the evil they ſuffer be a temporary
rivation of what they love, will they not think
ir fate the harder, and lament the more, that
y are to loſe any part of an enjoyment, to which
ere is ſo ſhort and ſo uncertain a period?'

I beg leave, ſir,' ſaid the gentleman 'to diſtin-
iſh here. By philoſophy, I do not mean the bare
owledge of right and wrong; but an energy, a
bit, as Ariſtotle calls it; and this I do firmly
lieve, with him and with the ſtoics, is ſuperior
all the attacks of fortune.'

le was proceeding, when the bailiff came in, and
ſurely tone bade them both good-morrow; after
ch, he aſked the philoſopher, if he was prepared
o to Newgate; for that he muſt carry him thither
: afternoon.

'he poor man ſeemed very much ſhocked with this
s. 'I hope,' cries he, 'you will give a little
nger time, if not till the return of the writ. But
beg you, particularly, not to carry me thither to-
ay: for I expect my wife and children here in the
vening.'

I have nothing to do with wives and children,'
d the bailiff; 'I never deſire to ſee any wives and
hildren here. I like no ſuch company.'

'I intreat you,' ſaid the priſoner, 'give me ano-
her day. I ſhall take it as a great obligation; and
ou will diſappoint me in the cruelleſt manner in the
vorld, if you refuſe me.'

'I can't help people's diſappointments,' cries the
iliff; 'I muſt conſider myſelf and my own family.

'I know

I know not where I ſhall be paid the money due already. I can't afford to keep priſoners own expence.'

'I don't intend it ſhall be at your expence,' the philoſopher; 'my wife is gone to raiſe 1 'this morning, and I hope to pay you all I ow 'at her arrival. But we intend to ſup togeth 'night at your houſe; and if you ſhould remo 'now, it would be the moſt barbarous diſappoin 'to us both, and will make me the moſt miſ 'man alive.'

'Nay, for my part,' ſaid the bailiff, 'I don 'fire to do any thing barbarous. I know how t 'gentlemen with civility as well as another. 'when people pay as they go, and ſpend their 1 'like gentlemen, I am ſure nobody can accuſe 'any incivility ſince I have been in the office. 'if you intend to be merry to night, I am n 'man that will prevent it—Though I ſay it, yo 'have as good a ſupper dreſt here as at any tav 'town.'

'Since Mr. Bondum is ſo kind, captain,' ſa philoſopher, 'I hope for the favour of your cor 'I aſſure you, if it ever be my fortune to go 'into the world, I ſhall be proud of the ho 'your acquaintance.'

'Indeed, ſir,' cries Booth, 'it is an honor 'be very ready to accept; but as for this ev 'cannot help ſaying, I hope to be engaged i 'place.'

'I promiſe you, ſir,' anſwered the other 'rejoice at your liberty, though I am a loſe

'Why, as to that matter,' cries Bondu ſneer, 'I fancy, captain, you may engage 'the gentleman without any fear of bre 'word: for I am very much miſtaken, if 'day.'

'Pardon me, my good friend,' ſaid 'I expect my bail every minute.'

'Lookee, ſir, cries Bondum, 'I don 'gentlemen in an error. I ſhall not *'jeant's* bail; and as for the colonel

'with him myſelf this morning; (for to be ſure I 'love to do all I can for gentlemen); and he told me, 'he could not poſſibly be here to-day: beſides, why 'ſhould I mince the matter? there is more ſtuff in the 'office.'

'What do you mean by ſtuff?' cries Booth.

'I mean that there is another writ,' anſwered the bailiff, 'at the ſuit of Mrs. Elliſon, the gentlewoman 'that was here yeſterday; and the attorney that was 'with her, is concerned againſt you. Some officers 'would not tell you all this; but I loves to ſhew 'civility to gentlemen, while they behave themſelves 'as ſuch. And I loves the gentlemen of the army in 'particular. I had like to have been in the army 'myſelf once; but I liked the commiſſion I have bet-'ter. Come, captain, let not your noble courage be 'caſt down; what ſay you to a glaſs of white wine, 'or a tiff of punch, by way of whet?'

'I have told you, ſir, I never drink in the morning,' cries Booth a little peeviſhly.

'No offence, I hope, ſir,' ſaid the bailiff. 'I 'hope I have not treated you with any incivility. 'I don't aſk any gentleman to call for liquor in my 'houſe, if he doth not chuſe it; nor I don't deſire 'any body to ſtay here longer than they have a mind 'to?—Newgate, to be ſure, is the place for all debtors 'that can't find bail. I knows what civility is, and 'I ſcorn to behave myſelf unbecoming a gentleman; 'but I'd have you conſider that the twenty-four hours 'appointed by act of parliament are almoſt out; and 'ſo it is time to think of removing. As to bail, I 'would not have you flatter yourſelf: for I knows 'very well there are other things coming againſt you. 'Beſides, the ſum you are already charged with is 'very large, and I muſt ſee you in a place of ſafety. 'My houſe is no priſon, though I lock up for a little 'time in it. Indeed, when gentlemen are gentlemen, 'and likely to find bail, I don't ſtand for a day or 'two; but I have a good noſe at a bit of carrion, 'captain; I have not carried ſo much carrion to 'Newgate, without knowing the ſmell of it.'

'I underſtand not your cant,' cries Booth; 'but I 'did not think to have offended you ſo much by re- 'fuſing to drink in a morning.'

'Offended me, ſir,' cries the bailiff. 'Who told 'you ſo? do you think, ſir, if I want a glaſs of wine, 'I am under any neceſſity of aſking my priſoners for 'it? damn it, ſir, I'll ſhew you, I ſcorn your words; 'I can afford to treat you with a glaſs of the beſt 'wine in England, if you comes to that'—He then pulled out a handful of guineas, ſaying, 'There, 'ſir, they are all my own; I owe no body a ſhilling. 'I am no beggar, nor no debtor. I am the king's 'officer, as well as you, and I will ſpend guinea for 'guinea as long as you pleaſe.'

'Harkee, raſcal,' cries Booth, laying hold of the bailiff's collar. 'How dare you treat me with this 'inſolence? doth the law give you any authority to 'inſult me in my misfortunes?' At which words he gave the bailiff a good ſhove, and threw him from him.

'Very well, ſir,' cries the bailiff, 'I will ſwear 'both an aſſault and an attempt to a reſcue. If officers 'are to be uſed in this manner, there is an end of all 'law and juſtice. But though I am not a match for 'you myſelf, I have thoſe below that are.' He then ran to the door, and called up two ill-looking fellows, his followers, whom, as ſoon as they entered the room, he ordered to ſeize on Booth, declaring he would immediately carry him to Newgate; at the ſame time pouring out a vaſt quantity of abuſe, below the dignity of hiſtory to record.

Booth deſired the two dirty fellows to ſtand off, and declared he would make no reſiſtance, at the ſame time bidding the bailiff carry him wherever he durſt.

'I'll ſhew you what I dare,' cries the bailiff; and again ordered the followers to lay hold of their priſoner, ſaying, 'He has aſſaulted me already, and endeavour- 'ed a reſcue. I ſhan't truſt ſuch a fellow to walk at 'liberty. A gentleman, indeed! ay, ay, Newga 'is the propereſt place for ſuch gentry; as arra 'carrion as ever was carried thither.'

The fellows then both laid violent hands on Booth, nd the bailiff ſtept to the door to order a coach; when n a ſudden, the whole ſcene was changed in an in-ant: for now the ſerjeant came running, out of reath, into the room; and ſeeing his friend, the aptain, roughly handled by two ill-looking fellows, ithout aſking any queſtions, ſtept briſkly up to his ſiſtance, and inſtantly gave one of the aſſailants ſo iolent a ſalute with his fiſt, that he directly meaſured is length on the floor.

Booth having by this means his right arm at liberty vas unwilling to be idle, or entirely to owe his reſcue rom both the ruffians to the ſerjeant; he therefore mitated the example which his friend had ſet him, nd with a luſty blow levelled the other follower with his companion on the ground.

The bailiff roared out, 'A reſcue, a reſcue;' to which the ſerjeant anſwered, 'There was no reſcue intended. 'The captain,' ſaid he, 'wants no reſcue. 'Here are ſome friends coming who will deliver him 'in a better manner.'

The bailiff ſwore heartily he would carry him to Newgate, in ſpite of all the friends in the world.

'You carry him to Newgate!' cried the ſerjeant, with the higheſt indignation. 'Offer but to lay your hands on him, and I will knock your teeth down your ugly jaws.'—Then turning to Booth, he cried, They will be all here within a minute, ſir; we had much ado to keep my lady from coming herſelf; but ſhe is at home in good health, longing to ſee your honour; and I hope you will be with her within this half hour.'

And now three gentlemen entered the room; theſe were an attorney, the perſon whom the ſerjeant had procured in the morning to be his bail with Colonel James, and laſtly, Doctor Harriſon himſelf.

The bailiff no ſooner ſaw the attorney, with whom he was well acquainted (for the others he knew not) than he began, as the phraſe is, to pull in his horns, and ordered the two followers, who were now got again on their legs, to walk down ſtairs.

'So, captain,' ſays the doctor, 'when laſt we parted, I believe we neither of us expected to meet in ſuch a place as this.'

'Indeed, doctor,' cries Booth, 'I did not expect 'to have been ſent hither by the gentleman who did 'me that favour.'

'How ſo, ſir?' ſaid the doctor, 'you was ſent hi- 'ther by ſome perſon, I ſuppoſe, to whom you was 'indebted. This is the uſual place, I apprehend, 'for creditors to ſend their debtors to. But you 'ought to be more ſurpriſed that the gentleman who 'ſent you hither is come to releaſe you.—Mr. Mur- 'phy, you will perform all the neceſſary ceremonials.'

The attorney then aſked the bailiff with how many actions Booth was charged, and was informed there were five beſides the doctor's, which was much the heavieſt of all. Proper bonds were preſently provided, and the doctor and the ſerjeant's friend ſigned them; the bailiff, at the inſtance of the attorney, making no objection to the bail.

Booth, we may be aſſured, made a handſome ſpeech to the doctor for ſuch extraordinary friendſhip, with which, however, we do not think proper to trouble the reader; and now every thing being ended, and the company ready to depart, the bailiff ſtepped up to Booth, and told him he hoped he would remember civility money.

'I believe,' cries Booth, 'you mean incivility 'money; if there be any fees due for rudeneſs 'muſt own you have a very juſt claim.'

'I am ſure, ſir,' cries the bailiff, 'I have treated 'your honour with all the reſpect in the world; 'man, I am ſure, can charge me with uſing a gen- 'man rudely. I knows what belongs to a gentle- 'better; but you can't deny that two of my men 'have been knocked down; and I doubt not 'as you are a gentleman, you will give them 'thing to drink.'

Booth was about to anſwer with ſome paſſion, when the attorney interfered, and whiſpered in his ear, that it was uſual to make a compliment to the bailiff, *and that he had better comply with the cuſtom*.

If the fellow had treated me civilly,' anſwered th, 'I ſhould have had no objection to comply ith a bad cuſtom in his favour; but I am reſolved, will never reward a man for uſing me ill, and I ill not agree to give him a ſingle farthing.'

'Tis very well, ſir,' ſaid the bailiff, 'I am rightly rved for my good-nature; but if it had been to do gain, I would have taken care you ſhould not have een bailed this day.'

Doctor Harriſon, to whom Booth referred the cauſe, r giving him a ſuccinct account of what had paſt, lared the captain to be in the right. He ſaid it a moſt horrid impoſition, that ſuch fellows were r ſuffered to prey on the neceſſitous; but that the mple would be much worſe to reward them where y had behaved themſelves ill. 'And I think,' ſays 'the bailiff is worthy of great rebuke for what e hath juſt now ſaid; in which I hope he hath oaſted of more power than is in him. We do, indeed, with great juſtice and propriety, value ourelves on our freedom, if the liberty of the ſubject epends on the pleaſure of ſuch fellows as theſe.'

It is not ſo neither altogether,' cries the lawyer: lut cuſtom hath eſtabliſhed a preſent or fee to them t the delivery of a priſoner, which they call civiity money, and expect as in a manner their due, hough in reality they have no right.'

But will any man,' cries Doctor Harriſon, 'after hat the captain hath told us, ſay that the bailiff ath behaved himſelf as he ought; and if he had, s he to be rewarded for not acting in an unchriſtian nd inhuman manner? it is pity, that inſtead of a uſtom of feeing them out of the pockets of the poor nd wretched, when they do not behave themſelves ll, there was not both a law and a practice to puiſh them ſeverely when they do. In the preſent aſe, I am ſo far from agreeing to give the bailiff a hilling, that, if there be any method of puniſhing im for his rudeneſs, I ſhall be heartily glad to ſee t put in execution: for there are none whoſe conluct ſhould be ſo ſtrictly watched as that of theſe neceſſary evils in the ſociety, as their office concerns

'for the moſt part thoſe poor creatures who cannot do 'themſelves juſtice, and as they are generally the 'worſt of men who undertake it.'

The bailiff then quitted the room, muttering that he ſhould know better what to do another time; and ſhortly after Booth and his friends left the houſe; but as they were going out, the author took Doctor Harriſon aſide, and ſlipt a receipt into his hand, which the doctor returned, ſaying he never ſubſcribed when he neither knew the work nor the author; but that if he would call at his lodgings, he would be very willing to give all the encouragement to merit which was in his power.

The author took down the doctor's name and direction, and made him as many bows as he would have done had he carried off the half guinea, for which he had been fiſhing.

Mr. Booth then took his leave of the philoſopher, and departed with the reſt of his friends.

AMELIA.

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

In which the hiſtory looks backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther with our hiſtory, it may be proper to look back a little, in order to account for the late conduct of Doctor Harriſon; which however inconſiſtent it may have hitherto appeared, when examined to the bottom, will be found, I apprehend, to be truly congruous with all the rules of the moſt perfect prudence, as well as with the moſt conſummate goodneſs.

We have already partly ſeen in what light Booth had been repreſented to the doctor abroad. Indeed, the accounts which were ſent of the captain, as well by the curate as by a gentleman of the neighbourhood, were much groſſer and more to his diſadvantage, than the doctor was pleaſed to ſet them forth in his letter to the perſon accuſed. What ſenſe he had of Booth's conduct, was, however, manifeſt by that letter. Nevertheleſs he reſolved to ſuſpend his final judgment till his return; and though he cenſured him, would not abſolutely condemn him without ocular demonſtration.

The doctor, on his return to his pariſh, found all the accuſations which had been tranſmitted to him, confirmed by many witneſſes, of which the curate's wife, who had *been formerly* a friend to Amelia, and *ſtill preſerved the* outward appearance of friendſhip,

was the ſtrongeſt. She introduced all with, 'I am 'ſorry to ſay it; and it is friendſhip which bids me 'ſpeak; and it is for their good it ſhould be told 'you;' after which beginnings, ſhe never concluded a ſingle ſpeech without ſome horrid ſlander and bitter invective.

Beſides the malicious turn which was given to theſe affairs in the country, which were owing a good deal to misfortune, and ſome little perhaps to imprudence, the whole neighbourhood rung with ſeveral groſs and ſcandalous lies, which were merely the inventions of his enemies, and of which the ſcene was laid in London ſince his abſence.

Poiſoned with all this malice, the doctor came to town, and learning where Booth lodged, went to make him a viſit. Indeed, it was the doctor, and no other, who had been at his lodgings that evening when Booth and Amelia were walking in the Park; and concerning which the reader may be pleaſed to remember ſo many ſtrange and odd conjectures.

Here the doctor ſaw the little gold watch, and all thoſe fine trinkets with which the noble lord had preſented the children; and which, from the anſwers given him by the poor ignorant innocent girl, he could have no doubt had been purchaſed within a few days by Amelia.

This account tallied ſo well with the ideas he had imbibed of Booth's extravagance in the country, that he firmly believed both the huſband and wife to be the vaineſt, ſilliеſt, and moſt unjuſt people alive. It was, indeed, almoſt incredible, that two rational beings ſhould be guilty of ſuch abſurdity; but monſtrous and abſurd as it was, ocular demonſtration appeared to be the evidence againſt them.

The doctor departed from their lodgings enraged at this ſuppoſed diſcovery, and unhappily for Booth, was engaged to ſupper that very evening with the country gentleman of whom Booth had rented a farm. As the poor captain happened to be the ſubject of converſation, and occaſioned their comparing notes, the account which the doctor gave of what he had ſeen that *evening*, ſo incenſed the gentleman to whom Booth

was

was likewiſe a debtor, that he vowed he would take a writ out againſt him the next morning, and have his body alive or dead. And the doctor was at laſt perſuaded to do the ſame. Mr. Murphy was thereupon immediately ſent for, and the doctor in his preſence repeated again what he had ſeen at his lodgings, as the foundation of his ſuing him, which the attorney, as we have before ſeen, had blabbed to Atkinſon.

But no ſooner did the doctor hear that Booth was arreſted, than the wretched condition of his wife and family began to affect his mind. The children, who were to be utterly undone with their father, were intirely innocent; and as for Amelia herſelf, though he thought he had moſt convincing proofs of very blameable levity; yet his former friendſhip and affection to her were buſy to invent every excuſe, till, by very heavily loading the huſband, they lightened the ſuſpicion againſt the wife.

In this temper of mind, he reſolved to pay Amelia a ſecond viſit, and was on his way to Mrs. Elliſon, when the ſerjeant met him, and made himſelf known to him. The doctor took his old ſervant into a coffee-houſe, where he received from him ſuch an account of Booth and his family, that he deſired the ſerjeant to ſhew him preſently to Amelia; and this was the cordial which we mentioned at the end of the ninth chapter of the preceding book.

The doctor became ſoon ſatisfied concerning the trinkets which had given him ſo much uneaſineſs, and which had brought ſo much miſchief on the head of poor Booth. Amelia likewiſe gave the doctor ſome ſatisfaction as to what he had heard of her huſband's behaviour in the country; and aſſured him, upon her honour, that Booth could ſo well anſwer every complaint againſt his conduct, that ſhe had no doubt but that a man of the doctor's juſtice and candour would entirely acquit him, and would conſider him as an innocent unfortunate man, who was the object of a good man's compaſſion, not of his anger or reſentment.

This worthy clergyman, who was not deſirous of finding *proofs to* condemn the captain, or to juſtify

his own vindictive proceedings, but, on the contrary, rejoiced heartily in every piece of evidence which tended to clear the character of his friend, gave a ready ear to all which Amelia ſaid. To this, indeed, he was induced by the love he always had for that lady, by the good opinion he entertained of her, as well as by pity for her preſent condition, than which nothing appeared more miſerable; for he found her in the higheſt agonies of grief and deſpair, with her two little children crying over their wretched mother. Theſe are, indeed, to a well-diſpoſed mind, the moſt tragical ſights that human nature can furniſh, and afford a juſter motive to grief and tears in the beholder, than it would be to ſee all the heroes who have ever infeſted the earth, hanged all together in a ſtring.

The doctor felt this ſight as he ought. He immediately endeavoured to comfort the afflicted; in which he ſo well ſucceeded, that he reſtored to Amelia ſufficient ſpirits to give him the ſatisfaction we have mentioned: after which, he declared he would go and releaſe her huſband; which he accordingly did, in the manner we have above related.

CHAP. II.

In which the hiſtory goes forward.

WE now return to that period of our hiſtory, to which we had brought it at the end of our laſt book.

Booth and his friends arrived from the bailiff's, at the ſerjeant's lodgings, where Booth immediately ran up ſtairs to his Amelia; between whom I ſhall not attempt to deſcribe the meeting. Nothing certainly was ever more tender or more joyful. This however I will obſerve, that a very few of theſe exquiſite moments, of which the beſt minds only are capable, do, in reality, over-balance the longeſt enjoyments which can ever fall to the lot of the worſt.

Whilſt Booth and his wife were feaſting their ſouls with the moſt delicious mutual endearments, the doctor was fallen to play with the two little children be-

low

low ſtairs. While he was thus engaged, the little boy did ſomewhat amiſs; upon which, the doctor ſaid, 'If you do ſo any more, I will take your papa 'away from you again'—'Again, ſir,' ſaid the child, 'why, was it you then that took away my papa be-'fore?' 'Suppoſe it was,' ſaid the doctor, 'would 'not you forgive me?' 'Yes,' cries the child, 'I 'would forgive you; becauſe a chriſtian muſt forgive 'every body; but I ſhould hate you as long as I 'live.'

The doctor was ſo pleaſed with the boy's anſwer, that he caught him in his arms, and kiſſed him, at which time, Booth and his wife returned. The doctor aſked which of them was their ſon's inſtructor in his religion: Booth anſwered, that he muſt confeſs Amelia had all the merit of that kind. 'I ſhould 'have rather thought he had learnt of his father,' cries the doctor, 'for he ſeems a good ſoldier-like 'chriſtian, and profeſſes to hate his enemies with a 'very good grace.'

'How, Billy,' cries Amelia, 'I am ſure I did not 'teach you ſo.'

'I did not ſay I would hate my enemies, madam,' cries the boy. 'I only ſaid I would hate papa's ene-'mies; ſure, mamma, there is no harm in that: 'nay, I am ſure there is no harm in it; for I have 'heard you ſay the ſame thing a thouſand times.'

The doctor ſmiled on the child, and chucking him under the chin, told him, he muſt hate nobody: and now Mrs. Atkinſon, who had provided a dinner for them all, deſired them to walk up, and partake of it.

And now it was that Booth was firſt made acquainted with the ſerjeant's marriage; as was Dr. Harriſon, both of whom greatly felicitated him upon it.

Mrs. Atkinſon, who was, perhaps, a little more confounded than ſhe would have been had ſhe married a colonel, ſaid, 'If I have done wrong, Mrs. Booth 'is to anſwer for it; for ſhe made the match: 'indeed, Mr. Atkinſon, you are greatly obliged to 'the character which this lady gives of you.' 'I 'hope he will deſerve it,' ſaid the doctor; 'and if the

'army hath not corrupted a good boy, I believe I 'may anſwer for him.'

While our little company were enjoying that happineſs which never fails to attend converſation where all preſent are pleaſed with each other, a viſitant arrived, who was, perhaps, not very welcome to any of them. This was no other than Colonel James, who entering the room with much gaiety, went directly up to Booth, embraced him, and expreſſed great ſatisfaction at finding him there; he then made an apology for not attending him in the morning, which he ſaid had been impoſſible; and that he had with the utmoſt difficulty put off ſome buſineſs of great conſequence, in order to ſerve him this afternoon; 'but 'I am glad on your account,' cried he to Booth, 'that my preſence was not neceſſary.'

Booth himſelf was extremely ſatisfied with this declaration, and failed not to return him as many thanks as he would have deſerved, had he performed his promiſe; but the two ladies were not quite ſo well ſatisfied. As for the ſerjeant, he had ſlipt out of the room when the colonel entered, not entirely out of that baſhfulneſs which we have remarked him to be tainted with; but, indeed, from what had paſt in the morning, he hated the ſight of the colonel, as well on the account of his wife as on that of his friend.

The doctor, on the contrary, on what he had formerly heard from both Amelia and her huſband of the colonel's generoſity and friendſhip, had built ſo good an opinion of him, that he was very much pleaſed with ſeeing him, and took the firſt opportunity of telling him ſo. 'Colonel,' ſaid the doctor, 'I have not the 'happineſs of being known to you; but I have long 'been deſirous of an acquaintance with a gentleman, 'in whoſe commendation I have heard ſo much from 'ſome preſent.' The colonel made a proper anſw to this compliment, and they ſoon entered into a miliar converſation together: for the doctor was difficult of acceſs; indeed, he held the ſtrang ſerve, which is uſually practiſed in this nation tween people who are in any degree ſtrangers to *other*, to be very unbecoming the chriſtian characte

The two ladies ſoon left the room; and the remainder of the viſit, which was not very long, paſt in diſcourſe on various common ſubjects, not worth recording. In the concluſion, the colonel invited Booth and his lady, and the doctor, to dine with him the next day.

To give Colonel James his due commendation, he had ſhewn a great command of himſelf, and great preſence of mind on this occaſion: for, to ſpeak the plain truth, the viſit was intended to Amelia alone; nor did he expect, or, perhaps, deſire, any thing leſs than to find the captain at home. The great joy which he ſuddenly conveyed into his countenance at the unexpected ſight of his friend, is to be attributed to that noble art which is taught in thoſe excellent ſchools called the ſeveral courts of Europe. By this men are enabled to dreſs out their countenances as much at their own pleaſure, as they do their bodies; and to put on friendſhip with as much eaſe as they can a laced coat.

When the colonel and doctor were gone, Booth acquainted Amelia with the invitation he had received. She was ſo ſtruck with the news, and betrayed ſuch viſible marks of confuſion and uneaſineſs, that they could not have eſcaped Booth's obſervation, had ſuſpicion given him the leaſt hint to remark: but this, indeed, is the great optic glaſs helping us to diſcern plainly almoſt all that paſſes in the minds of others, without ſome uſe of which nothing is more purblind than human nature.

Amelia having recovered from her firſt perturbation, anſwered, 'My dear, I will dine with you wherever you 'pleaſe to lay your commands on me.'—'I am obliged 'to you, my dear ſoul,' cries Booth, 'your obedience 'ſhall be very eaſy; for my command will be, that you 'ſhall always follow your own inclinations.' 'My in-'clinations,' anſwered ſhe, 'would, I am afraid, be too 'unreaſonable a confinement to you; for they would 'always lead me to be with you and your children, 'with at moſt a ſingle friend or two, now and then.' 'O my dear,' replied he, 'large companies give us 'a greater reliſh for our own ſociety when we return

to

'to it; and we ſhall be extremely merry, for Doctor 'Harriſon dines with us.' 'I hope you will, my 'dear,' cries ſhe; 'but I own I ſhould have been 'better pleaſed to have enjoyed a few days with your-'ſelf and the children, with no other perſon but Mrs. 'Atkinſon, for whom I have conceived a violent af-'fection, and who would have given us but little in-'terruption. However, if you have promiſed, I muſt 'undergo the penance.' 'Nay, child,' cried he, 'I am ſure I would have refuſed, could I have gueſſed 'it had been in the leaſt diſagreeable to you; though 'I know your objection'—'Objection!' cries Amelia eagerly, 'I have no objection!' 'Nay, nay,' ſaid he, 'come, be honeſt, I know your objection, though 'you are unwilling to own it.' 'Good Heavens!' cried Amelia, frightened, 'what do you mean? 'what objection?' 'Why,' anſwered he, 'to the 'company of Mrs. James; and I muſt confeſs ſhe 'hath not behaved to you lately as you might have 'expected; but you ought to paſs all that by, for 'the ſake of her huſband, to whom we have both ſo 'many obligations; who is the worthieſt, honeſteſt, 'and moſt generous fellow in the univerſe, and the 'beſt friend to me that ever man had.'

Amelia, who had far other ſuſpicions, and began to fear that her huſband had diſcovered them, was highly pleaſed, when ſhe ſaw him taking a wrong ſcent. She gave, therefore, a little into the deceit, and acknowledged the truth of what he had mentioned; but ſaid, that the pleaſure ſhe ſhould have in complying with his deſires, would highly recompenſe any diſſatisfaction which might ariſe on any other account; and ſhortly after ended the converſation on this ſubject, with her chearfully promiſing to fulfil his promiſe.

In reality, poor Amelia had now a moſt unpleaſant taſk to undertake; for ſhe thought it abſolutely neceſſary to conceal from her huſband the opinion ſhe had conceived of the colonel. For, as ſhe knew the characters, as well of her huſband as of his friend, or rather enemy (both being often ſynonymous in the *language* of the world) ſhe had the utmoſt reaſon to apprehend

apprehend ſomething very fatal might attend her huſband's entertaining the ſame thought of James, which filled and tormented her own breaſt.

And, as ſhe knew that nothing but theſe thoughts could juſtify the leaſt unkind, or, indeed, the leaſt reſerved behaviour to James, who had, in all appearance, conferred the greateſt obligations upon Booth and herſelf, ſhe was reduced to a dilemma, the moſt dreadful that can attend a virtuous woman, as it often gives the higheſt triumph, and ſometimes no little advantage to the men of profeſſed gallantry.

In ſhort, to avoid giving any umbrage to her huſband, Amelia was forced to act in a manner, which ſhe was conſcious muſt give encouragement to the colonel: a ſituation which, perhaps, requires as great prudence and delicacy, as any in which the heroic part of the female character can be exerted.

CHAP. III.

A converſation between Dr. Harriſon and others.

THE next day, Booth and his lady, with the doctor, met at Colonel James's, where Colonel Bath likewiſe made one of the company.

Nothing very remarkable paſſed at dinner, or till the ladies withdrew. During this time, however, the behaviour of Colonel James was ſuch as gave ſome uneaſineſs to Amelia, who well underſtood his meaning, tho' the particulars were too refined and ſubtle to be obſerved by any other preſent.

When the ladies were gone, which was as ſoon as Amelia could prevail on Mrs. James to depart, Colonel Bath, who had been pretty briſk with Champagne at dinner, ſoon began to diſplay his magnanimity. 'My brother tells me, young gentleman,' ſaid he to Booth, 'that you have been uſed very ill lately by 'ſome raſcals; and I have no doubt but you will do 'yourſelf juſtice.'

Booth anſwered, that he did not know what he meant. 'Since I muſt mention it then,' cries the colonel, 'I hear *you* have been arreſted; and I think

you

'you know what ſatisfaction is to be required by a 'man of honour.'

'I beg, ſir,' ſays the doctor, 'no more may be 'mentioned of that matter. I am convinced no ſatis-'faction will be required of the captain, till he is able 'to give it.'

'I do not underſtand what you mean by able,' cries the colonel.—To which the doctor anſwered, that it was of too tender a nature to ſpeak more of.

'Give me your hand, doctor,' cries the colonel; 'I ſee you are a man of honour, though you wear a 'gown. It is, as you ſay, a matter of a tender na-'ture. Nothing, indeed, is ſo tender as a man's ho-'nour. Curſe me, if any man; I mean, that 'is, if any gentleman was to arreſt me—I would as 'ſurely cut his throat as——'

'How, ſir!' ſaid the doctor. 'Would you com-'penſate one breach of the law by a much greater, 'and pay your debts by committing murder?'

'Why do you mention law between gentlemen?' ſays the colonel. 'A man of honour wears his law 'by his ſide. And can the reſentment of an affront 'make a gentleman guilty of murder? and what 'greater affront can one man caſt upon another, than 'by arreſting him? I am convinced, that he who 'would put up an arreſt, would put up a ſlap in the 'face.'

Here the colonel looked extremely fierce, and the divine ſtared with aſtoniſhment at this doctrine; when Booth, who well knew the impoſſibility of oppoſing the colonel's humour with ſucceſs, began to play with it; and having firſt conveyed a private wink to the doctor, he ſaid, there might be caſes undoubtedly where ſuch an affront ought to be reſented; but that there were others, where any reſentment was impracticable: 'As for inſtance,' ſaid he, 'where the man 'is arreſted by a woman.'

'I could not be ſuppoſed to mean that caſe,' cries the colonel; 'and you are convinced I did not 'mean it.'

'To put an end to this diſcourſe at once, ſir,' ſaid

the doctor, 'I was the plaintiff, at whoſe ſuit this 'gentleman was arreſted.'

'Was you ſo, ſir!' cries the colonel; 'then I 'have no more to ſay. Women and the clergy are 'upon the ſame footing. The long-robed gentry are 'exempted from the laws of honour.'

'I do not thank you for that exemption, ſir,' cries the doctor; 'and if honour and fighting are, as they 'ſeem to be, ſynonymous words with you, I believe 'there are ſome clergymen, who, in defence of their 'religion, or their country, or their friend, the only 'juſtifiable cauſes of fighting, except bare ſelf-de-'fence, would fight as bravely as yourſelf, colonel; 'and that without being paid for it.'

'Sir, you are privileged,' ſaid the colonel with great dignity; 'and you have my leave to ſay what 'you pleaſe. I reſpect your order, and you cannot 'offend me.'

'I will not offend you, colonel,' cries the doctor; 'and our order is very much obliged to you, ſince you 'profeſs ſo much reſpect to us, and pay none to our 'maſter.'

'What maſter, ſir!' ſaid the colonel.

'That Maſter,' anſwered the doctor, 'who hath 'expreſsly forbidden all that cutting of throats, to 'which you diſcover ſo much inclination.'

'O, your ſervant, ſir,' ſaid the colonel, 'I ſee what 'you are driving at; but you ſhall not perſuade me 'to think, that religion forces me to be a coward.'

'I deteſt and deſpiſe the name as much as you can,' cries the doctor; 'but you have a wrong idea of the 'word, colonel. What were all the Greeks and Ro-'mans? were theſe cowards; and yet, did you ever 'hear of this butchery, which we call duelling, among 'them?'

'Yes, indeed, have I,' cries the colonel. 'What 'elſe is all Mr. Pope's Homer full of, but duels? Did 'not, what's his name, one of the Agamemnons, fight 'with that paultry raſcal Paris? and Diomede with, 'what d'ye call him there; and Hector with, I forget 'his name, he that was Achilles's boſom friend; and 'afterwards with Achilles himſelf? Nay, and in

'Dryden's

'Dryden's Virgil, is there any thing almoſt beſides 'fighting?'

'You are a man of learning, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'but—

'I thank you for that compliment,' ſaid the colonel ——— 'No, ſir, I do not pretend to learning; but 'I have ſome little reading, and I am not aſhamed to 'own it.'

'But are you ſure, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'that 'you have not made a ſmall miſtake? for I am apt to 'believe, both Mr. Pope and Mr. Dryden (tho' I can-'not ſay I ever read a word of either of them) ſpeak 'of wars between nations, and not of private duels: 'for of the later, I do not remember one ſingle in-'ſtance in all the Greek and Roman ſtory. In ſhort, 'it is a modern cuſtom, introduced by barbarous na-'tions ſince the times of Chriſtianity; tho' it is a di-'rect and audacious defiance of the chriſtian law, and 'is conſequently much more ſinful in us, than it 'would have been in the heathens.'

'Drink about, doctor,' cries the colonel, 'and 'let us call a new cauſe: for I perceive we ſhall ne-'ver agree on this. You are a churchman, and I 'don't expect you to ſpeak your mind.'

'We are both of the ſame church, I hope,' cries the doctor.

'I am of the church of England, ſir,' anſwered the colonel, 'and will fight for it to the laſt drop of my 'blood.'

'It is very generous in you, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'to fight ſo zealouſly for a religion by which 'you are to be damned.'

'It is well for you, doctor,' cries the colonel, 'that 'you wear a gown: for, by all the dignity of a 'man, if any other perſon had ſaid the words you 'have juſt uttered, I would have made him eat them '——Ay, d—n me, and my ſword into the bargain.'

Booth began to be apprehenſive, that this diſpute might grow too warm; in which caſe he feared that the colonel's honour, together with the Champagne, might hurry him ſo far, as to forget the reſpect due, and which he profeſſed to pay, to the ſacerdotal

robe.

robe. Booth, therefore, interpoſed between the diſputants, and ſaid, that the colonel had very rightly propoſed to call a new ſubject; for that it was impoſſible to reconcile accepting a challenge with the Chriſtian religion, or refuſing it with the modern notion of honour. 'And you muſt allow it, doctor,' 'ſaid he, 'to be a very hard injunction for a man to 'become infamous; and more eſpecially for a ſoldier, 'who is to loſe his bread into the bargain.'

'Ay, ſir,' ſays the colonel with an air of triumph, 'What ſay you to that?'

'Why, I ſay,' cries the doctor, 'that it is much 'harder to be damned on the other ſide.'

'That may be,' ſaid the colonel; 'but damn me, 'if I would take an affront of any man breathing for 'all that. And yet I believe myſelf to be as good a 'chriſtian as wears a head. My maxim is, Never to 'give an affront, nor ever to take one; and I ſay, 'that is the maxim of a good chriſtian; and no man 'ſhall ever perſuade me to the contrary.'

'Well, ſir,' ſaid the doctor, 'ſince that is your 'reſolution, I hope no man will ever give you an af'front.'

'I am obliged to you for your hope, doctor,' cries the colonel with a ſneer; 'and he that doth, will be 'obliged to you for lending him your gown: for, by 'the dignity of a man, nothing out of petticoats, I 'believe, dares affront me.'

Colonel James had not hitherto joined in the diſcourſe. In truth, his thoughts had been otherwiſe employed; nor is it very difficult for the reader to gueſs what had been the ſubject of them. Being waked, however, from his reverie, and having heard the two or three laſt ſpeeches, he turned to his brother, and aſked him, why he would introduce ſuch a topic of converſation before a gentleman of Dr. Harriſon's character?

'Brother, cried Bath, 'I own it was wrong, and 'I aſk the doctor's pardon; I know not how it hap'pened to ariſe: for you know, brother, I am not, 'uſed to talk of theſe matters. They are generally 'poltroons that do. I think I need not be beholden

'to

'to my tongue to declare I am none. I have ſhewn 'myſelf in a line of battle. I believe there is no man 'will deny that; I believe I may ſay, no man dare 'deny, that I have done my duty'——.

The colonel was thus proceeding to prove that his proweſs was neither the ſubject of his diſcourſe, nor the object of his vanity, when a ſervant entered, and ſummoned the company to tea with the ladies; a ſummons which colonel James inſtantly obeyed, and was followed by all the reſt.

But as the tea-table converſation, though extremely delightful to thoſe who are engaged in it, may probably appear ſomewhat dull to the reader, we will here put an end to the chapter.

CHAP. IV.

A dialogue between Booth and Amelia.

THE next morning early, Booth went by appointment and waited on Colonel James; whence he returned to Amelia, in that kind of diſpoſition which the great maſter of human paſſions would deſcribe in Andromache, when he tells us ſhe cried and ſmiled at the ſame inſtant.

Amelia plainly perceived the diſcompoſure of his mind, in which the oppoſite affections of joy and grief were ſtruggling for the ſuperiority, and begged to know the occaſion; upon which Booth ſpoke as follows:

'My dear, ſaid he, 'I had no intention to conceal 'from you what hath paſt this morning between me 'and the colonel, who hath oppreſſed me, if I may 'uſe that expreſſion, with obligations. Sure never 'man had ſuch a friend; for never was there ſo noble 'ſo generous a heart—I cannot help this ebullition of 'gratitude, I really cannot.'—Here he pauſed a moment, and wiped his eyes, and then proceeded: 'You 'know, my dear, how gloomy the proſpect was yeſ 'terday before our eyes, how inevitable ruin ſtared 'me in the face; and the dreadful idea of having en 'tailed beggary on my Amelia and her poſterity

'racks

'racked my mind: For, though by the goodneſs of 'the doctor I had regained my liberty, the debt yet 'remained; and if that worthy man had a deſign of 'forgiving me his ſhare, this muſt have been my 'utmoſt hope; and the condition in which I muſt ſtill 'have found myſelf need not to be expatiated on. 'In what light then ſhall I ſee, in what words ſhall I 'relate, the colonel's kindneſs! O, my dear Amelia, 'he hath removed the whole gloom at once, hath 'driven all deſpair out of my mind, and hath filled it 'with the moſt ſanguine, and, at the ſame time, the 'moſt reaſonable hopes of making a comfortable pro-'viſion for yourſelf and my dear children. In the firſt 'place, then, he will advance me a ſum of money to 'pay off all my debts; and this on a bond to be re-'paid only when I ſhall become colonel of a regiment, 'and not before. In the next place, he is gone this 'very morning to aſk a company for me, which is 'now vacant in the Weſt-Indies; and as he intends 'to puſh this with all his intereſt, neither he nor I 'have any doubt of his ſucceſs. Now, my dear, comes 'the third, which, though perhaps it ought to give 'me the greateſt joy, ſuch is, I own, the weak-'neſs of my nature, it rends my very heart-ſtrings 'aſunder.—I cannot mention it: for I know it will 'give you equal pain—though I know on all proper 'occaſions you can exert a manly reſolution.—You 'will not, I am convinced, oppoſe it, whatever you 'muſt ſuffer in complying——O, my dear Amelia, I 'muſt ſuffer likewiſe; yet I have reſolved to bear 'it—You know not what my poor heart hath ſuffered 'ſince he made the propoſal—It is love for you alone 'which could perſuade me to ſubmit to it—Conſider 'our ſituation; conſider that of our children; reflect 'but on thoſe poor babes, whoſe future happineſs is 'at ſtake, and it muſt arm your reſolution. It is your 'intereſt and theirs that reconciled me to a propoſal, 'which, when the colonel firſt made it, ſtruck me with 'the utmoſt horror: he hath, indeed, from theſe mo-'tives, perſuaded me into a reſolution, which I thought 'impoſſible for any one to have perſuaded me into— 'O, my dear Amelia, let me intreat you to give me

'up

'up to the good of your children; as I have promiſed 'the colonel to give you up to their intereſt and your 'own. If you refuſe theſe terms, we are ſtill undone; 'for he inſiſts abſolutely upon them——Think then, 'my love, however hard they may be, neceſſity com- 'pels us to ſubmit to them. I know in what light a 'woman, who loves like you, muſt conſider ſuch a 'propoſal; and yet how many inſtances have you of 'women, who, from the ſame motives, have ſub- 'mitted to the ſame!'

'What can you mean, Mr. Booth?' cries Amelia trembling.

'Need I explain my meaning to you more?' anſwered Booth.—'Did I not ſay, I muſt give up my 'Amelia?'

'Give me up!' ſaid ſhe.

'For a time only, I mean,' anſwered he; 'for a 'ſhort time perhaps. The colonel himſelf will take 'care it ſhall not be long—for I know his heart; I 'ſhall ſcarce have more joy in receiving you back, 'than he will have in reſtoring you to my arms. In 'the mean time, he will not only be a father to my 'children, but a huſband to you.'

'A huſband to me!' ſaid Amelia.

'Yes, my dear; a kind, a fond, a tender, an af- 'fectionate huſband. If I had not the moſt certain 'aſſurances of this, doth my Amelia think I could 'be prevailed on to leave her?—No, my Amelia, 'he is the only man on earth who could have pre- 'vailed on me; but I know his houſe, his purſe, his 'protection, will be all at your command—And as 'for any diſlike you have conceived to his wife, let 'not that be any objection: for I am convinced he 'will not ſuffer her to inſult you; beſides, ſhe is ex- 'tremely well-bred, and how much ſoever ſhe may 'hate you in her heart, ſhe will at leaſt treat you 'with civility.

'Nay, the invitation is not his, but her's; and I 'am convinced they will both behave to you with the 'greateſt friendſhip: his I am ſure will be ſincere, as 'to the wife of a friend entruſted to his care; and '*her's will*, from good breeding, have not only the

'appearance

appearances, but the effects, of the trueſt friendſhip.'

'I underſtand you, my dear, at laſt,' ſaid ſhe, ndeed ſhe had rambled into very ſtrange conceits om ſome parts of his diſcourſe) 'and I will give you my reſolution in a word——I will do the duty of a wife; and that is, to attend her huſband wherever he goes.'

Booth attempted to reaſon with her, but all to no urpoſe. She gave, indeed, a quiet hearing to all he id, and even to thoſe parts which moſt diſpleaſed er ears; I mean, thoſe in which he exaggerated the reat goodneſs and diſintereſted generoſity of his riend: but her reſolution remained inflexible, and eſiſted the force of all his arguments with a ſteadineſs f oppoſition, which it would have been almoſt excuable in him to have conſtrued into ſtubbornneſs.

The doctor arrived in the midſt of the diſpute; nd, having heard the merits of the cauſe on both ides, delivered his opinion in the following words:

'I have always thought it, my dear children, a matter of the utmoſt nicety, to interfere in any differences between huſband and wife; but, ſince you both deſire me, with ſuch earneſtneſs, to give you my ſentiments on the preſent conteſt between you, I will give you my thoughts as well as I am able. In the firſt place then, can any thing be more reaſonable, than for a wife to deſire to attend her huſband? It is, as my favourite child obſerves, no more than a deſire to do her duty; and I make no doubt but that is one great reaſon of her inſiſting on it. And how can you yourſelf oppoſe it? Can love be its own enemy; or can a huſband, who is fond of his wife, content himſelf almoſt on any account with a long abſence from her?'

'You ſpeak like an angel, my dear doctor Harriſon,' anſwered Amelia; 'I am ſure, if he loved as tenderly as I do, he could on no account ſubmit to it.'

'Pardon me, child,' cries the doctor, 'there are ſome *reaſons, which* would not only juſtify his

'leaving

'leaving you, but which muſt force him, if he 'hath any real love for you, joined with common 'ſenſe, to make that election. If it was neceſſary, 'for inſtance, either to your good, or to the good 'of your children, he would not deſerve the name 'of a man, I am ſure not that of a huſband, if he 'heſitated a moment. Nay, in that caſe, I am con-'vinced, you yourſelf would be an advocate for what 'you now oppoſe. I fancy therefore I miſtook him, 'when I apprehended he ſaid, that the colonel made 'his leaving you behind as the condition of getting 'him the commiſſion: for I know my dear child hath 'too much goodneſs, and too much ſenſe, and too 'much reſolution, to prefer any temporary indul-'gence of her own paſſions to the ſolid advantages of 'her whole family.'

'There, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I knew what 'opinion the doctor would be of. Nay, I am certain, 'there is not a wiſe man in the kingdom who would 'ſay otherwiſe.'

'Don't abuſe me, young gentleman,' ſaid the doc-tor, 'with appellations I don't deſerve.'

'I abuſe you, my dear doctor!' cries Booth.

'Yes my dear ſir,' anſwered the doctor; 'you 'inſinuated ſlily that I was wiſe, which, as the world 'underſtands the phraſe, I ſhould be aſhamed of; 'and my comfort is, that no one can accuſe me juſtly 'of it; I have juſt given an inſtance of the contrary, 'by throwing away my advice.'

'I hope, ſir,' cries Booth, 'that will not be the 'caſe.'

'Yes, ſir,' anſwered the doctor, 'I know it will 'be the caſe in the preſent inſtance; for either you 'will not go at all, or my little turtle here will go 'with you.'

'You are in the right, doctor,' cries Amelia.

'I am ſorry for it,' ſaid the doctor; 'for then I 'aſſure you, you are in the wrong.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'if you knew all my 'reaſons, you would ſay they were very ſtrong 'ones.'

'Very

'Very probably,' cries the doctor—'The knowledge 'that they are in the wrong, is a very ſtrong reaſon to 'ſome women to continue ſo.'

'Nay, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'you ſhall never 'perſuade me of that. I will not believe that any 'human being ever did an action merely becauſe they 'knew it to be wrong.'

'I am obliged to you, my dear child,' ſaid the doctor, 'for declaring your reſolution of not being 'perſuaded. Your huſband would never call me a 'wiſe man again, if, after that declaration, I ſhould 'attempt to perſuade you.'

'Well, I muſt be content,' cries Amelia, 'to let 'you think as you pleaſe.'

'That is very gracious, indeed,' ſaid the doctor. 'Surely, in a country where the church ſuffers others 'to think as they pleaſe, it would be very hard if they 'had not themſelves the ſame liberty. And yet, as 'unreaſonable as the power of controuling men's 'thoughts is repreſented, I will ſhew you how you 'ſhall controul mine, whenever you deſire it.

'How, pray?' cries Amelia. 'I ſhould greatly 'eſteem that power.'

'Why, whenever you act like a wiſe woman,' cries the doctor, 'you will force me to think you ſo; and, 'whenever you are pleaſed to act as you do now, I 'ſhall be obliged, whether I will or no, to think as I 'do now.'

'Nay, dear doctor,' cries Booth, 'I am convinced 'my Amelia will never do any thing to forfeit your 'good opinion. Conſider but the cruel hardſhip of 'what ſhe is to undergo, and you will make allowances 'for the difficulty ſhe makes in complying. To ſay 'the truth, when I examine my own heart, I have 'more obligations to her than appear at firſt ſight; 'for, by obliging me to find arguments to perſuade 'her, ſhe hath aſſiſted me in conquering myſelf. In-'deed, if ſhe had ſhewn more reſolution, I ſhould have 'ſhewn leſs.'

'So you think it neceſſary then,' ſaid the doctor, 'that there ſhould be one fool at leaſt in every mar-'ried couple. A mighty reſolution truly! and well

'worth your valuing yourſelf upon, to part with y
'wife for a few months, in order to make the
'tune of her and your children. When you are
'leave her too in the care and protection of a fri
'that gives credit to the old ſtories of friendſhip,
'doth an honour to human nature. What, in
'name of goodneſs, do either of you think that
'have made an union to endure for ever? How
'either of you bear that ſeparation which muſt ſo
'time or other, and perhaps very ſoon, be the lo
'one of you? Have you forgot that you are b
'mortal?——As for Chriſtianity, I ſee you have
'ſigned all pretenſions to it: for I make no dou
'but that you have ſo ſet your hearts on the happin
'you enjoy here together, that neither of you e
'think a word of hereafter.'

Amelia now burſt into tears; upon which Bo
begged the doctor to proceed no further. Indeed,
would not have wanted the caution: for, howe
blunt he appeared in his diſcourſe, he had a tendern
of heart which is rarely found among men; for whi
I know no other reaſon, than that true goodneſs
rarely found among them: for I am firmly perſuade
that the latter never poſſeſſed any human mind in a
degree, without being attended by as large a porti
of the former.

Thus ended the converſation on this ſubject; wh
followed is not worth relating till the doctor carri
off Booth with him to take a walk in the Park.

CHAP. V.

*A converſation between Amelia and doctor Harriſon, wi
the reſult.*

AMELIA being left alone, began to conſid
ſeriouſly of her condition; ſhe ſaw it would
very difficult to reſiſt the importunities of her huſban
backed by the authority of the doctor; eſpecially
ſhe well knew how unreaſonable her declaration m
appear to every one who was ignorant of her
motives to perſevere in it. On the other hand, ſhe

ermined, whatever might be the conſequence, e firmly to her reſolution of not accepting el's invitation.

ſhe had turned the matter every way in her nd vexed and tormented herſelf with much eflexion upon it, a thought at laſt occurred to ich immediately brought her ſome comfort. is, to make a confident of the doctor, and to o him the whole truth. This method, indeed, l to her now to be ſo adviſeable, that ſhe won- e had not hit upon it ſooner; but it is the f deſpair to blind us all to the means of ſafety, eaſy and apparent they may be.

ig fixed her purpoſe in her mind, ſhe wrote note to the doctor, in which ſhe acquainted t ſhe had ſomething of great moment to impart which muſt be an entire ſecret from her huſ- id begged that ſhe might have an opportunity unicating it as ſoon as poſſible.

r Harriſon received the letter that afternoon, nediately complied with Amelia's requeſt in her. He found her drinking tea with her huſ- id Mrs. Atkinſon, and ſat down and joined pany.

after the removal of the tea-table, Mrs. At- eft the room. The doctor then turning to ſaid, 'I hope, captain, you have a true ſenſe obedience due to the church, though our do not often exact it. However, it is proper rciſe our power ſometimes, in order to remind ty of their duty. I muſt tell you therefore, have ſome private buſineſs with your wife; expect your immediate abſence.'

on my word, doctor,' anſwered Booth, 'no confeſſor, I firmly believe, ever pronounced l and pleaſure with more gravity and dignity; herefore was ever more immediately obeyed ou ſhall be.' Booth then quitted the room, ed the doctor to recall him when his buſineſs lady was over.

r Harriſon promiſed he would, and then to *Amelia*, he ſaid, 'Thus far, madam, I

'have obeyed your commands, and am now ready t
'receive the important ſecret which you mention i
'your note.'

Amelia now informed her friend of all ſhe knew all ſhe had ſeen and heard, and all that ſhe ſuſpecte of the colonel. The good man ſeemed greatly ſhocke at the relation, and remained in a ſilent aſtoniſh ment. Upon which, Amelia ſaid, 'Is villany ſ 'rare a thing, ſir, that it ſhould ſo much ſurpri 'you?' 'No child,' cries he; 'but I am ſhocked 'ſeeing it ſo artfully diſguiſed under the appearanc 'of ſo much virtue. And to confeſs the truth, I b 'lieve my own vanity is a little hurt in having bee 'ſo groſsly impoſed upon. Indeed, I had a very hig 'regard for this man; for, beſides the great charact 'given him by your huſband, and the many facts 'have heard ſo much redounding to his honour, h 'hath the faireſt and moſt promiſing appearance 'have ever yet beheld—A good face, they ſay, is 'letter of recommendation. O nature, nature, wh 'art thou ſo diſhoneſt, as ever to ſend men with the 'falſe recommendations into the world!'

'Indeed, my dear ſir, I begin to grow entirely ſic 'of it,' cries Amelia: 'For ſure all mankind almo 'are villains in their hearts.'

'Fie, child,' cries the doctor. 'Do not make 'concluſion ſo much to the diſhonour of the gre 'Creator. The nature of man is far from being i 'itſelf evil: it abounds with benevolence, charit 'and pity, coveting praiſe and honour, and ſhunnin 'ſhame and diſgrace. Bad education, bad habits, a 'bad cuſtoms, debauch our nature, and drive it hea 'long as it were into vice. The governors of th 'world, and I am afraid the prieſthood, are anſwe 'able for the badneſs of it. Inſtead of diſcouragi 'wickedneſs to the utmoſt of their power, both a 'apt to connive at it. In the great ſin of adulte 'for inſtance; hath the government provided any h 'to puniſh it; or doth the prieſt take any care 'correct it? on the contrary, is the moſt notoric 'practice of it any detriment to a man's fortune, 'to his reputation in the world? doth it exclude h

any preferment in the ſtate, I had almoſt ſaid,
e church? is it any blot in his eſcutcheon?
bar to his honour? is he not to be found every
in the aſſemblies of women of the higheſt
ity? in the cloſets of the greateſt men, and
at the tables of biſhops? What wonder then,
e community in general treat this monſtrous
e as matter of jeſt, and that men give way to
emptations of a violent appetite, when the in-
ence of it is protected by law, and countenanced
uſtom? I am convinced there are good ſtamina
he nature of this very man: for he hath done
of friendſhip and generoſity to your huſband,
re he could have any evil deſign on your chaſtity;
in a chriſtian ſociety, which I no more eſteem
nation to be, than I do any part of Turky, I
ot not but this very colonel would have made a
hy and valuable member.'

ndeed, my dear ſir,' cries Amelia, 'you are the
ſt as well as beſt man in the world———'

ot a word of my wiſdom,' cries the doctor.
ve not a grain—I am not the leaſt verſed in the
ematiſtic * art, as an old friend of mine calls it.
ow not how to get a ſhilling, nor how to keep
my pocket, if I had it.'

ut you underſtand human nature to the bottom,'
red Amelia; 'and your mind is the treaſury of
ncient and modern learning.'

ou are a little flatterer,' cries the doctor; 'but
ſlike you not for it. And to ſhew you I don't,
ll return your flattery; and tell you, you have
d with great prudence in concealing this affair
your huſband; but you have drawn me into
rape; for I have promiſed to dine with this fel-
again to-morrow; and you have made it impoſ-
for me to keep my word.'

lay but, dear ſir,' cries Amelia, 'for Heaven's
, take care. If you ſhew any kind of diſreſpect
he colonel, my huſband may be led into ſome
icion—eſpecially after our conference.'

* he art of getting wealth is ſo called by Ariſtotle in his
.

'Fear nothing, child. I will give him no hint; 'and that I may be certain of not doing it, I will 'ſtay away. You do not think, I hope, that I will 'join in a chearful converſation with ſuch a man; 'that I will ſo far betray my character as to give any 'countenance to ſuch flagitious proceedings. Beſides, 'my promiſe was only conditional; and I do not 'know whether I could otherwiſe have kept it: for I 'expect an old friend every day, who comes to town 'twenty miles on foot to ſee me; whom I ſhall not 'part with on any account: for, as he is very poor, he 'may imagine I treat him with diſreſpect.'

'Well, ſir,' cries Amelia, 'I muſt admire you, 'and love you for your goodneſs.'

'Muſt you love me?' cries the doctor. 'I could 'cure you now in a minute, if I pleaſed.'

'Indeed, I defy you, ſir,' ſaid Amelia.

'If I could but perſuade you,' anſwered he, 'that 'I thought you not handſome, away would vaniſh all 'ideas of goodneſs in an inſtant. Confeſs honeſtly, 'would they not?'

'Perhaps I might blame the goodneſs of your 'eyes,' replied Amelia; 'and that is perhaps an 'honeſter confeſſion than you expected. But do, 'pray, ſir, be ſerious; and give me your advice what 'to do. Conſider the difficult game I have to play: 'for I am ſure, after what I have told you, you would 'not even ſuffer me to remain under the roof of this 'colonel.'

'No, indeed, would I not,' ſaid the doctor, 'whilſt 'I have a houſe of my own to entertain you.'

'But how to diſſuade my huſband,' continued ſhe, 'without giving him any ſuſpicion of the real cauſe, 'the conſequences of his gueſſing at which, I tremble 'to think upon.'

'I will conſult my pillow upon it,' ſaid the doctor, 'and in the morning you ſhall ſee me again. In the 'mean time be comforted, and compoſe the pertur-'bations of your mind.'

'Well, ſir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I put my whole truſt in 'you.'

'I am

'I am ſorry to hear it,' cries the doctor. 'Your 'innocence may give you a very confident truſt in 'a much more powerful aſſiſtance. However, I will 'do all I can to ſerve you; and now, if you pleaſe, 'we will call back your huſband: for, upon my word, 'he hath ſhewn a good catholic patience. And where 'is the honeſt ſerjeant and his wife? I am pleaſed 'with the behaviour of you both to that worthy fel-'low, in oppoſition to the cuſtom of the world; 'which, inſtead of being formed on the precepts of 'our religion, to conſider each other as brethren, 'teaches us to regard thoſe who are a degree below 'us, either in rank or fortune, as a ſpecies of be-'ings of an inferior order in the creation.'

The captain now returned into the room, as did the ſerjeant and Mrs Atkinſon; and the two couple, with the doctor, ſpent the evening together in great mirth and feſtivity; for the doctor was one of the beſt companions in the world; and a vein of chearfulneſs, good-humour and pleaſantry, ran through his converſation, with which it was impoſſible to reſiſt being pleaſed.

CHAP. VI.

Containing as ſurpriſing an accident as is perhaps recorded in hiſtory.

BOOTH had acquainted the ſerjeant with the great goodneſs of Colonel James, and with the chearful proſpects which he entertained from it. This Atkinſon behind the curtain communicated to his wife. The concluſions which ſhe drew from it, need ſcarce be hinted to the reader. She made, indeed, no ſcruple of plainly and bluntly telling her huſband that the colonel had a moſt manifeſt intention to attack the chaſtity of Amelia.

This thought gave the poor ſerjeant great uneaſineſs, and after having kept him long awake, tormented him in his ſleep with a moſt horrid dream, in which he imagined that he ſaw the colonel ſtanding by the bed-ſide of Amelia, with a naked ſword in his hand,

and threatening to ſtab her inſtantly, unleſs ſhe complied with his deſires. Upon this, the ſerjeant ſtarted up in his bed, and catching his wife by the throat, cried out, 'D—n you, put up your ſword this inſtant, 'and leave the room, or by Heaven I'll drive mine to 'your heart's blood.'

This rough treatment immediately rouſed Mrs. Atkinſon from her ſleep, who no ſooner perceived the poſition of her huſband, and felt his hand graſping her throat, than ſhe gave a violent ſhriek, and preſently fell into a fit.

Atkinſon now waked likewiſe, and ſoon became ſenſible of the violent agitations of his wife. He immediately leapt out of bed, and running for a bottle of water, began to ſprinkle her very plentifully; but all to no purpoſe, ſhe neither ſpoke, nor gave any ſymptoms of recovery. Atkinſon then began to roar aloud; upon which, Booth, who lay under him, jumpt from his bed, and ran up with the lighted candle in his hand. The ſerjeant had no ſooner taken the candle, than he ran with it to the bed-ſide. Here he beheld a ſight which almoſt deprived him of his ſenſes. The bed appeared to be all over blood; and his wife weltering in the midſt of it. Upon this, the ſerjeant, almoſt in a frenzy, cried out, 'O Heavens! 'I have killed my wife. I have ſtabbed her. I have 'ſtabbed her.'——'What can be the meaning of all 'this?' ſaid Booth.—'O ſir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'I 'dreamt I was reſcuing your lady from the hands of 'Colonel James, and I have killed my poor wife.—' Here he threw himſelf upon the bed by her, caught her in his arms, and behaved like one frantic with deſpair.

By this time, Amelia had throw on a wrapping gown, and was come up into the room, where the ſerjeant and his wife were lying on the bed, and Booth ſtanding like a motionleſs ſtatue by the bed-ſide. Amelia had ſome difficulty to conquer the effects of her own ſurpriſe on this occaſion; for a more ghaſtly and horrible ſight than the bed preſented, could not be conceived.

Amelia ſent Booth to call up the maid of the houſe, n order to lend her aſſiſtance; but, before his return, Mrs. Atkinſon began to come to herſelf; and ſoon ıfter, to the inexpreſſible joy of the ſerjeant, it was liſcovered ſhe had no wound. Indeed, the delicate noſe)f Amelia ſoon made that diſcovery, which the groſſer ſmell of the ſerjeant, and perhaps his fright, had prevented him from making: for now it appeared that the red liquor with which the bed was ſtained, though it may, perhaps, ſometimes run through the veins of a fine lady, was not what is properly called blood; but was, indeed, no other than cherry brandy, a bottle of which Mrs. Atkinſon always kept in her room to be ready for immediate uſe; and to which ſhe uſed to apply for comfort in all her afflictions. This the poor ſerjeant, in his extreme hurry, had miſtaken for a bottle of water. Matters were now ſoon accommodated; and no other miſchief appeared to be done, unleſs to the bed-cloaths. Amelia and Booth returned back to their room; and Mrs. Atkinſon roſe from her bed, in order to equip it with a pair of clean ſheets.

And thus this adventure would have ended without producing any kind of conſequence, had not the words, which the ſerjeant uttered in his frenzy, made ſome ſlight impreſſion on Booth: ſo much, at leaſt, as to awaken his curioſity; ſo that in the morning when he aroſe, he ſent for the ſerjeant, and deſired to hear the particulars of this dream, ſince Amelia was concerned in it.

The ſerjeant, at firſt, ſeemed unwilling to comply, and endeavoured to make excuſes. This, perhaps, encreaſed Booth's curioſity, and he ſaid, 'Nay, I am 'reſolved to hear it. Why, you ſimpleton, do you 'imagine me weak enough to be affected by a dream, 'however terrible it may be?'

'Nay, ſir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'as for that matter, 'dreams have ſometimes fallen out to be true.— 'One of my own, I know, did ſo, concerning your 'honour: for when you courted my young lady, I 'dreamt you was married to her; and yet it was 'at a time when neither I myſelf, nor any of the

'country, thought you would ever obtain h
'But, Heaven forbid this dream ſhould ever com
'paſs.'

'Why, what was this dream?' cries Booth.
'inſiſt on knowing.'

'To be ſure, ſir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'I muſt
'refuſe you; but, I hope, you will never think
'more of it. Why then, ſir, I dreamt that your
'nour was gone to the Weſt-Indies, and had
'my lady in the care of Colonel James; and
'night, I dreamt the colonel came to my lady's b
'ſide, offering to raviſh her; and with a drawn ſw
'in his hand, threatening to ſtab her that mom
'unleſs ſhe would comply with his deſires. Ho
'came to be by, I know not; but, I dreamt, I ruſ
'upon him, caught him by the throat, and ſwo
'would put him to death, unleſs he inſtantly left
'room.—Here I waked, and this was my dre
'I never paid any regard to a dream in my lif
'but, indeed, I never dreamt any thing ſo very pl
'as this. It appeared downright reality. I am ſt
'I have left the marks of my fingers in my wi
'throat. I would not have taken an hundred po
'to have uſed her ſo.'

'Faith,' cries Booth, 'it was an odd dream—
'not ſo eaſily to be accounted for, as that you
'formerly of my marriage; for as Shakeſpear ſa
'*Dreams denote a foregone concluſion.* Now it is
'poſſible you ſhould ever have thought of any ſ
'matter as this.'

'However, ſir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'it is in y
'honour's power to prevent any poſſibility of
'dream's coming to paſs, by not leaving my lad
'the care of the colonel: if you muſt go from h
'certainly there are other places where ſhe may
'with great ſafety; and ſince my wife tells me t
'my lady is ſo very unwilling, whatever reaſons
'may have, I hope your honour will oblige her.'

'Now I recollect it,' cries Booth, 'Mrs. Atkin
'hath once or twice dropt ſome diſreſpectful wo
'of the colonel. He hath done ſomething to diſob
'her.'

'He hath, indeed ſir,' replied the ſerjeant: 'He 'hath ſaid that of her which ſhe doth not deſerve, 'and for which, if he had been my ſuperior of- 'ficer, I would have cut both his ears off.—Nay, for 'that matter, he can ſpeak ill of other people beſides 'her.'

'Do you know, Atkinſon,' cries Booth, very gravely, 'that you are talking of the deareſt friend I 'have?'

'To be honeſt then,' anſwered the ſerjeant, 'I 'do not think ſo. If I did, I ſhould love him much 'better than I do.'

'I muſt and will have this explained,' cries Booth. 'I have too good an opinion of you, Atkinſon, to 'think you would drop ſuch things as you have, 'without ſome reaſon—and I will know it.'

'I am ſorry I have dropt a word,' cries Atkinſon. 'I am ſure, I did not intend it; and your honour 'hath drawn it from me unawares.'

'Indeed, Atkinſon,' cries Booth, 'you have made 'me very uneaſy, and I muſt be ſatisfied.'

'Then, ſir,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'you ſhall give me 'your word of honour; or I will be cut into ten 'thouſand pieces before I will mention another ſyl- 'lable.'

'What ſhall I promiſe?' ſaid Booth.

'That you will not reſent any thing I ſhall lay to 'the colonel,' anſwered Atkinſon.

'Reſent!—Well, I give you my honour,' ſaid Booth.

The ſerjeant made him bind himſelf over and over again; and then related to him the ſcene which formerly paſt between the colonel and himſelf, as far as concerned Booth himſelf; but concealed all that more immediately related to Amelia.

'Atkinſon,' cries Booth, 'I cannot be angry with 'you; for I know you love me, and I have many 'obligations to you; but you have done wrong in 'cenſuring the colonel for what he ſaid of me. I de- 'ſerve all that he ſaid; and his cenſures proceeded 'from his friendſhip.'

'me.—I love you, I adore you for it. Indeed, I 'could not forgive a ſlighting word on you.—But 'why do I compare things ſo unlike? what the colo- 'nel ſaid of me was juſt and true; every reflexion on 'my Amelia muſt be falſe and villainous.'

The diſcernment of Amelia was extremely quick; and ſhe now perceived what had happened, and how much her huſband knew of the truth. She reſolved therefore to humour him, and fell ſeverely on Colonel James for what he had ſaid to the ſerjeant, which Booth endeavoured all he could to ſoften; and thus ended this affair, which had brought Booth to the very brink of a diſcovery, which muſt have given him the higheſt torment, if it had not produced any of thoſe tragical effects which Amelia apprehended.

CHAP. VII.

In which the author appears to be maſter of that profound learning called The Knowledge of the Town.

MRS. James now came to pay a morning's viſit to Amelia. She entered the room with her uſual gaiety, and after a ſlight preface, addreſſing herſelf to Booth, ſaid, ſhe had been quarrelling with her huſband on his account. 'I know not,' ſaid ſhe, 'what he means by thinking of ſending you the lord 'knows whither. I have inſiſted on his aſking ſome- 'thing for you nearer home. And it would be the 'hardeſt thing in the world, if he ſhould not obtain 'it. Are we reſolved never to encourage merit; but 'to throw away all our preferments on thoſe who do 'not deſerve them? what a ſet of contemptible 'wretches do we ſee ſtrutting about the town in ſcar- 'let!'

Booth made a very low bow, and modeſtly ſpoke in diſparagement of himſelf. To which ſhe anſwered, 'Indeed, Mr. Booth, you have merit. I have 'heard it from my brother, who is a judge of thoſe 'matters; and I am ſure cannot be ſuſpected of flat- 'tery. He is your friend as well as myſelf; and we

'will

'will never let Mr. James reſt till he hath got you a 'commiſſion in England.'

Booth bowed again, and was offering to ſpeak, but ſhe interrupted him, ſaying, 'I will have no thanks, 'nor no fine ſpeeches. If I can do you any ſervice, I 'ſhall think I am only paying the debt of friendſhip 'to my dear Mrs. Booth.'

Amelia, who had long ſince forgot the diſlike ſhe had taken to Mrs. James at her firſt ſeeing her in town, had attributed it to the right cauſe, and had begun to reſume her former friendſhip for her, expreſſed very warm ſentiments of gratitude on this occaſion. She told Mrs. James, ſhe ſhould be eternally obliged to her if ſhe could ſucceed in her kind endeavours; for that the thoughts of parting again with her huſband had given her the utmoſt concern. 'Indeed,' added ſhe, 'I cannot help ſaying, he hath ſome merit in 'the ſervice: for he hath received two dreadful 'wounds in it, one of which very greatly endangered 'his life; and I am convinced, if his pretenſions were 'backed with any intereſt, he would not fail of ſuc-'ceſs.'

'They ſhall be backed with intereſt,' cries Mrs. James, 'if my huſband hath any. He hath no fa-'vour to aſk for himſelf, nor for any other friend 'that I know of; and indeed, to grant a man his juſt 'due, ought hardly to be thought a favour. Reſume 'your old gaiety, therefore, my dear Emily. Lord! 'I remember the time when you was much the gayer 'creature of the two. But you make an arrant mope 'of yourſelf, by confining yourſelf at home. One 'never meets you any where. Come, you ſhall go 'with me to the lady Betty Caſtleton's.'

'Indeed, you muſt excuſe me, my dear,' anſwered Amelia, 'I do not know Lady Betty.'

'Not know Lady Betty! how is that poſſible?— 'But no matter, I will introduce you—She keeps a 'morning rout; hardly a rout, indeed; a little bit 'of a drum—only four or five tables—Come, take 'your capuchine; you poſitively ſhall go—Booth, 'you ſhall go with us too. Though you are with your 'wife, another woman will keep you in countenance.'

'La!

'La! child,' cries Amelia, 'how you rattle!'

'I am in ſpirits,' anſwered Mrs. James, 'this 'morning: for I won four rubbers together laſt night; 'and betted the things, and won almoſt every bet. I 'am in luck, and we will contrive to be partners—'Come.'

'Nay, child, you ſhall not refuſe Mrs. James,' ſaid Booth.

'I have ſcarce ſeen my children to-day,' anſwered Amelia. 'Beſides, I mortally deteſt cards.'

'Deteſt cards!' cries Mrs. James. 'How can you 'be ſo ſtupid? I would not live a day without them—'Nay, indeed, I do not believe I ſhould be able to 'exiſt. Is there ſo delightful a ſight in the world, as 'the four honours in one's own hand, unleſs it be 'three natural aces at bragg—And you really hate 'cards!'

'Upon reflexion,' cries Amelia, 'I have ſome-'times had great pleaſure in them—in ſeeing my 'children build houſes with them. My little boy is 'ſo dexterous, that he will ſometimes build up the 'whole pack.'

'Indeed, Booth,' cries Mrs. James, 'this good 'woman of yours is ſtrangely altered ſince I knew her 'firſt; but ſhe will always be a good creature.'

'Upon my word, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you 'are altered too very greatly; but I doubt not to live 'to ſee you alter again, when you come to have as 'many children as I have.'

'Children!' cries Mrs. James, 'you make me 'ſhudder. How can you envy me the only circum-'ſtance which makes matrimony comfortable?'

'Indeed, my dear,' ſaid Amelia, 'you injure me: 'for I envy no woman's happineſs in marriage.' At theſe words, ſuch looks paſt between Booth and his wife, as, to a ſenſible by-ſtander, would have made all the airs of Mrs. James appear in the higheſt degree contemptible, and would have rendered herſelf the object of compaſſion. Nor could that lady avoid looking a little ſilly on the occaſion.

Amelia now, at the earneſt deſire of her huſband, accoutred herſelf to attend her friend; but firſt ſhe inſiſted

ſiſted on viſiting her children, to whom ſhe gave ſeveral hearty kiſſes, and then recommending them to the care of Mrs. Atkinſon, ſhe and her huſband accompanied Mrs. James to the rout; where few of my fine readers will be diſpleaſed to make part of the company.

The two ladies and Booth then entered an apartment beſet with card-tables, like the rooms at Bath and Tunbridge. Mrs. James immediately introduced her friends to Lady Betty; who received them very civilly, and preſently engaged Booth and Mrs. James in a party at whiſt; for, as to Amelia, ſhe ſo much declined playing, that, as the party could be filled without her, ſhe was permitted to ſit by.

And now, who ſhould make his appearance but the noble peer, of whom ſo much honourable mention hath already been made in this hiſtory. He walked directly up to Amelia, and addreſſed her with as perfect a confidence, as if he had not been in the leaſt conſcious of having in any manner diſpleaſed her; though the reader will hardly ſuppoſe that Mrs. Elliſon had kept any thing a ſecret from him.

Amelia was not, however, ſo forgetful. She made him a very diſtant curteſy, would ſcarce vouchſafe an anſwer to any thing he ſaid; and took the firſt opportunity of ſhifting her chair, and retiring from him.

Her behaviour, indeed, was ſuch, that the peer plainly perceived, that he ſhould get no advantage by purſuing her any farther at preſent. Inſtead, therefore, of attempting to follow her, he turned on his heel, and addreſſed his diſcourſe to another lady; though he could not avoid often caſting his eyes towards Amelia as long as ſhe remained in the room.

Fortune, which ſeems to have been generally no great friend to Mr. Booth, gave him no extraordinary marks of her favour at play. He loſt two full rubbers, which coſt him five guineas; after which Amelia, who was uneaſy at his lordſhip's preſence, begged him in a whiſper to return home; with which requeſt he directly complied.

Nothing, I think, remarkable happened to Booth, unleſs the renewal of his acquaintance with an officer

whom

whom he had known abroad, and who made one of his party at the whiſt-table.

The name of this gentleman, with whom the reader will hereafter be better acquainted, was Trent. He had formerly been in the ſame regiment with Booth, and there was ſome intimacy between them. Captain Trent expreſt great delight in meeting his brother officer, and both mutually promiſed to viſit each other.

The ſcenes which had paſt the preceding night and that morning had ſo confuſed Amelia's thoughts, that, in the hurry in which ſhe was carried off by Mrs. James, ſhe had entirely forgot her appointment with Dr. Harriſon. When ſhe was informed at her return home, that the doctor had been to wait upon her, and had expreſſed ſome anger at her being gone out, ſhe became greatly uneaſy, and begged of her huſband to go to the doctor's lodgings, and make her apology.

But leſt the reader ſhould be as angry with the doctor, as he had declared himſelf with Amelia, we think proper to explain the matter. Nothing then was farther from the doctor's mind than the conception of any anger towards Amelia. On the contrary, when the girl anſwered him, that her miſtreſs was not at home, the doctor ſaid with great good humour, 'How! not 'at home! then tell your miſtreſs ſhe is a giddy vaga-'bond, and I will come to ſee her no more till ſhe 'ſends for me.'—This the poor girl, from miſunderſtanding one word, and half forgetting the reſt, had conſtrued into great paſſion and ſeveral very bad words, and a declaration that he would never ſee Amelia any more.

CHAP. VIII.

In which two ſtrangers make their appearance.

BOOTH went to the doctor's lodgings, and found him engaged with his country friend and his ſon, a young gentleman who was lately in orders; both whom the doctor had left, to keep his appointment with Amelia.

After what we mentioned at the end of the laſt chapter,

chapter, we need take little notice of the apology made by Booth, or the doctor's reception of it, which was in his peculiar manner. 'Your wife,' ſaid he, 'is a vain huſſy to think herſelf worth my anger; but 'tell her, I have the vanity myſelf to think I cannot 'be angry without a better cauſe. And yet tell 'her, I intend to puniſh her for her levity: for if 'you go abroad, I have determined to take her down 'with me into the country, and make her do penance 'there till your return.'

'Dear ſir,' ſaid Booth, 'I know not how to thank 'you, if you are in earneſt.'

'I aſſure you then I am in earneſt,' cries the doctor; 'but you need not thank me, however, ſince you 'know not how.——'

'But would not that, ſir,' ſaid Booth, 'be ſhew-'ing a ſlight to the colonel's invitation? and you 'know I have ſo many obligations to him.'

'Don't tell me of the colonel,' cries the doctor; 'the 'church is to be firſt ſerved. Beſides, ſir, I have 'priority of right, even to you yourſelf. You ſtole 'my little lamb from me: for I was her firſt love.'

'Well, ſir,' cries Booth, 'if I ſhould be ſo un-'happy to leave her to any one, ſhe muſt herſelf de-'termine; and, I believe, it will not be difficult to 'gueſs where her choice will fall: for of all men, next 'to her huſband, I believe, none can contend with 'Dr. Harriſon in her favour.'

'Since you ſay ſo,' cries the doctor,—'fetch her 'hither to dine with us: for I am at leaſt ſo good a 'chriſtian to love thoſe that love me—I will ſhew you 'my daughter, my old friend; for I am really proud 'of her—and you may bring my grand-children with 'you, if you pleaſe.'

Booth made ſome compliments, and then went on his errand. As ſoon as he was gone, the old gentleman ſaid to the doctor, 'Pray, my good friend, what 'daughter is this of yours? I never ſo much as heard 'that you was married.'

'And what then,' cries the doctor, 'did you ever 'hear that a pope was married; and yet ſome of them 'have had ſons and daughters, I believe; but, how-

'ever,

'ever, this young gentleman will abſolve me witho
'obliging me to penance.'

'I have not yet that power,' anſwered the you
clergyman: 'For I am only in deacon's orders.'

'Are you not?' cries the doctor; 'why then,
'will abſolve myſelf. You are to know then, n
'good friend, that this young lady was the daught
'of a neighbour of mine, who is ſince dead, a
'whoſe ſins I hope are forgiven: for ſhe had too mu
'to anſwer for on her child's account. Her fath
'was my intimate acquaintance and friend; a wo
'thier man, indeed, I believe, never lived. He di
'ſuddenly when his children were infants; and, pe
'haps, to the ſuddenneſs of his death it was owin
'that he did not recommend any care of them to m
'However, I, in ſome meaſure, took that char
'upon me; and particularly of her whom I call n
'daughter. Indeed, as ſhe grew up, ſhe diſcover
'ſo many good qualities, that ſhe wanted not the r
'membrance of her father's merit to recommend he
'I do her no more than juſtice, when I ſay, ſhe is o
'of the beſt creatures I ever knew. She hath a ſwee
'neſs of temper, a generoſity of ſpirit, an openn
'of heart — in a word, ſhe hath a true chriſtian di
'poſition. I may call her an Iſraelite indeed,
'whom there is no guile.'

'I wiſh you joy of your daughter,' cries the o
gentleman: 'For to a man of your diſpoſition,
'find out an adequate object of your benevolence,
'I acknowledge, to find a treaſure.'

'It is, indeed, a happineſs,' cries the doctor.

'The greateſt difficulty,' added the gentlema
'which perſons of your turn of mind meet with, is
'finding proper objects of their goodneſs: for n
'thing ſure can be more irkſome to a generous min
'than to diſcover, that it hath thrown away all
'good offices on a ſoil that bears no other fruit th
'ingratitude.'

'I remember,' cries the doctor, 'Phocylid
'ſaith,

Μὴ κακὸν εὖ ἔρξῃς· σπείρειν ἴσον ἐς' ἐπὶ θάλῃ.*

'But he ſpeaks more like a philoſopher than a 'chriſtian. I am more pleaſed with a French writer, 'one of the beſt, indeed, that I ever read; who 'blames men for lamenting the ill return which is ſo 'often made to the beſt offices†. A true chriſtian 'can never be diſappointed, if he doth not receive his 'reward in this world: the labourer might as well 'complain, that he is not paid his hire in the middle 'of the day.'

'I own, indeed,' ſaid the gentleman, 'if we ſee it 'in that light——'

'And in what light ſhould we ſee it?' anſwered the doctor. 'Are we like Agrippa, only almoſt chriſti-'ans? or, is chriſtianity a matter of bare theory, and 'not a rule for our practice?'

'Practical undoubtedly, undoubtedly practical,' cries the gentleman. 'Your example might indeed 'have convinced me long ago, that we ought to do 'good to every one.'

'Pardon me, father,' cries the young diviñe, 'that 'is rather a heatheniſh than a chriſtian doctrine. Ho-'mer, I remember, introduces in his Iliad one Axy-'lus, of whom he ſays,

‡ Φίλος δ' ἦν ἀνθρώποισι·
Πάντας γὰρ φιλέεσκεν.

'But Plato, who of all the heathens came neareſt to 'the chriſtian philoſophy, condemned this as impi-'ous doctrine; ſo Euſtathius tells us, folio 474.

'I know he doth,' cries the doctor, 'and ſo Barnes 'tells us, in his note upon the place; but if you re-'member the reſt of the quotation, as well as you do 'that from Euſtathius, you might have added the ob-'ſervation which Mr. Dryden makes in favour of this

* To do a kindneſs to a bad man, is like ſowing your ſeed in the ſea. † D'Eſprit.

‡ He was a friend to mankind, for he loved them all.

'paſſage,

'passage, that he found not in all the Latin authors 'so admirable an instance of extensive humanity. You 'might have likewise remembered the noble senti-'ment, with which Mr. Barnes ends his note, the 'sense of which is taken from the fifth chapter of 'Matthew,

——ὃς καὶ φάος ἠελίοιο
Μίγδ' ἀγαθοῖσι κακοῖσί τ' ἐπ' ἀνδράσιν ἐξανατέλλει.

'It seems, therefore, as if this character rather be-'came a christian than a heathen: for Homer could 'not have transcribed it from any of his deities. 'Whom is it, therefore, we imitate by such extensive 'benevolence?'

'What a prodigious memory you have!' cries the old gentleman: 'Indeed, son, you must not contend 'with the doctor in these matters.'

'I shall not give my opinion hastily,' cries the son. 'I know again what Mr. Poole, in his Anno-'tations, says on that verse of St. Matthew—That it 'is only to *heap up coals of fire upon their heads*—How 'are we to understand, pray, the text immediately 'preceding? *Love your enemies, bless them that curse 'you, do good to them that hate you.*'

'You know, I suppose, young gentleman,' said the doctor, 'how these words are generally understood—'The commentator you mention, I think, tells us, 'that love is not here to be taken in the strict sense, so 'as to signify the complacency of the heart; you may 'hate your enemies as God's enemies, and seek due 'revenge of them for his honour; and for your own 'sakes too you may seek moderate satisfaction of 'them; but then, you are to love them with a love 'consistent with these things—that is to say, in plainer 'words, you are to love them and hate them, and 'bless and curse, and do them good and mischief.'

'Excellent! admirable!' said the old gentleman. 'You have a most inimitable turn to ridicule.'

'I do not approve ridicule,' said the son, 'on such 'subjects.'

'No

'Nor I neither,' cries the doctor, 'I will give you my opinion, therefore, very ſeriouſly. The two verſes taken together contain a very poſitive precept, delivered in the plaineſt words, and yet illuſtrated by the cleareſt inſtance, in the conduct of the Supreme Being; and laſtly, the practice of this precept is moſt nobly inforced by the reward annexed—*that ye may be the children*, and ſo forth. No man, who underſtands what it is to love, and to bleſs, and to do good, can miſtake the meaning. But if they required any comment, the ſcripture itſelf affords enow. *If thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirſt, give him drink; not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing, but contrariwiſe, bleſſing*—They do not, indeed, want the comments of men, who, when they cannot bend their minds to the obedience of ſcripture, are deſirous to wreſt ſcripture to a compliance with their own inclinations.'

'Moſt nobly and juſtly obſerved,' cries the old gentleman. 'Indeed, my good friend, you have explained the text with the utmoſt perſpicuity.'

'But if this be the meaning,' cries the ſon, 'there muſt be an end of all law and juſtice——for I do not ſee how any man can proſecute his enemy in a court of juſtice.'

'Pardon me ſir,' cries the doctor. 'Indeed, as an enemy merely, and from a ſpirit of revenge, he cannot, and he ought not to proſecute him; but as an offender againſt the laws of his country, he may, and it is his duty ſo to do: is there any ſpirit of revenge in the magiſtrates or officers of juſtice, when they puniſh criminals? Why do ſuch, ordinarily I mean, concern themſelves in inflicting puniſhments, but becauſe it is their duty? and why may not a private man deliver an offender into the hands of juſtice, from the ſame laudable motive? Revenge, indeed, of all kinds is ſtrictly prohibited; wherefore, as we are not to execute with our own hands, ſo neither are we to make uſe of the law as the inſtrument of private malice, and to worry each other with inveteracy and rancour. And where is the great difficulty in obeying this wiſe, this gene-

'rous, this noble precept? If revenge be, as a cer-
'tain divine, not greatly to his honour, calls it, the
'moſt luſcious morſel the devil ever dropt into the
'mouth of a ſinner, it muſt be allowed at leaſt to coſt
'us often extremely dear. It is a dainty, if indeed
'it be one, which we come at with great inquietude,
'with great difficulty, and with great danger. How-
'ever pleaſant it may be to the palate, while we are
'feeding on it, it is ſure to leave a bitter reliſh be-
'hind it; and ſo far, indeed, it may be called a luſ-
'cious morſel, that the moſt greedy appetites are ſoon
'glutted, and the moſt eager longing for it is ſoon
'turned into loathiug and repentance. I allow there
'is ſomething tempting in its outward appearance;
'but it is like the beautiful colour of ſome poiſons,
'from which, however they may attract our eyes, a
'regard to our own welfare commands us to abſtain.
'And this is an abſtinence to which wiſdom alone,
'without any divine command, hath been often found
'adequate; with inſtances of which, the Greek and
'Latin authors every where abound. May not a
'chriſtian, therefore, be well aſhamed of making a
'ſtumbling-block of a precept, which is not only con-
'ſiſtent with his worldly intereſt, but to which ſo
'noble an incentive is propoſed?'

The old gentleman fell into raptures at this ſpeech, and after making many compliments to the doctor upon it, he turned to his ſon, and told him, he had an opportunity now of learning more in one day, than he had learnt at the univerſity in a twelve-month.

The ſon replied, that he allowed the doctrine to be extremely good in general, and that he agreed with the greater part; 'but I muſt make a diſtinction,' ſaid he. However, he was interrupted from his diſtinction at preſent; for now Booth returned with Amelia and the children.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

A ſcene of modern wit and humour.

the afternoon, the old gentleman propoſed a alk to Vauxhall; a place of which, he ſaid, he heard much, but had never ſeen it.

he doctor readily agreed to his friend's propo- and ſoon after ordered two coaches to be ſent o carry the whole company. But when the ſervant gone for them, Booth acquainted the doctor that is yet too early. 'Is it ſo?' ſaid the doctor; ıy then, I will carry you firſt to one of the greateſt d higheſt entertainments in the world.'

he children pricked up their ears at this; nor did of the company gueſs what he meant; and Ame- ſked what entertainment he could carry them to at time of the day.

Suppoſe,' ſays the doctor, 'I ſhould carry you to urt?'

At five o'clock in the afternoon!' cries Booth.

Ay, ſuppoſe I ſhould have intereſt enough to in- ɔduce you into the preſence?'

You are jeſting, dear ſir,' cries Amelia.

Indeed, I am ſerious,' anſwered the doctor. 'I ll introduce you into that preſence, compared to ıom the greateſt emperor on the earth is many mil- ɔns of degrees meaner than the moſt contemptible ptile is to him. What entertainment can there be a rational being equal to this? was not the taſte mankind moſt wretchedly depraved, where would e vain man find an honour, or where would the ve of pleaſure propoſe ſo adequate an object as di- ne worſhip? with what ecſtaſy muſt the contem- ation of being admitted to ſuch a preſence fill the ind! The pitiful courts of princes are open to w, and to thoſe only at particular ſeaſons; but om this glorious and gracious preſence, we are ɔne of us, and at no time, excluded.'

'he doctor was proceeding thus, when the ſervant rned, ſaying, the coaches were ready; and the

whole company with the greateſt alacrity attended the doctor to St. James's church.

When the ſervice was ended, and they were again got into their coaches, Amelia returned the doctor many thanks for the light in which he had placed divine worſhip; aſſuring him, that ſhe had never before had ſo much tranſport in her devotion as at this time, and ſaying, ſhe believed ſhe ſhould be the better for this notion he had given her, as long as ſhe lived.

The coaches being come to the water ſide, they all alighted, and getting into one boat proceeded to Vauxhall.

The extreme beauty and elegance of this place is well known to almoſt every one of my readers: and happy is it for me that it is ſo; ſince, to give an adequate idea of it, would exceed my power of deſcription. To delineate the particular beauties of theſe gardens, would, indeed, require as much pains, and as much paper too, as to rehearſe all the good actions of their maſter; whoſe life proves the truth of an obſervation, which I have read in ſome ethic writer, that a truly elegant taſte is generally accompanied with an excellency of heart; or, in other words, that true virtue is, indeed, nothing elſe but true taſte.

Here our company diverted themſelves with walking an hour or two before the muſic began. Of all the ſeven, Booth alone had ever been here before; ſo that, to all the reſt, the place, with its other charms, had that of novelty. When the muſic played, Amelia, who ſtood next to the doctor, ſaid to him in a whiſper, 'I hope I am not guilty of profaneneſs; but, in purſuance of that cheerful chain of thoughts with which you have inſpired me this afternoon, I was juſt now loſt in a reverie, and fancied myſelf in thoſe bliſsful manſions which we hope to enjoy hereafter. The delicious ſweetneſs of the place, the enchanting charms of the muſic, and the ſatisfaction which appears in every one's countenance, carried my ſoul almoſt to heaven in its ideas. I could not have, indeed, imagined there had been any thing like this in this world.'

The

The doctor ſmiled, and ſaid, 'You ſee, dear madam, there may be pleaſures, of which you could conceive no idea, till you actually enjoyed them.'

And now the little boy, who had long withſtood the tractions of ſeveral cheeſe-cakes that paſſed to and ɔ, could contain no longer; but aſked his mother to ve him one, ſaying, 'I am ſure, my ſiſter would be glad of another, though ſhe is aſhamed to aſk.' The ɔctor, overhearing the child, propoſed that they ſhould l retire to ſome place where they might ſit down ıd refreſh themſelves, which they accordingly did. .melia now miſſed her huſband; but, as ſhe had three ıen in her company, and one of them was the doctor, ıe concluded herſelf and her children to be ſafe, and oubted not but that Booth would ſoon find her out.

They now ſat down, and the doctor very gallantly eſired Amelia to call for what ſhe liked. Upon hich the children were ſupplied with cakes; and ɔme ham and chicken were provided for the reſt of ıe company. With which, while they were regaling ıemſelves with the higheſt ſatisfaction, two young :llows walking arm in arm came up, and when they ame oppoſite to Amelia, ſtood ſtill, ſtaring Amea full in the face, and one of them cried aloud to the ther, 'D——n me, my Lord, if ſhe is not an angel!'—My Lord ſtood ſtill, ſtaring likewiſe at her, ıthout ſpeaking a word—when two others of the ıme gang came up—and one of them cried—'Come along, Jack, I have ſeen her before; but ſhe is too well manned already. Three ——— are enough for one woman, or the devil is in it.'

'D——n me,' ſays he that ſpoke firſt, and whom hey called Jack, 'I will have a bruſh at her, if ſhe belonged to the whole convocation.' And ſo ſayıg, he went up to the young clergyman, and cried ——'Doctor, ſit up a little, if you pleaſe, and don't take up more room in a bed than belongs to you.' At which words, he gave the young man a uſh, and ſeated himſelf down directly over againſt Amelia; and leaning both his elbows on the table, he xed his eyes on her in a manner with which modeſty an neither look, *nor bear* to be looked at.

48232A

Amelia ſeemed greatly ſhocked at this tre upon which the doctor removed her within h then facing the gentleman, aſked him what h by this rude behaviour———Upon which my l up, and ſaid, 'Don't be impertinent, old ger 'Do you think ſuch fellows as you, are to ke 'me, ſuch fine wenches, d—n me, to yo 'd—n me?'

'No, no,' cries Jack, 'the old gentleman 'reaſonable. Here's the fellow that eats up t 'pig. Don't you ſee how his mouth waters '———Where's your ſlabbering bib?' For the gentleman had rightly gueſſed he was a man; yet, he had not any of thoſe inſignia c which it would have been improper to have a there.

'Such boys as you,' cries the young cle 'ought to be well whipped at ſchool, inſtea 'ing ſuffered to become nuiſances in the ſociet

'Boys, ſir!' ſays Jack, 'I believe I am a 'man as yourſelf, Mr. ———, and as good a 'too. *Bos fur ſus quotque facerdos.*——— 'what's next. D—n me, I'll hold you fifty '——you don't tell me what's next.'

'You have him, Jack,' cries my Lord. 'I 'with him, d—n me. He can't ſtrike anothe

'If I had you in a proper place,' cries the man, 'you ſhould find I would ſtrike a blow 'pretty hard one too.'

'There,' cries my Lord, 'there is the mee 'the clergyman——There ſpoke the wolf in 'cloathing. D—n me, how big he look 'muſt be civil to him, faith! or elſe he will bi 'pride.'

'Ay, ay,' cries Jack, 'let the clergy a 'pride; there's not a Lord in the kingdom r 'half the pride of that fellow.'

'Pray, ſir,' cries the doctor, turning to th 'are you a Lord?'

'Yes, Mr. ———,' cries he, 'I have 'nour, indeed.'

'And I ſuppoſe you have pride too,' doctor.

'I hope I have, ſir,' anſwered he, 'at your ſervice.'
'If ſuch a one as you, ſir,' cries the doctor, 'who are not only a ſcandal to the title you bear as a Lord, but even as a man, can pretend to pride, why will you not allow it to a clergyman? I ſuppoſe, ſir, by your dreſs, you are in the army; and, by the ribbon in your hat, you ſeem to be proud of that too. How much greater and more honourable is the ſervice in which that gentleman is enliſted than your's! Why, then, ſhould you object to the pride of the clergy, ſince the loweſt of the function is in reality every way ſo much your ſuperior?'
'Tida Tidu Tidum,'—cries my Lord.
'However, gentlemen,' cries the doctor, 'if you have the leaſt pretenſion to that name, I beg you will put an end to your frolic; ſince you ſee it gives ſo much uneaſineſs to the lady. Nay, I entreat you, for your own ſakes; for here is one coming, who will talk to you in a very different ſtile from ours.'
'One coming!' cries my Lord—'what care I who is coming?'
'I ſuppoſe it is the devil,' cries Jack; 'for here are two of his livery ſervants already.'
'Let the devil come as ſoon as he will,' cries my ord, 'D—n me if I have not a kiſs.'
Amelia now fell a trembling; and her children, erceiving her fright, both hung on her, and began) cry—when Booth and Captain Trent both came p.
Booth, ſeeing his wife diſordered, aſked eagerly hat was the matter. At the ſame time, the Lord nd his companion ſeeing Captain Trent, whom they ell knew—ſaid both together,—'What! doth this company belong to you?' When the doctor, with reat preſence of mind, as he was apprehenſive of me fatal conſequence if Booth ſhould know what had aſt, ſaid, 'So, Mr. Booth, I am glad you are returned; your poor lady here began to be frighted out of her wits.' 'But now you have him again,' id he to Amelia, 'I hope you will be eaſy.'

Amelia, frighted as ſhe was, preſently took the hint, and greatly chid her huſband for leaving her. But the little boy was not ſo quick-ſighted, and cried—'Indeed, papa, thoſe naughty men there have frighted my mamma out of her wits.'

'How!' cries Booth, a little moved, 'Frightened! Hath any one frighten'd you, my dear?'

'No, my love,' anſwered ſhe, 'nothing. I know not what the child means. Every thing is well, now I ſee you ſafe.'

Trent had been all the while talking aſide with the young ſparks; and now addreſſing himſelf to Booth, ſaid, 'Here hath been ſome little miſtake; I believe my Lord miſtook Mrs. Booth for ſome other lady.'

'It is impoſſible,' cries my Lord, 'to know every one.—I am ſure, if I had known the lady to be a woman of faſhion, and an acquaintance of Captain Trent, I ſhould have ſaid nothing diſagreeable to her; but, if I have, I aſk her pardon, and the company's.'

'I am in the dark,' cries Booth. 'Pray, what is all this matter?'

'Nothing of any conſequence,' cries the doctor, 'nor worth your enquiring into——You hear it was a miſtake of the perſon; and I really believe his Lordſhip, that all proceeded from his not knowing to whom the lady belonged.'

'Come, come,' ſays Trent, 'there is nothing in the matter, I aſſure you. I will tell you the whole another time.'

'Very well, ſince you ſay ſo,' cries Booth, 'I am contented.' So ended the affair, and the two ſparks made their congee and ſneaked off.

'Now they are gone,' ſaid the young gentleman, 'I muſt ſay, I never ſaw two worſe bred jackanapes, nor fellows that deſerved to be kick'd more. If I had had them in another place, I would have taught them a little more reſpect to the church.'

'You took rather a better way,' anſwered the doctor, 'to teach them that reſpect.'

Booth now deſired his friend Trent to ſit down with them, and propoſed to call for a freſh bottle of wine; but

but Amelia's ſpirits were too much diſconcerted to give her any proſpect of pleaſure that evening. She therefore laid hold of the pretence of her children, for whom ſhe ſaid the hour was already too late; with which the doctor agreed. So they paid their reckoning, and departed; leaving to the two rakes the triumph of having totally diſſipated the mirth of this little innocent company, who were before enjoying complete ſatisfaction.

CHAP. X.

A curious converſation between the doctor, the young clergyman, and the young clergyman's father.

THE next morning, when the doctor and his two friends were at breakfaſt, the young clergyman, in whoſe mind the injurious treatment he had received the evening before was very deeply impreſſed, renewed the converſation on that ſubject. 'It is a 'ſcandal,' ſaid he, 'to the government, that they 'do not preſerve more reſpect to the clergy, by pu'niſhing all rudeneſs to them with the utmoſt ſeve'rity. It was very juſtly obſerved of you, ſir,' ſays he to the doctor, 'that the loweſt clergyman in England 'is in real dignity ſuperior to the higheſt nobleman. 'What then can be ſo ſhocking, as to ſee that gown, 'which ought to entitle us to the veneration of all we 'meet, treated with contempt and ridicule? Are 'we not, in fact, embaſſadors from heaven, to the 'world; and do they not, therefore, in denying us 'our due reſpect, deny it in reality to him that ſent 'us?'

'If that be the caſe,' ſays the doctor, 'it behoves 'them to look to themſelves; for he who ſent us, is 'able to exact moſt ſevere vengeance for the ill treat'ment of his miniſters.'

'Very true, ſir,' cries the young one; 'and I 'heartily hope he will: but thoſe puniſhments are at 'too great a diſtance to infuſe terror into wicked 'minds. The government ought to interfere with 'its immediate cenſures. Fines and impriſonments

'and corporal puniſhments operate more forcibly on 'the human mind, than all the fears of damnation.'

'Do you think ſo?' cries the doctor; 'then I am 'afraid men are very little in earneſt in thoſe fears.'

'Moſt juſtly obſerved,' ſays the old gentleman. 'In- 'deed, I am afraid that is too much the caſe.'

'In that,' ſaid the ſon, 'the government is to blame. 'Are not books of infidelity, treating our holy reli- 'gion as a mere impoſture; nay, ſometimes, as a 'mere jeſt, publiſhed daily, and ſpread abroad amongſt 'the people with perfect impunity?'

'You are certainly in the right,' ſays the doctor, 'there is a moſt blameable remiſſneſs with regard to 'theſe matters; but the whole blame doth not lie 'there; ſome little ſhare of the fault is, I am afraid, 'to be imputed to the clergy themſelves.'

'Indeed, ſir,' cries the young one, 'I did not ex- 'pect that charge from a gentleman of your cloth. 'Do the clergy give any encouragement to ſuch 'books? Do they not, on the contrary, cry loudly 'out againſt the ſuffering them? This is the invidious 'aſperſion of the laity; and I did not expect to hear 'it confirmed by one of our own cloth.'

'Be not too impatient, young gentleman,' ſaid the doctor, 'I do not abſolutely confirm the charge of 'the laity: it is much too general, and too ſevere; 'but even the laity themſelves do not attack them in 'that part to which you have applied your defence. 'They are not ſuppoſed ſuch fools as to attack that 'religion to which they owe their temporal welfare. 'They are not taxed with giving any other ſupport to 'infidelity, than what it draws from the ill examples 'of their lives; I mean of the lives of ſome of them. 'Here too the laity carry their cenſures too far: for 'there are very few or none of the clergy, whoſe lives, 'if compared with thoſe of the laity, can be called 'profligate: but ſuch, indeed, is the perfect purity 'of our religion; ſuch is the innocence and virtue, 'which it exacts to entitle us to its glorious rewards, 'and to ſcreen us from its dreadful puniſhments, that 'he muſt be a very good man indeed who lives up to 'it. *Thus* then theſe perſons argue. This man is

'educated

educated in a perfect knowledge of religion, is learned in its laws, and is by his profession obliged in a manner to have them always before his eyes. The rewards which it promises to the obedience of these laws are so great, and the punishments threatened on disobedience so dreadful, that it is impossible but all men must fearfully fly from the one, and as eagerly pursue the other. If therefore such a person lives in direct opposition to, and in a constant breach of these laws, the inference is obvious. There is a pleasant story in Matthew Paris, which I will tell you as well as I can remember it. Two young gentlemen, I think they were priests, agreed together, that, whosoever died first, should return and acquaint his friend with the secrets of the other world. One of them died soon after, and fulfilled his promise. The whole relation he gave is not very material; but, among other things, he produced one of his hands, which Satan had made use of, to write upon, as the moderns do on a card, and had sent his compliments to the priests, for the number of souls, which the wicked examples of their lives daily sent to hell. This story is the more remarkable, as it was written by a priest, and a great favourer of his order.'

'Excellent,' cried the old gentleman, 'what a memory you have!'

'But, sir,' cries the young one, 'a clergyman is a man as well as another; and, if such perfect purity be expected,'—

'I do not expect it,' cries the doctor; 'and I hope it wil not be expected of us. The scripture itself gives us this hope, where the best of us are said to fall twenty times a day. But sure we may not allow the practice of any of those grosser crimes which contaminate the whole mind. We may expect an obedience to the ten commandments, and an abstinence from such notorious vices; as, in the first place, Avarice, which indeed can hardly subsist without the breach of more commandments than one. Indeed, it would be excessive candour to imagine, that a man, who so visibly sets his whole heart not

'only on this world, but on one of the moſt worthleſs 'things in it (for ſo is money, without regard to its 'uſes), ſhould be at the ſame time laying up his trea-'ſure in heaven. Ambition is a ſecond vice of this 'ſort: We are told we cannot ſerve God and Mam-'mon. I might have applied this to Avarice; but I 'choſe rather to mention it here. When we ſee a man 'ſneaking about in courts and levees, and doing the 'dirty work of great men, from the hopes of prefer-'ment; can we believe, that a fellow, whom we ſee 'to have ſo many hard taſk-maſters upon earth, ever 'thinks of his maſter which is in heaven? Muſt he 'not think himſelf, if he ever reflects at all, that ſo 'glorious a maſter will diſdain and diſown a ſervant, 'who is the dutiful tool of a court-favourite; and 'employed either as the pimp of his pleaſure, or ſome-'times perhaps made a dirty channel, to aſſiſt in the 'conveyance of that corruption, which is clogging 'up and deſtroying the very vitals of his country?

'The laſt vice which I ſhall mention, is Pride. 'There is not in the univerſe a more ridiculous, nor 'a more contemptible animal, than a proud clergy-'man; a turkey-cock, or a jackdaw, are objects of 'veneration, when compared with him. I don't mean, 'by Pride, that noble dignity of mind to which good-'neſs can only adminiſter an adequate object, which 'delights in the teſtimony of its own conſcience, and 'could not, without the higheſt agonies, bear its con-'demnation. By Pride, I mean, that ſaucy paſſion, 'which exults in every little eventual pre-eminence 'over other men; ſuch are the ordinary gifts of na-'ture, and the paultry preſents of fortune, wit, know-'ledge, birth, ſtrength, beauty, riches, titles, and 'rank. That paſſion which is ever aſpiring, like a 'filly child, to look over the heads of all about them; 'which, while it ſervilely adheres to the great, flies 'from the poor, as if afraid of contamination; de-'vouring greedily every murmur of applauſe, and 'every look of admiration; pleaſed and elated with 'all kind of reſpect; and hurt and enflamed with the 'contempt of the loweſt and moſt deſpicable of fools 'even with ſuch as treated you laſt night diſreſpect-

fully.

'fully at Vauxhall. Can ſuch a mind as this be 'fixed on things above? Can ſuch a man reflect that 'he hath the ineffable honour to be employed in the 'immediate ſervice of his great Creator? or, can he 'pleaſe himſelf with the heart-warming hope, that his 'ways are acceptable in the ſight of that glorious, that 'incomprehenſible Being?'

'Hear, child, hear,' cries the old gentleman, 'hear and improve your underſtanding. Indeed, 'my good friend, no one retires from you without 'carrying away ſome good inſtructions with him. 'Learn of the doctor, Tom, and you will be the bet-'ter man as long as you live.'

'Undoubtedly, ſir,' anſwered Tom, 'the doctor 'hath ſpoken a great deal of excellent truth; and, 'without a compliment to him, I was always a great 'admirer of his ſermons, particularly of their oratory. 'But,

Nec tamen hæc tribuens dederim quoque cætera.

'I canot agree that a clergyman is obliged to put 'up with an affront any more than another man, 'and more eſpecially when it is paid to the order.'

'I am very ſorry, young gentleman,' cries the doctor, 'that you ſhould be ever liable to be affront-'ed as a clergyman; and, I do aſſure you, if I had 'known your diſpoſition formerly, the order ſhould 'never have been affronted through you.'

The old gentleman now began to check his ſon, for his oppoſition to the doctor; when a ſervant delivered the latter a note from Amelia, which he read immediately to himſelf, and it contained the following words:

'My dear ſir,

'SOmething hath happened ſince I ſaw you, which 'gives me great uneaſineſs, and I beg the favour 'of ſeeing you as ſoon as poſſible, to adviſe with you 'upon it.

'I am,

'Your moſt obliged

'and dutiful daughter,

'Amelia Booth.'

The doctor's anſwer was, that he would wait on the lady directly; and then turning to his friend, he aſked him if he would not take a walk in the Park before dinner. 'I muſt go,' ſays he, 'to the lady who 'was with us laſt night; for I am afraid, by her letter, ſome bad accident hath happened to her. Come, 'young gentleman, I ſpoke a little too haſtily to you 'juſt now; but I aſk your pardon. Some allowance 'muſt be made to the warmth of your blood. I hope, 'we ſhall in time both think alike.'

The old gentleman made his friend another compliment; and the young one declared, he hoped he ſhould always think, and act too, with the dignity becoming his cloth. After which, the doctor took his leave for a while, and went to Amelia's lodgings.

As ſoon as he was gone, the old gentleman fell very ſeverely on his ſon. 'Tom,' ſays he, how can you 'be ſuch a fool, to undo by your perverſeneſs all that 'I have been doing? Why will you not learn to 'ſtudy mankind with the attention which I have em'ployed to that purpoſe? Do you think, if I had af'fronted this obſtinate old fellow as you do, I ſhould 'ever have engaged his friendſhip?'

'I cannot help it, ſir,' ſaid Tom; 'I have not ſtu'died ſix years at the univerſity, to give up my ſen'timents to every one. It is true, indeed, he put to'gether a ſett of ſounding words; but, in the main, 'I never heard any one talk more fooliſhly.'

'What of that,' cries the father; 'I never told you 'he was a wiſe man, nor did I ever think him ſo. If 'he had any underſtanding, he would have been a

'biſhop

'biſhop long ago, to my certain knowledge. But, 'indeed, he hath been always a fool in private life; 'for I queſtion whether he is worth 100*l.* in the 'world, more than his annual income. He hath given 'away above half his fortune to the Lord knows who. 'I believe I have had above 200*l.* of him, firſt and 'laſt; and, would you loſe ſuch a milch-cow as this 'for want of a few compliments? Indeed, Tom, thou 'art as great a ſimpleton as himſelf. How do you 'expect to riſe in the church, if you cannot temporiſe, 'and give into the opinion of your ſuperiors?'

'I don't know, ſir,' cries Tom, 'what you mean 'by my ſuperiors. In one ſenſe, I own, a doctor of 'divinity is ſuperior to a batchelor of arts, and ſo far 'I am ready to allow his ſuperiority; but I under-'ſtand Greek and Hebrew as well as he, and will 'maintain my opinion againſt him, or any other in the 'ſchools.'

'Tom,' cries the old gentleman, 'till thou getteſt 'the better of thy conceit, I ſhall never have any 'hopes of thee. If thou art wiſe, thou wilt think 'every man thy ſuperior, of whom thou canſt get any 'thing; at leaſt, thou wilt perſuade him that thou 'thinkeſt ſo, and that is ſufficient. Tom, Tom, 'thou haſt no policy in thee.'

'What have I been learning theſe ſeven years,' anſwered he, 'in the univerſity? However, father, I 'can account for your opinion. It is the common 'failing of old men to attribute all wiſdom to them-'ſelves. Neſtor did it long ago; but, if you will en-'quire my character at college, I fancy you will not 'think I want to go to ſchool again.'

The father and ſon then went to take their walk, during which the former repeated many good leſſons of policy to his ſon, not greatly perhaps to his edification. In truth, if the old gentleman's fondneſs had not in a great meaſure blinded him to the imperfections of his ſon, he would have ſoon perceived that he was ſowing all his inſtructions in a ſoil ſo choaked with ſelf-conceit, that it was utterly impoſſible they ſhould ever bear any fruit.

AMELIA.

BOOK X.

CHAP. I.

To which we will prefix no preface.

THE doctor found Amelia alone, for Booth was gone to walk with his new-revived acquaintance, Captain Trent, who ſeemed ſo pleaſed with the renewal of his intercourſe with his old brother officer, that he had been almoſt continually with him from the time of their meeting at the drum.

Amelia acquainted the doctor with the purport of her meſſage, as follows: 'I aſk your pardon, my 'dear ſir, for troubling you ſo often with my affairs; 'but I know your extreme readineſs, as well as ability, 'to aſſiſt any one with your advice. The fact is, that 'my huſband hath been preſented by Colonel James 'with two tickets for a maſquerade, which is to be in 'a day or two; and he inſiſts ſo ſtrongly on my going 'with him, that I really do not know how to refuſe, 'without giving ſome reaſon; and I am not able 'to invent any other than the true one, which you 'would not, I am ſure, adviſe me to communicate to 'him. Indeed, I had a moſt narrow eſcape the other 'day; for I was almoſt drawn in inadvertently, by 'a very ſtrange accident, to acquaint him with the 'whole matter.' She then related the ſerjeant's dream, with all the conſequences that attended it.

The doctor conſidered a little with himſelf, and *then ſaid*, 'I am really, child, puzzled as well as

'you

you about this matter. I would by no means have you go to the maſquerade; I do not indeed like the diverſion itſelf, as I have heard it deſcribed to me: Not that I am ſuch a prude to ſuſpect every woman who goes there of any evil intentions; but it is a pleaſure of too looſe and diſorderly a kind for the recreation of a ſober mind. Indeed, you have a ſtill ſtronger and more particular objection. I will try myſelf to reaſon him out of it.'

'Indeed, it is impoſſible,' anſwered ſhe; 'and therefore I would not ſet you about it. I never ſaw him more ſet on any thing. There is a party, as they call it, made on the occaſion; and he tells me my refuſal will diſappoint all.'

'I really do not know what to adviſe you,' cries the doctor: 'I have told you I do not approve theſe diverſions; but yet, as your huſband is ſo very deſirous, I cannot think there will be any harm in going with him. However, I will conſider of it, and do all in my power for you.'

Here Mrs. Atkinſon came in, and the diſcourſe on this ſubject ceaſed; but ſoon after Amelia renewed it, ſaying, there was no occaſion to keep any thing a ſecret from her friend. They then fell to debating on the ſubject; but could not come to any reſolution. But Mrs. Atkinſon, who was in an unuſual flow of ſpirits, cried out, 'Fear nothing, my dear Amelia, two women ſurely will be too hard for one man. I think, doctor, it exceeds Virgil:

Una dolo divûm ſi fœmina victor duorum eſt.

'Very well repeated indeed,' cries the doctor. 'Do you underſtand all Virgil as well as you ſeem to do that line?'

'I hope I do, ſir,' ſaid ſhe, 'and Horace too; or elſe my father threw away his time to very little purpoſe in teaching me.'

'I aſk your pardon, madam,' cries the doctor. 'I own, it was an impertinent queſtion.'

'Not at all, ſir,' ſays ſhe; 'and, if you are one of thoſe who imagine women incapable of learning,

'I ſhall

'I ſhall not be offended at it. I know the common 'opinion; but

Interdum vulgus rectum videt, eſt ubi peccat.

'If I was to profeſs ſuch an opinion, madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'madam Dacier and yourſelf would 'bear teſtimony againſt me. The utmoſt indeed that 'I ſhould venture, would be to queſtion the utility 'of learning in a young lady's education.'

'I own,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'as the world is 'conſtituted, it cannot be as ſerviceable to her for-'tune, as it will be to that of a man; but you will 'allow, doctor, that learning may afford a woman 'at leaſt a reaſonable and an innocent entertain-'ment.'

'But I will ſuppoſe,' cried the doctor, 'it may 'have its inconveniences. As for inſtance, if a 'learned lady ſhould meet with an unlearned huſband, 'might ſhe not be apt to deſpiſe him?'

'I think not,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon——'and if I 'may be allowed the inſtance—I think I have ſhewn 'myſelf, that women who have learning themſelves, 'can be contented without that qualification in a 'man.'

'To be ſure,' cries the doctor, 'there may be 'other qualifications, which may have their weight 'in the balance. But let us take the other ſide of the 'queſtion, and ſuppoſe the learned of both ſexes to 'meet in the matrimonial union, may it not afford 'one excellent ſubject of diſputation, which is the 'moſt learned?'

'Not at all,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon; 'for, if they 'had both learning and good ſenſe, they would ſoon 'ſee on which ſide the ſuperiority lay.'

'But if the learned man,' ſaid the doctor, 'ſhould 'be a little unreaſonable in his opinion, are you 'ſure that the learned woman would preſerve her duty 'to her huſband, and ſubmit?'

'But why,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'muſt we neceſ-'ſarily ſuppoſe that a learned man would be unrea-'ſonable?'

'Nay,

'Nay, madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'I am not your 'huſband; and you ſhall not hinder me from ſup-'poſing what I pleaſe. Surely it is not ſuch a para-'dox, to conceive that a man of learning would be 'unreaſonable. Are there no unreaſonable opinions 'in very learned authors, even among the critics 'themſelves? For inſtance, what can be a more 'ſtrange, and indeed unreaſonable opinion, than to 'prefer the Metamorphoſes of Ovid to the Æneid of 'Virgil?'

'It would be indeed ſo ſtrange,' cries the lady, 'that you ſhall not perſuade me it was ever the opi-'nion of any man.'

'Perhaps not,' cries the doctor; 'and I believe 'you and I ſhould not differ in our judgments of any 'perſon who maintained ſuch an opinion—What a 'taſte muſt he have.'

'A moſt contemptible one indeed,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon.

'I am ſatisfied,' cries the doctor. 'And in the 'words of your own Horace, *Verbum non amplius ad-'dam.*'

'But how provoking is this!' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'to draw one in in ſuch a manner. I proteſt, I was 'ſo warm in the defence of my favourite Virgil, that 'I was not aware of your deſign; but all your triumph 'depends on a ſuppoſition that one ſhould be ſo un-'fortunate as to meet with the ſillieſt fellow in the 'world.'

'Not in the leaſt,' cries the doctor. 'Doctor Bent-'ley was not ſuch a perſon; and yet he would have 'quarrelled, I am convinced, with any wife in the 'world, in behalf of one of his corrections. I don't 'ſuppoſe he would have given up his *Ingentia Fata* to 'an angel.'

'But do you think,' ſaid ſhe, 'if I had loved him, 'I would have contended with him?'

'Perhaps you might ſometimes,' ſaid the doctor, 'be of theſe ſentiments; but you remember your own 'Virgil—*Varium et mutabile ſemper Fœmina.*'

'Nay, Amelia,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you are 'now concerned as well as I am; for he hath now

'abuſed

'abuſed the whole ſex, and quoted the ſevereſt thing 'that ever was ſaid againſt us, though I allow it is one 'of the fineſt.'

'With all my heart, my dear,' cries Amelia. I 'have the advantage of you however, for I don't 'underſtand him.'

'Nor doth ſhe underſtand much better than your-'ſelf,' cries the doctor, 'or ſhe would not admire 'nonſenſe even though in Virgil.'

'Pardon me, ſir,' ſaid ſhe.

'And pardon me, madam,' cries the doctor with a feigned ſerioufneſs, 'I ſay a boy in the fourth form 'at Eton would be whipt, or would deſerve to be 'whipt at leaſt, who made the Neuter Gender agree 'with the Feminine. You have heard, however, 'that Virgil left his Æneid incorrect; and, per-'haps, had he lived to correct it, we ſhould not 'have ſeen the faults we now ſee in it.

'Why, it is very true as you ſay, doctor,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon—'There ſeems to be a falſe concord. 'I proteſt, I never thought of it before.

'And yet this is the Virgil,' anſwered the doctor, 'that you are ſo fond of, who hath made you all of 'the Neuter Gender; or, as we ſay in Engliſh, he 'hath made mere animals of you: for, if we tranſlate 'it thus,

'Woman is a various and changeable animal,'

'there will be no fault, I believe, unleſs in point of 'civility to the ladies.'

Mrs. Atkinſon had juſt time to tell the doctor he was a provoking creature, before the arrival of Booth and his friend put an end to that learned diſcourſe, in which neither of the parties had greatly recommended themſelves to each other, the doctor's opinion of the lady being not at all heightened by her progreſs in the claſſics; and ſhe, on the other hand, having conceived a great diſlike in her heart towards the doctor, which would have raged, perhaps, with no leſs fury from the conſideration that he had been her huſband.

CHAP

CHAP. II.

What happened at the maſquerade.

ROM this time to the day of the maſquerade, nothing happened of conſequence enough to : a place in this hiſtory.

n that day colonel James came to Booth's about in the evening, where he ſtayed for Mrs. James, did not come till near eleven. The four maſques ſet out together in ſeveral chairs; and all pro-ed to the Hay-Market.

'hen they arrived at the Opera-Houſe, the colonel Mrs. James preſently left them; nor did Booth his lady remain long together, but were ſoon di-d from each other by different maſques.

domino ſoon accoſted the lady, and had her away he upper end of the furtheſt room on the right l, where both the maſques ſat down: nor was it before the he domino began to make very fervent to the ſhe. It would, perhaps, be tedious to the er to run through the whole proceſs, which was indeed in the moſt romantick ſtile. The lover ued to conſider his miſtreſs as a mere woman of this d, and ſeemed rather to apply to her avarice and ition, than to her ſofter paſſions.

s he was not ſo careful to conceal his true voice ie lady was, ſhe ſoon diſcovered that this lover of was no other than her old friend the peer, and ently a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to her of making dvantage of this accident. She gave him therefore ntimation that ſhe knew him, and expreſſed ſome iiſhment at his having found her out. 'I ſuſ-ct, ſays ſhe, my lord, that you have a friend in e woman where I now lodge, as well as you had Mrs. Elliſon.' My lord proteſted the contrary —To which ſhe anſwered, 'Nay, my lord, do ot defend her ſo earneſtly, till you are ſure I ſhould ve been angry with her.'

.t theſe words, which were accompanied with a ' bewitching ſoftneſs, my lord flew into raptures

rather

rather too ſtrong for the place he was in. Theſe the lady gently checked, and begged him to take care they were not obſerved; for that her huſband, for aught ſhe knew, was then in the room.

Colonel James came now up, and ſaid, 'So, ma-'dam, I have the good fortune to find you again; I 'have been extremely miſerable ſince I loſt you.' The lady anſwered in her maſquerade voice, that ſhe did not know him. 'I am colonel James,' ſaid he, in a whiſper. 'Indeed, ſir,' anſwered ſhe, you are miſ-'taken, I have no acquaintance with any colonel 'James.' 'Madam,' anſwered he, in a whiſper likewiſe, 'I am poſitive I am not miſtaken, you are cer-'tainly Mrs. Booth.'—'Indeed, ſir,' ſaid ſhe, 'you 'are very impertinent, and I beg you will leave me.' My lord then interpoſed, and ſpeaking in his own voice, aſſured the colonel that the lady was a woman of quality, and that they were engaged in a converſation together; upon which, the colonel aſked the lady's pardon; for as there was nothing remarkable in her dreſs, he really believed he had been miſtaken.

He then went again a hunting through the rooms, and ſoon after found Booth walking without his maſk between two ladies, one of whom was in a blue domino, and the other in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs. 'Will,' cries the colonel, 'do you know what is 'become of our wives; for I have ſeen neither of 'them ſince we have been in the room? Booth anſ-'wered, that he ſuppoſed they were both together, 'and they ſhould find them both by and by.' 'What,' cries the lady in the blue domino, 'are you both 'come upon duty then with your wives? as for your's, 'Mr. Alderman, ſaid ſhe to the colonel, I make no 'queſtion but ſhe is got into much better company 'than her huſband's. 'How can you be ſo cruel, 'madam, ſaid the ſhepherdeſs, you will make him 'beat his wife by and by, for he's a military man I 'aſſure you.' 'In the trained bands, I preſume,' cries the domino, 'for he is plainly dated from the city.' '———I own, indeed, cries the other, the gentleman 'ſmells ſtrongly of Thames-ſtreet, and, if I may

'venture

venture to gueſs, of the honourable calling of a taylor.'

'Why, what the devil haſt thou picked up here?' cries James.

'Upon my ſoul, I don't know,' anſwered Booth; I wiſh you would take one of them at leaſt.'

'What ſay you, madam,' cries the domino, 'will you go with the colonel? I aſſure you, you have miſtaken your man, for he is no leſs a perſon than the great Colonel James himſelf.'

'No wonder, then, that Mr. Booth gives him his choice of us; it is the proper office of a caterer, in which capacity Mr. Booth hath, I am told, the honour to ſerve the noble colonel.'

'Much good may it do you with your ladies,' ſaid James, 'I will go in purſuit of better game. At which words he walked off.'

'You are a true ſportſman,' cries the ſhepherdeſs; 'for your only pleaſure, I believe, lies in the purſuit.'

'Do you know the gentleman, madam?' cries the domino.

'Who doth not know him?' anſwered the ſhepherdeſs.

'What is his character?' cries the domino; 'for, though I have jeſted with him, I only know him by ſight.'

'I know nothing very particular in his character,' cries the ſhepherdeſs. 'He gets every handſome woman he can, and ſo they do all.'

'I ſuppoſe then he is not married,' ſaid the domino.

'O yes, and married for love too,' anſwered the other; 'but he hath loved away all his love for her long ago, and now, he ſays, ſhe makes as fine an object of hatred.—I think, if the fellow ever appears to have any wit, it is when he abuſes his wife, and, luckily for him, that is his favourite topic.———I don't know the poor wretch, but as he deſcribes her, it is a miſerable animal.'

'I know her very well,' cries the other, 'and I am much miſtaken if ſhe is not even with him: but hang him, what is become of Booth?'

At this inſtant a great noiſe aroſe near that part where the two ladies were. This was occaſioned by a large aſſembly of young fellows, whom they call bucks, who were got together, and were enjoying, as the phraſe is, a letter, which one of them had found in the room.

Curioſity had its votaries among all ranks of people; whenever therefore an object of this appears, it is as ſure of attracting a croud in the aſſemblies of the polite, as in thoſe of their inferiors.

When this croud was gathered together, one of the bucks, at the deſire of his companions, as well as of all preſent, performed the part of a public orator, and read out the following letter, which we ſhall give the reader, together with the comments of the orator himſelf, and of all his audience.

The orator then, being mounted on a bench, began as follows:

'Here beginneth the third chapter of——ſaint '—Pox on't, Jack, what is the ſaint's name? I have 'forgot.'

'Timothy, you blockhead,' anſwered another—— 'Timothy.'

'Well, then,' cries the orator, 'of Saint Timo-'thy.

'Sir, I am very ſorry to have any occaſion of 'writing on the following ſubject, in a country that 'is honoured with the name of chriſtian; much 'more am I concerned to addreſs myſelf to a man 'whoſe many advantages, derived both from nature 'and fortune, ſhould demand the higheſt return of 'gratitude to the great giver of all thoſe good things. 'Is not ſuch a man guilty of the higheſt ingratitude 'to that moſt beneficent being, by a direct and a-'vowed diſobedience of his moſt poſitive laws and 'commands?

'I need not tell you that adultery is forbid in the 'laws of the decalogue, nor need I, I hope, men-'tion that it is as expreſly forbid in the New Teſta-'ment.

"You ſee therefore," ſaid the orator, "what "*the law is*, and therefore none of you will be-

"able

able to plead ignorance, when you come to the Old Baily in the other world.—But here goes again.———

'If it had not been ſo expreſly forbidden in ſcripture, ſtill the law of nature would have yielded light enough for us to have diſcovered the great horror and atrociouſneſs of this crime.

'And accordingly we find, that nations where the ſun of righteouſneſs hath yet never ſhined, have puniſhed the adulterer with the moſt exemplary pains and penalties; not only the polite heathens, but the moſt barbarous nations have concurred in theſe; in many places, the moſt ſevere and ſhameful corporal puniſhments, and in ſome, and thoſe not a few, Death itſelf hath been inflicted on this crime.

'And ſure in a human ſenſe there is ſcarce any guilt which deſerves to be more ſeverely puniſhed. It includes in it almoſt every injury and every miſchief which one man can do to, or can bring on another. It is robbing him of his property.

"Mind that, ladies," ſaid the orator, "you are all the property of your huſbands;" 'and of that property, which, if he is a good man, he values above all others. It is poiſoning that fountain whence he hath a right to derive the ſweeteſt and moſt innocent pleaſure, the moſt cordial comfort, the moſt ſolid friendſhip, and moſt faithful aſſiſtance in all his affairs, wants, and diſtreſſes. It is the deſtruction of his peace of mind, and even of his reputation. The ruin of both wife and huſband, and ſometimes of the whole family, are the probable conſequence of this fatal injury. Domeſtic happineſs is the end of almoſt all our purſuits, and the common reward of all our pains. When men find themſelves for ever barred from this delightful fruition, they are loſt to all induſtry, and grow careleſs of all their worldly affairs. Thus they become bad ſubjects, bad relations, bad friends, and bad men. Hatred and revenge are the wretched paſſions which boil in their minds. Deſpair and madneſs very commonly enſue, and murder and ſuicide often cloſe the dreadful ſcene.

"Thus

" Thus, gentlemen, and ladies, you ſee the ſcen
" is cloſed. So here ends the firſt act—and thu
" begins the ſecond.

' I have here attempted to lay before you a pictur
' of this vice, the horror of which no colours of min
' can exaggerate. But what pencil can delineate th
' horrors of that puniſhment which the ſcripture de
' nounces againſt it!

' And for what will you ſubject yourſelf to th
' puniſhment? or for what reward will you inflict a
' this miſery on another? I will add, on your friend
' for the poſſeſſion of a woman; for the pleaſure of
' moment? But if neither virtue nor religion can re
' ſtrain your inordinate appetites, are there not man
' women as handſome as your friend's wife, whom
' though not with innocence, you may poſſeſs with
' much leſs degree of guilt? What motive then ca
' thus hurry you on to the deſtruction of yourſelf an
' your friend? doth the peculiar rankneſs of th
' guilt add any zeſt to the ſin? doth it enhance th
' pleaſure as much as we may be aſſured it will th
' puniſhment?

' But if you can be ſo loſt to all ſenſe of fear, an
' of ſhame, and of goodneſs, as not to be debarre
' by the evil which you are to bring on yourſelf, b
' the extreme baſeneſs of the action, nor by the ruin
' in which you are to involve others, let me ſtill urg
' the difficulty, I may ſay the impoſſibility, of the ſuc
' ceſs. You are attacking a fortreſs on a rock;
' chaſtity ſo ſtrongly defended, as well by a happ
' natural diſpoſition of mind as by the ſtrongeſt prin
' ciples of religion and virtue, implanted by educa
' tion, and nouriſhed and improved by habit, tha
' the woman muſt be invincible even without the
' firm and conſtant affection of her huſband, whic
' would guard a much looſer and worſe-diſpoſed hear
' What therefore are you attempting but to intro
' duce diſtruſt, and perhaps diſunion, between an in
' nocent and a happy couple, in which too you can
' not ſucceed without bringing, I am convinced, cer
' tain deſtruction on your own head?

' Deſir

Deſiſt, therefore, let me adviſe you, from this ormous crime; retreat from the vain attempt of imbing a precipice, which it is impoſſible you ould ever aſcend, where you muſt probably ſoon ll into utter perdition, and can have no other ope but of dragging down your beſt friend into erdition with you.

I can think of but one argument more, and that, ideed, a very bad one. you throw away that time an impoſſible attempt, which might, in other laces, crown your ſinful endeavours with ſucceſs.

'And ſo ends the diſmal ditty."

D—n me,' cries one, 'did ever mortal hear ſuch —n'd ſtuff?'

Upon my ſoul,' ſaid another, 'I like the laſt argument well enough. There is ſome ſenſe in that: or d—n me if I had not rather go to D—g—ſs t any time, than to follow a virtuous b—— for a ortnight.'

Tom,' ſays one of them, 'let us ſet the ditty to nuſick; let us ſubſcribe to have it ſet by Handel; t will make an excellent oratorio.'

D—n me, Jack,' ſays another, 'we'll have it et to a pſalm tune, and we'll ſing it next Sunay at St. James's church, and I'll bear a bob, —n me.'

Fie upon it, gentlemen, fie upon it,' ſaid a frier o came up, 'do you think there is any wit and umour in this ribaldry; or, if there were, would t make any atonement for abuſing religion and virue?'

Hey day!' cries one, 'this is a frier in good arneſt.'

Whatever I am,' ſaid the frier, 'I hope at leaſt, ou are not what you appear to be. Heaven forbid, or the ſake of our poſterity, that you ſhould be entlemen.'

Jack,' cries one, 'let us toſs the frier in a blanket.'

Me in a blanket!' ſaid the frier, 'by the dignity f man, I will twiſt the neck of every one of you as ure as ever the neck of a dunghil-cock was twiſted.'

At which words he pulled off his maſque, and the tremendous majeſty of colonel Bath appeared, from which the bucks fled away as faſt as the Trojans heretofore from the face of Achilles. The colonel did not think it worth while to purſue any other of them except him who had the letter in his hand, which the colonel deſired to ſee, and the other delivered, ſaying it was very much at his ſervice.

The colonel, being poſſeſſed of the letter, retired as privately as he could, in order to give it a careful peruſal; for badly as it had been read by the orator, there were ſome paſſages in it which had pleaſed the colonel. He had juſt gone through it, when Booth paſſed by him; upon which, the colonel called to him, and delivering him the letter, bid him put it in his pocket, and read it at his leiſure. He made many encomiums upon it, and told Booth it would be of ſervice to him, and was proper for all young men to read.

Booth had not yet ſeen his wife; but as he concluded ſhe was ſafe with Mrs. James, he was not uneaſy. He had been prevented in ſearching farther after her, by the lady of the blue domino, who had joined him again. Booth had now made theſe diſcoveries; that the lady was pretty well acquainted with him; that ſhe was a woman of faſhion; and that ſhe had a particular regard for him. But though he was a gay man, he was in reality ſo fond of his Amelia, that he thought of no other woman; wherefore, though not abſolutely a Joſeph, as we have already ſeen, yet could he not be guilty of premeditated inconſtancy. He was indeed ſo very cold and inſenſible to the hints which were given him, that the lady began to complain of his dulneſs. When the ſhepherdeſs again came up, and heard this accuſation againſt him, ſhe confirmed it, ſaying: 'I do aſſure 'you, madam, he is the dulleſt fellow in the world. 'Indeed, I ſhould almoſt take you for his wife, by 'finding you a ſecond time with him; for I do aſſure 'you the gentleman very ſeldom keeps any other 'company.' 'Are you ſo well acquainted with him, 'madam?' ſaid the domino. 'I have had that ho-

'nour

our longer than your ladyſhip, I believe,' anſwered ſhepherdeſs. 'Poſſibly you may, madam,' cries domino, 'but I wiſh you would not interrupt us t preſent; for we have ſome buſineſs together.' believe, madam,' anſwered the ſhepherdeſs, 'my uſineſs with the gentleman is altogether as impor-nt as yours; and therefore your ladyſhip may ithdraw if you pleaſe.'—'My dear ladies,' cries th, 'I beg you will not quarrel about me.'—Not at all,' anſwered the domino, 'ſince you are ſo ndifferent, I reſign my pretenſions with all my eart. If you had not been the dulleſt fellow upon arth, I am convinced you muſt have diſcovered ne.'—She then went off muttering to herſelf, that was ſatisfied the ſhepherdeſs was ſome wretched ature whom nobody knew.

The ſhepherdeſs overheard the ſarcaſm, and anſ-red it, by aſking Booth what contemptible wretch had picked up. 'Indeed, madam,' ſaid he, 'you now as much of her as I do; ſhe is a maſquerade cquaintance like yourſelf.' 'Like me!' repeated ſhe. Do you think if this had been our firſt acquaintance, ſhould have waſted ſo much time with you as I ave? for your part, indeed, I believe a woman will et very little advantage by her having been for-nerly intimate with you.' 'I do not know, ma-am,' ſaid Booth, 'that I deſerve that character, ny more than I know the perſon that now gives it ne.' 'And you have the aſſurance then,' ſaid ſhe her own voice, 'to affect not to remember me. think,' cries Booth, 'I have heard that voice efore; but, upon my ſoul, I do not recollect it.' Do you recollect,' ſaid ſhe, 'no woman that you ave uſed with the higheſt barbarity? I will ot ſay ingratitude.' 'No, upon my honour,' an-red Booth. 'Mention not honour,' ſaid ſhe, hou wretch: for hardened as thou art, I could iew thee a face, that, in ſpite of thy conſummate npudence, would confound thee with ſhame and orrour. Do'ſt thou not yet know me?' 'I do, adam, indeed,' anſwered Booth; 'and I confeſs,

'that of all women in the world you have the moſt 'reaſon for what you ſaic.'

Here a long dialogue enſued between the gentleman and the lady, whom, I ſuppoſe, I need not mention to have been Miſs Matthews; but as it conſiſted chiefly of violent upbraidings on her ſide, and excuſes on his, I deſpair of making it entertaining to the reader; and ſhall therefore return to the colonel, who having ſearched all the rooms with the utmoſt diligence, without finding the woman he looked for, began to ſuſpect that he had before fixed on the right perſon, and that Amelia had denied herſelf to him, being pleaſed with her paramour, whom he had diſcovered to be the noble peer.

He reſolved therefore, as he could have no ſport himſelf, to ſpoil that of others; accordingly he found out Booth, and aſked him again what was become of both their wives; for that he had ſearched all over the rooms, and could find neither of them?

Booth was now a little alarmed at this account, and parting with Miſs Matthews, went along with the colonel in ſearch of his wife. As for Miſs Matthews, he had at length pacified her with a promiſe to make her a viſit; which promiſe ſhe extorted from him, ſwearing bitterly in the moſt ſolemn manner, unleſs he made it to her, ſhe would expoſe both him and herſelf at the maſquerade.

As he knew the violence of the lady's paſſions, and to what heights they were capable of riſing, he was obliged to come into theſe terms; for he had, I am convinced, no fear upon earth equal to that of Amelia's knowing what it was in the power of Miſs Matthews to communicate to her, and which to conceal from her, he had already undergone ſo much uneaſineſs.

The colonel led Booth to the place where he had ſeen the peer and Amelia (ſuch he was now well convinced ſhe was) ſitting together. Booth no ſooner ſaw her, than he ſaid to the colonel, 'Sure that is my wife 'in converſation with that maſque'—'I took her for 'your lady myſelf,' ſaid the colonel; 'but I found I 'was miſtaken.—(Hark ye, that is my lord ——, and 'I have ſeen that very lady with him all this night.)'

The

This converſation paſt at a little diſtance, and out of the hearing of the ſuppoſed Amelia; when Booth looking ſtedfaſtly at the lady, declared with an oath, that he was poſitive the colonel was in the right. She then beckoned to him with her fan; upon which, he went directly to her; and ſhe aſked him to go home, which he very readily conſented to. The peer then walked off; the colonel went in purſuit of his wife, or of ſome other woman; and Booth and his lady returned in two chairs to their lodgings.

CHAP. III.

Conſequences of the maſquerade, not uncommon nor ſurpriſing.

THE lady getting firſt out of her chair, ran haſtily up into the nurſery to the children; for ſuch was Amelia's conſtant method at her return home, at whatever hour. Booth then walked into the dining-room, where he had not been long before Amelia came down to him, and with a moſt chearful countenance, ſaid, 'My dear, I fancy we have neither of us ſupped; 'ſhall I go down and ſee whether there is any cold 'meat in the houſe?'

'For yourſelf, if you pleaſe,' anſwered Booth; 'but 'I ſhall eat nothing.'

'How, my dear,' ſaid Amelia, 'I hope you have 'not loſt your appetite at the maſquerade?' For ſupper was a meal at which he generally eat very heartily.

'I know not well what I have loſt,' ſaid Booth; I 'find myſelf diſordered. My head aches. I know 'not what is the matter with me.'

'Indeed, my dear, you frighten me,' ſaid Amelia; 'you look indeed diſordered. I wiſh the maſquerade 'had been far enough, before you had gone thither.'

'Would to Heaven it had,' cries Booth; 'but that 'is over now. But pray, Amelia, anſwer me one 'queſtion, who was that gentleman with you, when 'I came up to you?'

'The gentleman, my dear?' ſaid Amelia, 'what 'gentleman?'

'The gentleman, the nobleman, when I came up; 'ſure I ſpeak plain.'

'Upon my word, my dear, I don't underſtand you.' anſwered ſhe; 'I did not know one perſon at the 'maſquerade.'

'How!' ſaid he, 'what, ſpend the whole evening 'with a maſque without knowing him?'

'Why, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'you know we were not 'together.'

'I know we were not,' ſaid he; 'but what is that 'to the purpoſe? ſure you anſwer me ſtrangely. I 'know we were not together; and therefore I aſk you 'whom you were with?'

'Nay, but, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'can I tell people 'in maſques?'

'I ſay again, madam,' ſaid he, 'would you con-'verſe two hours or more with a maſque whom you 'did not know?'

'Indeed, child,' ſays ſhe, 'I know nothing of the 'methods of a maſquerade; for I never was at one in 'my life.'

'I wiſh to Heaven you had not been at this,' cries Booth. 'Nay, you will wiſh ſo yourſelf, if you tell 'me truth.—What have I ſaid? do I, can I, ſuſpect 'you of not ſpeaking truth?—Since you are ignorant 'then I will inform you, the man you have converſed 'with was no other than lord ——.'

'And is that the reaſon,' ſaid ſhe, 'you wiſh I 'had not been there?'

'And is not that reaſon,' anſwered he, 'ſuffici-'ent? Is he not the laſt man upon earth with whom I 'would have you converſe?'

'So you really wiſh then that I had not been at the 'maſquerade?'

'I do,' cried he, 'from my ſoul.'

'So may I ever be able,' cried ſhe, 'to indulge you 'in every wiſh as in this.—I was not there.'

'Do not trifle, Amelia,' cried he; 'you would not 'jeſt with me, if you knew the ſituation of my mind.'

'Indeed, I do not jeſt with you,' ſaid ſhe. 'Upon 'my honour, I was not there. Forgive me this firſt 'deceit I ever practiſed, and, indeed, it ſhall be the

'laſt

laſt; for I have paid ſeverely for this by the uneaſineſs it hath given me.' She then revealed to him the whole ſecret, which was thus:

I think it hath been already mentioned in ſome part of this hiſtory, that Amelia and Mrs. Atkinſon were exactly of the ſame make and ſtature, and that there was likewiſe a very near reſemblance between their voices. When Mrs. Atkinſon, therefore, found that Amelia was ſo extremely averſe to the maſquerade, ſhe propoſed to go thither in her ſtead, and to paſs upon Booth for his own wife.

This was afterwards very eaſily executed; for when they left Booth's lodgings, Amelia, who went laſt to her chair, ran back to fetch her maſque, as ſhe pretended, which ſhe had purpoſely left behind. She then whipt off her domino, and threw it over Mrs. Atkinſon, who ſtood ready to receive it, and ran immediately down ſtairs, and ſtepping into Amelia's chair, proceeded with the reſt to the maſquerade.

As her ſtature exactly ſuited that of Amelia, ſhe had very little difficulty to carry on the impoſition; for, beſides the natural reſemblance of their voices, and the opportunity of ſpeaking in a feigned one, ſhe had hardly an intercourſe of ſix words with Booth during the whole time; for the moment they got into the crowd, ſhe took the firſt opportunity of ſlipping from him. And he, as the reader may remember, being ſurprized by other women, and concluding his wife to be ſafe with Mrs. James, was very well ſatisfied, till the colonel ſet him upon the ſearch, as we have ſeen before.

Mrs. Atkinſon, the moment ſhe came home, ran up ſtairs to the nurſery, where ſhe found Amelia, and told her in haſte that ſhe might very eaſily carry on the deceit with her huſband; for that ſhe might tell him what ſhe pleaſed to invent, as they had not been a minute together during the whole evening.

Booth was no ſooner ſatisfied that his wife had not been from home that evening, than he fell into raptures with her, gave her a thouſand tender careſſes, blamed his own judgment, acknowledged the goodneſs

of hers, and vowed never to oppoſe her will more in any one inſtance during his life.

Mrs. Atkinſon, who was ſtill in the nurſery with her maſquerade dreſs, was then ſummoned down ſtairs; and when Booth ſaw her, and heard her ſpeak in her mimic tone, he declared he was not ſurpriſed at his having been impoſed upon; for that if they were both in the ſame diſguiſe, he ſhould ſcarce be able to diſcover the difference between them.

They then ſat down to half an hour's chearful converſation; after which, they retired all in the moſt perfect good humour.

CHAP. IV.

Conſequences of the maſquerade.

WHEN Booth roſe in the morning, he found in his pocket that letter which had been delivered to him by Colonel Bath, which, had not chance brought to his remembrance, he might poſſibly have never recollected.

He had now, however, the curioſity to open the letter, and beginning to read it, the matter of it drew him on, till he peruſed the whole; for, notwithſtanding the contempt caſt upon it by thoſe learned critics the bucks, neither the ſubject, nor the manner in which it was treated, was altogether contemptible.

But there was ſtill another motive which induced Booth to read the whole letter; and this was, that he preſently thought he knew the hand. He did, indeed, immediately conclude it was Dr. Harriſon; for the doctor wrote a very remarkable one; and this letter contained all the particularities of the doctor's character.

He had juſt finiſhed a ſecond reading of this letter, when the doctor himſelf entered the room. The good man was impatient to know the ſucceſs of Amelia's ſtratagem; for he bore towards her all that love which eſteem can create in a good mind, without the aſſiſtance of thoſe ſelfiſh conſiderations, from which the love

ove of wives and children may be ordinarily deduced. The latter of which nature, by very ſubtle and refined reaſoning, ſuggeſts to us to be part of our dear ſelves; and the former, as long as they remain the objects of our liking, that ſame nature is furniſhed with very plain and fertile arguments, to recommend to our affections. But to raiſe that affection in the human breaſt, which the doctor had for Amelia, nature is forced to uſe a kind of logic, which is no more underſtood by a bad man, than ſir Iſaac Newton's doctrine of colours is by one born blind. And yet in reality it contains nothing more abſtruſe than this, that an injury is the object of anger, danger of fear, and praiſe of vanity: for in the ſame ſimple manner it may be aſſerted, that goodneſs is the object of love.

The doctor enquired immediately for his child (for ſo he often called Amelia); Booth anſwered, that he had left her aſleep; for that ſhe had had but a reſtleſs night. 'I hope ſhe is not diſordered by the maſquerade,' cries the doctor. Booth anſwered, he believed ſhe would be very well when ſhe waked. 'I fancy,' ſaid he, 'her gentle ſpirits were a little too much fluttered laſt night; that is all.'

'I hope then,' ſaid the doctor, 'you will never more inſiſt on her going to ſuch places, but know your own happineſs in having a wife that hath the diſcretion to avoid thoſe places; which, though perhaps they may not be, as ſome repreſent them, ſuch brothels of vice and debauchery, as would impeach the character of every virtuous woman who was ſeen at them, are certainly however ſcenes of riot, diſorder, and intemperance, very improper to be frequented by a chaſte and ſober chriſtian matron.'

Booth declared, that he was very ſenſible of his error; and that ſo far from ſoliciting his wife to go to nother maſquerade, he did not intend ever to go thither any more himſelf.

The doctor highly approved the reſolution; and hen Booth ſaid: 'And I thank you, my dear friend, as well as my wife's diſcretion, that ſhe was not at the maſquerade laſt night.' He then related to the

doctor the diſcovery of the plot; and the good man was greatly pleaſed with the ſucceſs of the ſtratagem, and that Booth took it in ſuch good part.

'But, ſir,' ſays Booth, 'I had a letter given me 'by a noble colonel there, which is written in a hand 'ſo very like yours, that I could almoſt ſwear to it. 'Nor is the ſtile, as far as I can gueſs, unlike your 'own. Here it is, ſir. Do you own the letter, doc-'tor, or do you not?'

The doctor took the letter, and having looked at it a moment, ſaid—'And did the colonel himſelf 'give you this letter?'

'The colonel himſelf,' anſwered Booth.

'Why then,' cries the doctor, 'he is ſurely the moſt 'impudent fellow that the world ever produced. What 'did he deliver it with an air of triumph?'

'He delivered it me with air enough,' cries Booth 'after his own manner, and bid me read it for my 'edification. To ſay the truth, I am a little ſurpriſed 'that he ſhould fingle me out of all mankind to deli-'ver the letter to; I do not think I deſerve the cha-'racter of ſuch a huſband. It is well I am not ſo very 'forward to take an affront as ſome folks.'

'I am glad to ſee you are not,' ſaid the doctor 'and your behaviour in this affair becomes both the 'man of ſenſe and the chriſtian: for it would be 'ſurely the greateſt folly, as well as the moſt daring 'impiety, to riſque your own life for the impertinence 'of a fool. As long as you are aſſured of the virtue 'of your own wife, it is wiſdom in you to deſpiſe the 'efforts of ſuch a wretch. Not indeed that your wife 'accuſes him of any downright attack, though ſhe 'hath obſerved enough in his behaviour to give of-'fence to her delicacy.'

'You aſtoniſh me, doctor,' ſaid Booth. 'What 'can you mean? my wife diſlike his behaviour! hath 'the colonel ever offended her?'

'I do not ſay he hath ever offended her by any 'open declarations.—Nor hath he done any thing 'which, according to the moſt romantic notion of 'honour, you can or ought to reſent; but there is 'ſomething extremely nice in the chaſtity of a true 'virtuous woman.'

'And hath my wife really complained of any thing 'of that kind in the colonel?'

'Look ye, young gentleman,' cries the doctor, 'I 'will have no quarrelling, or challenging; I find I 'have made ſome miſtake, and therefore I inſiſt upon 'it, by all the rights of friendſhip, that you give me 'your word of honour you will not quarrel with the 'colonel on this account.'

'I do with all my heart,' ſaid Booth; 'for if I 'did not know your character, I ſhould abſolutely 'think you was jeſting with me. I do not think you 'have miſtaken my wife, but I am ſure ſhe hath miſ-'taken the colonel; and hath miſconſtrued ſome 'overſtrained point of gallantry, ſomething of the 'quixotte kind, into a deſign againſt her chaſtity; 'but I have that opinion of the colonel, that I hope 'you will not be offended, when I declare I know not 'which of you two I ſhould be the ſooner jealous of.'

'I would by no means have you jealous of any one,' cries the doctor; 'for I think my child's virtue may 'be firmly relied on; but I am convinced ſhe would 'not have ſaid what ſhe did to me, without a cauſe; 'nor ſhould I, without ſuch a conviction, have writ-'ten that letter to the colonel, as I own to you I did. 'However, nothing I ſay hath yet paſt, which, even 'in the opinion of falſe honour, you are at liberty to 'reſent; but as to declining any great intimacy, if 'you will take my advice, I think that would be 'prudent.'

'You will pardon me, my deareſt friend,' ſaid Booth; 'but I have really ſuch an opinion of the co-'lonel, that I would pawn my life upon his honour; 'and as for women, I do not believe he ever had an 'attachment to any.'

'Be it ſo,' ſaid the doctor. 'I have only two 'things to inſiſt on. The firſt is, that if ever you 'change your opinion, this letter may not be the ſub-'ject of any quarrelling or fighting; the other is, that 'you never mention a word of this to your wife. By 'the latter I ſhall ſee whether you can keep a ſecret; 'and if it is no otherwiſe material, it will be a whole-

'ſome exerciſe to your mind; for the practice of any 'virtue is a kind of mental exerciſe, and ſerves to 'maintain the health and vigour of the ſoul.'

'I faithfully promiſe both,' cries Booth. And now the breakfaſt entered the room, as did ſoon after Amelia and Mrs. Atkinſon.

The converſation ran chiefly on the maſquerade; and Mrs. Atkinſon gave an account of ſeveral adventures there; but whether ſhe told the whole truth with regard to herſelf, I will not determine. For certain it is, ſhe never once mentioned the name of the noble peer. Amongſt the reſt, ſhe ſaid there was a young fellow that had preached a ſermon there upon a ſtool, in praiſe of adultery, ſhe believed; for ſhe could not get near enough to hear the particulars.

During that tranſaction, Booth had been engaged with the blue domino in another room, ſo that he knew nothing of it; ſo that, what Mrs. Atkinſon had now ſaid, only brought to his mind the doctor's letter to colonel Bath; for to him he ſuppoſed it was written; and the idea of the colonel being a lover to Amelia, ſtruck him in ſo ridiculous a light, that it threw him into a violent fit of laughter.

The doctor, who, from the natural jealouſy of an author, imputed the agitation of Booth's muſcles to his own ſermon, or letter on that ſubject, was a little offended, and ſaid gravely: 'I ſhould be glad to 'know the reaſon of this immoderate mirth. Is adul-'tery a matter of jeſt in your opinion?'

'Far otherwiſe,' anſwered Booth. 'But how is 'it poſſible to refrain from laughter at the idea of a 'fellow preaching a ſermon in favour of it at ſuch a 'place?'

'I am very ſorry,' cries the doctor, 'to find the 'age is grown to ſo ſcandalous a degree of licentiouſ-'neſs, that we have thrown off not only virtue, but 'decency. How abandoned muſt be the manners of 'any nation where ſuch inſults upon religion and mo-'rality can be committed with impunity? no man is 'fonder of true wit and humour than myſelf; but to 'profane ſacred things with jeſt and ſcoffing is a ſure 'ſign of a weak and a wicked mind. It is the very

'vice which Homer attacks in the odious character of 'Therſites. The ladies muſt excuſe my repeating 'the paſſage to you, as I know you have Greek 'enough to underſtand it.'

'Ος ῥ' ἴπεα φρεσὶν ἥσιν ἄκοσμά τε, πολλά τε ἤδη.
Μάψ, ἀτὰρ οὐ κατὰ κόσμον ἐριζέμεναι βασιλεῦσιν,
'Αλλ' ὅτι οἱ εἰσαῖσε γελοίϊον Ἀργείοισιν
Ἔμμεναι [a].

'And immediately adds,

'——αἰσχιστος δὲ ἀνὴρ ὑπὸ Ἴλιον ἦλθε [b].

'Horace again deſcribes ſuch a raſcal.

'——————— *Solutos*
'*Qui captat riſus hominum famamque dicacis* [c].

'And ſays of him,

'—*Hic niger eſt, hunc tu, Romane, caveto* [d].

'O charming Homer!' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'how 'much above all other writers!'

'I aſk your pardon, madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'I 'forgot you was a ſcholar; but, indeed, I did not 'know you underſtood Greek as well as Latin.'

'I do not pretend,' ſaid ſhe, 'to be a critic in the 'Greek; but I think I am able to read a little of Ho-'mer, at leaſt with the help of looking now and then 'into the Latin.'

'Pray, madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'how do you 'like this paſſage in the ſpeech of Hector to Andro-'mache?

[a] Thus paraphraſed by Mr. Pope.
"Aw'd by no ſhame, by no reſpect control'd,
"In ſcandal buſy, in reproaches bold:
"With witty malice ſtudious to defame,
"Scorn all his joy, and laughter all his aim."

[b] "He was the greateſt ſcoundrel in the whole army."

[c] "Who trivial burſts of laughter ſtrives to raiſe,
"And courts of prating petulance the praiſe."
FRANCIS.

[d] "This man is black, do thou, O Roman, ſhun this man."

'——Eis

' —— Εἰς οἶκον ἰοῦσα τὰ σαυτῆς ἔργα κόμιζε,
' Ἰστόν τ' ἠλακάτην τε, καὶ ἀμφιπόλοισι κέλευε
' Ἔργον ἐποίχεσθαι *.

' Or how do you like the character of Hippoda-
' mia, who, by being the prettieſt girl, and beſt
' workwoman of her age, got one of the beſt huſbands
' in all Troy.——I think, indeed, Homer enumerates
' her diſcretion with her other qualifications; but I
' do not remember he gives us one character of a wo-
' man of learning.——Don't you conceive this
' to be a great omiſſion in that charming poet? How-
' ever, Juvenal makes you amends, for he talks very
' abundantly of the learning of the Roman ladies in
' his time.'

' You are a provoking man, doctor,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon. ' Where is the harm in a woman's having
' learning as well as a man?'

' Let me aſk you another queſtion,' ſaid the doctor.
' Where is the harm in a man's being a fine performer
' with a needle as well as a woman? And yet, an-
' ſwer me honeſtly, would you greatly chuſe to marry
' a man with a thimble upon his finger? Would you
' in earneſt think a needle became the hand of your
' huſband as well as a halberd?'

' As to war, I am with you,' ſaid ſhe. ' Homer
' himſelf, I well remember, makes Hector tell his
' wife, that warlike works——What is the Greek
' word——Polemy——ſomething——be-
' longed to men only; and I readily agree to it. I
' hate a maſculine woman, an Amazon, as much as
' you can do: but what is there maſculine in learn-
' ing?'

' Nothing ſo maſculine, take my word for it. As
' for your Polemy, I look upon it to be the true cha-

* " Go home and mind your own buſineſs. Follow your ſpin-
" ning, and keep your maids to their work."

' racteriſtic

'racteriſtic of a devil. So Homer every where cha-
'racteriſes Mars.'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, 'you had
'better not diſpute with the doctor; for upon my
'word, he will be too hard for you.'

'Nay, I beg you will not interfere,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'I am ſure, you can be no judge in theſe
'matters.'

At which the doctor and Booth burſt into a loud laugh; and Amelia, though fearful of giving her friend offence, could not forbear a gentle ſmile.

'You may laugh, gentlemen, if you pleaſe,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'but I thank Heaven, I have mar-
'ried a man who is not jealous of my underſtanding.
'I ſhould have been the moſt miſerable woman upon
'earth with a ſtarched pedant, who was poſſeſſed of
'that nonſenſical opinion, that the difference of ſexes
'cauſes any difference in the mind. Why don't you
'honeſtly avow the Turkiſh notion, that women have
'no ſouls; for you ſay the ſame thing in effect?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, greatly concerned to ſee his wife ſo angry, 'you have miſtaken
'the doctor.'

'I beg, my dear,' cries ſhe, 'you will ſay nothing
'upon theſe ſubjects.—I hope you at leaſt do not de-
'ſpiſe my underſtanding.'

'I aſſure you I do not,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'and I
'hope you will never deſpiſe mine; for a man may
'have ſome underſtanding, I hope, without learning.'

Mrs. Atkinſon reddened extremely at theſe words; and the doctor, fearing he had gone too far, began to ſoften matters, in which Amelia aſſiſted him. By theſe means, the ſtorm riſing in Mrs. Atkinſon before was in ſome meaſure laid, at leaſt ſuſpended from burſting at preſent; but it fell afterwards upon the poor ſerjeant's head in a torrent; who had learned perhaps one maxim from his trade, that a cannon-ball always doth miſchief in proportion to the reſiſtance it meets with; and that nothing ſo effectually deadens its force as a wool-pack. The ſerjeant therefore bore all with patience; and the idea of a wool-pack, perhaps, bringing that of a feather-bed into his head, he

at laſt not only quieted his wife; but ſhe cried out with great ſincerity, 'Well, my dear, I will ſay 'one thing for you, that I believe from my ſoul, 'though you have no learning, you have the beſt 'underſtanding of any man upon earth; and I muſt 'own I think the latter far more profitable of the 'two.'

Far different was the idea ſhe entertained of the doctor, whom, from this day, ſhe conſidered as a conceited pedant; nor could all Amelia's endeavours ever alter her ſentiments.

The doctor now took his leave of Booth and his wife for a week, he intending to ſet out within an hour or two with his old friend, with whom our readers were a little acquainted at the latter end of the ninth book, and of whom, perhaps, they did not then conceive the moſt favourable opinion.

Nay, I am aware that the eſteem which ſome readers before had for the doctor, may here be leſſened; ſince he may appear to have been too eaſy a dupe to the groſs flattery of the old gentleman. If there be any ſuch critics, we are heartily ſorry as well for them as for the doctor; but it is our buſineſs to diſcharge the part of a faithful hiſtorian, and to deſcribe human nature as it is, not as we would wiſh it to be.

CHAP. V.

In which Colonel Bath appears in great glory.

THAT afternoon, as Booth was walking in the Park, he met with Colonel Bath, who preſently aſked him for the letter which he had given him the night before; upon which Booth immediately returned it.

'Don't you think,' cries Bath, 'it is writ with 'great dignity of expreſſion and emphaſis of—of—of 'judgment?'

'I am ſurpriſed, though,' cries Booth, 'that any 'one *ſhould* write ſuch a letter to you, colonel.'

'*To me?*' ſaid Bath.—'What do you mean, ſir, '*I hope* you don't imagine any man durſt write 'ſuch

'ſuch a letter to me? d—n me, if I knew a man 'who thought me capable of debauching my friend's 'wife, I would —— d—n me.'

'I believe, indeed, ſir,' cries Booth, 'that no man 'living dares put his name to ſuch a letter: but you 'ſee it is anonymous.'

'I don't know what you mean by ominous,' cries the colonel: 'but, blaſt my reputation, if I had re-'ceived ſuch a letter, if I would not have ſearched 'the world to have found the writer. D—n me, I 'would have gone to the Eaſt-Indies to have pulled 'off his noſe.'

'He would, indeed, have deſerved it,' cries Booth. —'But pray, ſir, how came you by it?'

'I took it,' ſaid the colonel, 'from a ſett of idle 'young raſcals, one of whom was reading it out aloud 'upon a ſtool, while the reſt were attempting to make 'a jeſt, not only of the letter, but of all decency, 'virtue and religion. A ſett of fellows that you muſt 'have ſeen or heard of about town, that are, d—n 'me, a diſgrace to the dignity of manhood; puppies 'that miſtake noiſe and impudence, rudeneſs and 'profaneneſs, for wit. If the drummers of my com-'pany had not more underſtanding than twenty ſuch 'fellows, I'd have them both whipt out of the regi-'ment.'

'So then you do not know the perſon to whom it 'was writ?' ſaid Booth.

'Lieutenant,' cries the colonel, 'your queſtion 'deſerves no anſwer. I ought to take time to con-'ſider whether I ought not to reſent the ſuppoſition. 'Do you think, ſir, I am acquainted with a raſcal?'

'I do not ſuppoſe, colonel,' cries Booth, 'that 'you would willingly cultivate an intimacy with ſuch 'a perſon; but a man muſt have good luck, who 'hath any acquaintance, if there are not ſome raſcals 'among them.'

'I am not offended with you, child,' ſays the colo-nel. I know you did not intend to offend me.'

'*No man, I believe*, dares intend it,' ſaid Booth.

'*I believe ſo too*,' ſaid the colonel, 'd—n me, I '*know it.* But you know, child, how tender I am on

'this

'this ſubject. If I had been ever married myſelf, I 'ſhould have cleft the man's ſkull who had dared 'look wantonly at my wife.'

'It is certainly the moſt cruel of all injuries,' ſaid Booth. 'How finely doth Shakeſpeare expreſs it in 'his Othello!

"But there, where I had treaſur'd up my ſoul."

'That Shakeſpeare,' cries the colonel, 'was a fine 'fellow. He was a very pretty poet indeed. Was it 'not Shakeſpeare that wrote the play about Hotſpur? 'you muſt remember theſe lines. I got them almoſt 'by heart at the play-houſe; for I never miſſed that 'play whenever it was acted, if I was in town.

"By Heav'n it was an eaſy leap,
"To pluck bright honour into the full moon,
"Or drive into the bottomleſs deep."

'And—and—faith, I have almoſt forgot them; 'but I know it is ſomething about ſaving your ho- 'nour from drowning——— O it is very fine. I ſay, 'd—n me, the man that writ thoſe lines was the 'greateſt poet the world ever produced. There is 'dignity of expreſſion and emphaſis of thinking, d—n 'me.'

Booth aſſented to the colonel's criticiſm, and then cried, 'I wiſh, colonel, you would be ſo kind to 'give me that letter.' The colonel anſwered, if he had any particular uſe for it, he would give it him with all his heart, and preſently delivered it; and ſoon afterwards they parted.

Several paſſages now ſtruck all at once upon Booth's mind, which gave him great uneaſineſs. He became confident now that he had miſtaken one colonel for another; and though he could not account for the letter's getting into thoſe hands from whom Bath had taken it (indeed James had dropt it out of his pocket) yet a thouſand circumſtances left him no room to doubt the identity of the perſon, who was a man much more *liable to raiſe* the ſuſpicion of a huſband than honeſt

Bath,

Bath, who would at any time have rather fought with a man than lain with a woman.

The whole behaviour of Amelia now ruſhed upon his memory. Her reſolution not to take up her reſidence at the colonel's houſe; her backwardneſs even to dine there, her unwillingneſs to go to the maſquerade, many of her unguarded expreſſions, and ſome where ſhe had been more guarded, all joined together to raiſe ſuch an idea in Mr. Booth, that he had almoſt taken a reſolution to go and cut the colonel to pieces in his own houſe. Cooler thoughts, however, ſuggeſted themſelves to him in time. He recollected the promiſe he had ſo ſolemnly made to the doctor. He conſidered, moreover, that he was yet in the dark, as to the extent of the colonel's guilt. Having nothing therefore to fear from it, he contented himſelf to poſtpone a reſentment, which he nevertheleſs reſolved to take of the colonel hereafter, if he found he was in any degree a delinquent.

The firſt ſtep he determined to take, was, on the firſt opportunity, to relate to Colonel James the means by which he came poſſeſſed of the letter, and to read it to him. On which occaſion, he thought, he ſhould eaſily diſcern, by the behaviour of the colonel, whether he had been ſuſpected, either by Amelia or the doctor, without a cauſe: but as for his wife, he fully reſolved not to reveal the ſecret to her till the doctor's return.

While Booth was deeply engaged by himſelf in theſe meditations, Captain Trent came up to him, and familiarly ſlapped him on the ſhoulder.

They were ſoon joined by a third gentleman, and preſently afterwards by a fourth, both acquaintances of Mr. Trent; and all having walked twice the length of the Mall together, it being now paſt nine in the evening, Trent propoſed going to the tavern, to which the ſtrangers immediately conſented; and Booth himſelf, after ſome reſiſtance, was at length perſuaded to comply.

To the King's-arms then they went, where the bottle went very briſkly round till after eleven; at which time, Trent propoſed a game at cards, to which

propoſal

propoſal likewiſe Booth's conſent was obtained, though not without much difficulty; for though he had naturally ſome inclination to gaming, and had formerly a little indulged it, yet he had entirely left it off for many years.

Booth and his friend were partners, and had at firſt ſome ſucceſs; but fortune, according to her uſual conduct, ſoon ſhifted about, and perſecuted Booth with ſuch malice, that in about two hours he was ſtripped of all the gold in his pocket, which amounted to twelve guineas, being more than half the caſh which he was at that time worth.

How eaſy it is for a man, who is at all tainted with the itch of gaming, to leave off play in ſuch a ſituation, eſpecially when he is likewiſe heated with liquor, I leave to the gameſters to determine. Certain it is, that Booth had no inclination to deſiſt; but, on the contrary, was ſo eagerly bent on playing on, that he called his friend out of the room, and aſked him for ten pieces, which he promiſed punctually to pay the next morning.

Trent chid him for uſing ſo much formality on the occaſion. 'You know,' ſaid he, 'dear Booth, you 'may have what money you pleaſe of me. Here is 'a twenty pound note, at your ſervice, and if you 'want five times the ſum, it is at your ſervice. We 'will never let theſe fellows go away with our money 'in this manner; for we have ſo much the advantage, 'that if the knowing ones were here, they would 'lay odds of our ſide.'

But if this was really Mr. Trent's opinion, he was very much miſtaken; for the other two honourable gentlemen were not only greater maſters of the game, and ſomewhat ſoberer than poor Booth, having with all the art in their power evaded the bottle; but they had moreover another ſmall advantage over their adverſaries, both of them, by means of ſome certain private ſigns, previouſly agreed upon between them being always acquainted with the principal cards in each other's hands. It cannot be wondered therefore that fortune was on their ſide; for however ſhe may *be reported* to favour fools, ſhe never, I believe, ſhews

them

them any countenance when they engage in play with knaves.

The more Booth loſt, the deeper he made his bets; the conſequence of which was, that about two in the morning, beſides the loſs of his own money, he was fifty pounds indebted to Trent. A ſum, indeed, which he would not have borrowed, had not the other, like a very generous friend, puſhed it upon him.

Trent's pockets became at laſt dry, by means of theſe loans. His own loſs indeed was trifling; for the ſtakes of the games were no higher than crowns; and betting (as it is called) was that to which Booth owed his ruin. The gentlemen, therefore, pretty well knowing Booth's circumſtances, and being kindly unwilling to win more of a man than he was worth, declined playing any longer, nor did Booth once aſk them to perſiſt; for he was aſhamed of the debt which he had already contracted to Trent, and very far from deſiring to encreaſe it.

The company then ſeparated. The two victors and Trent went off in their chairs to their ſeveral houſes near Groſvenor-ſquare; and poor Booth, in a melancholy mood, walked home to his lodgings. He was indeed in ſuch a fit of deſpair, that it more than once came into his head to put an end to his miſerable being.

But, before we introduce him to Amelia, we muſt do her the juſtice to relate the manner in which ſhe ſpent this unhappy evening. It was about ſeven when Booth left her to walk in the Park: from this time, till paſt eight, ſhe was employed with her children, in playing with them, in giving them their ſupper, and in putting them to bed.

When theſe offices were performed, ſhe employed herſelf another hour in cooking up a little ſupper for her huſband, this being, as we have already obſerved, his favourite meal, as indeed it was her's; and, in a moſt pleaſant and delightful manner, they generally paſſed their time at this ſeaſon, though their fare was very ſeldom of the ſumptuous kind.

It now grew dark, and her haſhed mutton was ready for the table; but no Booth appeared. Having

ing waited therefore for him a full hour, ſhe gave him over for that evening; nor was ſhe much alarmed at his abſence, as ſhe knew he was, in a night or two, to be at the tavern with ſome brother officers: ſhe concluded therefore that they had met in the Park, and had agreed to ſpend this evening together.

At ten then ſhe ſat down to ſupper by herſelf; for Mrs. Atkinſon was then abroad. And here we cannot help relating a little incident, however trivial it may appear to ſome. Having ſat ſome time alone reflecting on their diſtreſſed ſituation, her ſpirits grew very low; and ſhe was once or twice a going to ring the bell, to ſend her maid for half a pint of white-wine; but checked her inclination, in order to ſave the little ſum of ſixpence; which ſhe did the more reſolutely, as ſhe had before refuſed to gratify her children with tarts for their ſupper, from the ſaid motive. And this ſelf-denial ſhe was very probably practiſing, to ſave ſixpence; while her huſband was paying a debt of ſeveral guineas, incurred by the ace of trumps being in the hands of his adverſary.

Inſtead therefore of this cordial, ſhe took up one of the excellent Farquhar's comedies, and read it half through, when the clock ſtriking twelve, ſhe retired to bed, leaving the maid to ſet up for her maſter. She would, indeed, have much more willingly have ſat up herſelf; but the delicacy of her own mind aſſured her, that Booth would not thank her for the compliment. This is indeed a method which ſome wives take of upbraiding their huſbands for ſtaying abroad till too late an hour, and of engaging them, through tenderneſs and good-nature, never to enjoy the company of their friends too long, when they muſt do this at the expence of their wives reſt.

To bed then ſhe went, but not to ſleep. Thrice indeed ſhe told the diſmal clock, and as often heard the more diſmal watchman, till her miſerable huſband found his way home, and ſtole ſilently, like a thief, to bed to her; at which time pretending then firſt to wake, ſhe threw her ſnowy arms around him; though, perhaps, the more witty property of ſnow, according

to

Addiſon, that is to ſay, its coldneſs, rather belonged the poor captain.

CHAP. VI.

Read, gentleſter, and obſerve.

BOOTH could not ſo well diſguiſe the agitations of his mind from Amelia, but that ſhe perceived ſufficient ſymptoms to aſſure her that ſome misfortune had befallen him. This made her in her turn ſo uneaſy, that Booth took notice of it, and after breakfaſt ſaid, 'Sure, my dear Emily, ſomething hath fallen out to vex you.'

Amelia, looking tenderly at him, anſwered, 'Indeed, my dear, you are in the right. I am indeed extremely vexed.' 'For heaven's ſake,' ſaid he, 'what is it?' 'Nay, my love,' cries ſhe, 'that you muſt anſwer yourſelf. Whatever it is which hath given you all that diſturbance that you in vain endeavour to conceal from me, this it is which cauſes all my affliction.'

'You gueſs truly, my ſweet,' replied Booth; 'I am indeed afflicted, and I will not, nay I cannot, conceal the truth from you. I have undone myſelf, Amelia.'

'What have you done, child?' ſaid ſhe, in ſome conſternation, 'pray, tell me.'

'I have loſt my money at play,' anſwered he.

'Pugh!' ſaid ſhe, recovering herſelf,—'what ſignifies the trifle you had in your pocket? Reſolve never to play again, and let it give you no further vexation; I warrant you, we will contrive ſome method to repair ſuch a loſs.'

'Thou heavenly angel, thou comfort of my ſoul,' cries Booth, tenderly embracing her — Then ſtarting a little from her arms, and looking with eager fondneſs in her eyes, he ſaid, 'Let me ſurvey thee; art thou really human, or art thou not rather an angel in a human form? — O, no,' cries he, flying again

again into her arms, 'thou art my deareſt woman, my 'beſt, my beloved wife.'

Amelia, having returned all his careſſes with equal kindneſs, told him, ſhe had near eleven guineas in her purſe, and aſked how much ſhe ſhould fetch him. ——'I would not adviſe you, Billy, to carry too 'much in your pocket, for fear it ſhould be a temp-'tation to you to return to gaming, in order to re-'trieve your paſt loſſes. Let me beg you, on all 'accounts, never to think more, if poſſible, on the 'trifle you have loſt, any more than if you had never 'poſſeſſed it.'

Booth promiſed her faithfully he never would, and refuſed to take any of the money. He then heſitated a moment—and cried—'You ſay, my dear, you have 'eleven guineas; you have a diamond ring likewiſe, 'which was your grandmother's, I believe that is 'worth twenty pounds; and your own and the child's 'watch are worth as much more.'

'I believe they would ſell for as much,' cried Amelia; 'for a pawnbroker of Mrs. Atkinſon's ac-'quaintance offered to lend me thirty-five pounds upon 'them, when you was in your laſt diſtreſs.——But 'why are you computing their value now?'

'I was only conſidering,' anſwered he, 'how much 'we could raiſe in any caſe of exigency.'

'I have computed it myſelf,' ſaid ſhe; 'and I be-'lieve all we have in the world, beſides our bare ne-'ceſſary apparel, would produce about ſixty pounds: 'And ſuppoſe, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'while we have 'that little ſum, we ſhould think of employing it 'ſome way or other, to procure ſome ſmall ſubſiſtence 'for ourſelves and our family. As for your depen-'dence on the colonel's friendſhip, it is all vain, I 'am afraid, and fallacious. Nor do I ſee any hopes 'you have, from any other quarter, of providing for 'yourſelf again in the army. And though the ſum 'which is now in our power is very ſmall: yet we 'may poſſibly contrive with it to put ourſelves into 'ſome mean way of livelihood. I have a heart, my 'Billy, which is capable of undergoing any thing '*for your* ſake; and I hope my hands are as able to

'work

work, as thoſe which have been more inured to it. But think, my dear, think what muſt be our wretched condition, when the very little we now have, is all mouldered away, as it will ſoon be in this town.'

When poor Booth heard this, and reflected that e time which Amelia foreſaw was already arrived or that he had already loſt every farthing they were orth), it touched him to the quick; he turned pale, aſhed his teeth, and cried out, 'Damnation! this is too much to bear.'

Amelia was thrown into the utmoſt conſternation this behaviour; and, with great terror in her counnance, cried out, 'Good Heavens! my dear love, what is the reaſon of this agony?'

'Aſk me no queſtions,' cried he, 'unleſs you would drive me to madneſs.'

'My Billy, my love,' ſaid ſhe, 'what can be the meaning of this? — I beg you will deal openly with me, and tell me all your griefs.'

'Have you dealt fairly with me Amelia?' ſaid he.

'Yes ſurely,' ſaid ſhe; 'Heaven is my witneſs how fairly.'

'Nay, do not call Heaven,' cried he, 'to witneſs a falſhood. You have not dealt openly with me, Amelia. You have concealed ſecrets from me; ſecrets which I ought to have known, and which, if I had known, it had been better for us both.'

'You aſtoniſh me as much as you ſhock me,' cried ſhe. 'What falſhood, what treachery, have I been guilty of?'

'You tell me,' ſaid he, 'that I can have no reliance on James; why did you not tell me ſo before?'

'I call Heaven again,' ſaid ſhe, 'to witneſs; nay, I appeal to yourſelf for the truth of it; I have often told you ſo. I have told you I diſliked the man, notwithſtanding the many favours he had done you. I deſired you not to have too abſolute a reliance upon him I own, I had once an extreme good opinion of him; but I changed it, and I acquainted you that I had ſo———'

'But not,' cries he, 'with the reaſons why you had 'changed it.'

'I was really afraid, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'of going 'too far. I knew the obligations you had to him; 'and if I ſuſpected that he acted rather from vanity 'than true friendſhip——'

'Vanity!' cries he, 'take care, Amelia, you 'know his motive to be much worſe than vanity—— 'A motive, which, if he had piled obligations on me 'till they had reached the ſkies, would tumble all 'down to hell. It is in vain to conceal it longer—I 'know all—your confident hath told me all.'

'Nay, then,' cries ſhe, 'on my knees I entreat you 'to be pacified, and hear me out. It was, my dear, 'for you, my dread of your jealous honour, and the 'fatal conſequences.'

'Is not Amelia, then,' cried he, 'equally jealous 'of my honour! Would ſhe, from a weak tenderneſs 'for my perſon, go privately about to betray, to un- 'dermine, the moſt invaluable treaſure of my ſoul? 'Would ſhe have me pointed at as the credulous 'dupe, the eaſy fool, the tame, the kind cuckold 'of a raſcal, with whom I converſed as a friend?'

'Indeed, you injure me,' ſaid Amelia. 'Heaven 'forbid I ſhould have the trial; but, I think, I could 'ſacrifice all I hold moſt dear, to preſerve your ho- 'nour. I think, I have ſhewn I can. But I will— 'when you are cool, I will—ſatisfy you I have done 'nothing you ought to blame.'

'I am cool then,' cries he—'I will with the 'greateſt coolneſs hear you.——But do not think, 'Amelia, I have the leaſt jealouſy, the leaſt ſuſpi- 'cion, the leaſt doubt, of your honour. It is your 'want of confidence in me alone which I blame.'

'When you are calm,' cried ſhe, 'I will ſpeak, 'and not before.'

He aſſured her he was calm; and then ſhe ſaid— 'You have juſtified my conduct by your preſent paſ- 'ſion, in concealing from you my ſuſpicions; for 'they were no more, nay it is poſſible they were unjuſt: 'for ſince the doctor, in betraying the ſecret to you, '*hath ſo falſified* my opinion of him, why may I not

'be

be as well deceived in my opinion of the colonel; ſince it was only formed on ſome particulars in his behaviour, which I diſliked? for, upon my honour, he never ſpoke a word to me, nor hath been ever guilty of any direct action which I could blame.' ıe then went on, and related moſt of the circumınces which ſhe had mentioned to the doctor, omitıg one or two of the ſtrongeſt, and giving ſuch a rn to the reſt, that, if Booth had not had ſome of thello's blood in him, his wife would have almoſt ›peared a prude in his eyes. Even he, however, was ·etty well pacified by this narrative, and ſaid he was lad to find a poſſibility of the colonel's innocence; ut that he greatly commended the prudence of his ife, and only wiſhed ſhe would for the future make im her only confidant.

Amelia, upon that, expreſſed ſome bitterneſs againſt he doctor for breaking his truſt; when Booth, in his xcuſe, related all the circumſtances of the letter, and ›lainly convinced her, that the ſecret had dropt by nere accident from the mouth of the doctor.

Thus the huſband and wife became again reconciled; ınd poor Amelia generouſly forgave a paſſion, of which the ſagacious reader is better acquainted with the real cauſe, than was that unhappy lady.

CHAP. VII.

In which Booth receives a viſit from Captain Trent.

WHEN Booth grew perfectly cool, and began to reflect that he had broken his word to the doctor, in having made the diſcovery to his wife, which we have ſeen in the laſt chapter, that thought gave him great uneaſineſs; and now, to comfort him, Captain Trent came to make him a viſit. This was, indeed, almoſt the laſt man in the world, whoſe company he wiſhed for; for he was the only man he was aſhamed to ſee, for a reaſon well known to gameſters; among whom, the moſt diſhonourable of all things is, not to pay a debt, contracted at the gaming-table, the next day, or the next time at leaſt that you *ſee the* party.

Booth made no doubt, but that Trent was purpoſe to receive this debt; the latter therefore ſcarce a minute in the room, befc began, in an aukward manner, to apolog Trent immediately ſtopt his mouth, and ſai ‘ not want the money, Mr. Booth, and you ‘ it me whenever you are able; and, if yo ‘ ver able, I aſſure you I will never aſk you

This generoſity raiſed ſuch a tempeſt of in Booth (if I may be allowed the expreſſion tears burſt from his eyes, and it was ſome ti he could find any utterance for thoſe ſentim which his mind overflowed; but, when he expreſs his thankfulneſs, Trent immediatel him, and gave a ſudden turn to their diſcour

Mrs. Trent had been to viſit Mrs. Boot maſquerade evening, which viſit Mrs. Bootl yet returned. Indeed this was only the ſe ſince ſhe had received it. Trent therefore his friend, that he ſhould take it extreme he and his lady would wave all ceremony, at their houſe the next evening. Booth h moment—but preſently ſaid, ‘ I am pretty c ‘ wife is not engaged, and I will undertake ‘ I am ſure ſhe will not refuſe any thing ‘ can aſk.’ And ſoon after Trent took B him to walk in the Park.

There were few greater lovers of a bo Trent; he ſoon propoſed therefore to adjou King's-arms tavern, where Booth, though mu his inclination, accompanied him. But T very importunate, and Booth did not think h liberty to refuſe ſuch a requeſt to a man from had ſo lately received ſuch obligations.

When they came to the tavern, however, I collected the omiſſion he had been guilty of before. He wrote a ſhort note therefore to acquainting her, that he ſhould not come ſupper; but comforted her with a faithful pro he would on no account engage himſelf in g

The firſt bottle paſſed in ordinary conv *but, when* they had tapped the ſecond, B

ome hints which Trent gave him, very fairly laid pen to him his whole circumſtances, and declared he almoſt deſpaired of mending them. 'My chief relief,' ſaid he, 'was in the intereſt of Colonel James; but I have given up thoſe hopes.'

'And very wiſely too,' ſaid Trent. 'I ſay nothing of the colonel's good will. Very likely he may be your ſincere friend; but I do not believe he hath the intereſt he pretends to. He hath had too many favours in his own family, to aſk any more yet a while. But I am miſtaken, if you have not a much more powerful friend than the colonel; one, who is both able and willing to ſerve you. I dined at his table within theſe two days; and I never heard kinder nor warmer expreſſions from the mouth of man, than he made uſe of towards you. I make no doubt you know whom I mean.'

'Upon my honour, I do not,' anſwered Booth; 'nor did I gueſs that I had ſuch a friend in the world as you mention.'

'I am glad then,' cries Trent, 'that I have the pleaſure of informing you of it.' He then named the noble peer, who hath been already ſo often mentioned in this hiſtory.

Booth turned pale, and ſtarted at his name. 'I for-'give you, my dear Trent,' cries Booth, 'for menti-'oning his name to me, as you are a ſtranger to what 'hath paſſed between us.'

'Nay, I know nothing that hath paſſed between 'you,' anſwered Trent. 'I am ſure, if there is any 'quarrel between you of two days ſtanding, all is 'forgiven on his part.'

'D—n his forgiveneſs,' ſaid Booth. 'Perhaps I 'ought to bluſh at what I have forgiven.'

'You ſurpriſe me,' cries Trent. 'Pray what can 'be the matter?'

'Indeed, my dear Trent,' cries Booth very gravely, 'he would have injured me in the tendereſt part. I 'know not how to tell it you; but he would have 'diſhonoured me with my wife.'

'Sure, you are not in earneſt,' anſwered Trent;

'but, if you are, you will pardon me for thinking 'that impoſſible.'

'Indeed,' cries Booth, 'I have ſo good an opinion 'of my wife, as to believe it impoſſible for him to 'ſucceed; but that he ſhould intend me the favour, 'you will not, I believe, think an impoſſibility.'

'Faith! not in the leaſt,' ſaid Trent. 'Mrs. 'Booth is a very fine woman; and if I had the ho-'nour to be her huſband, I ſhould not be angry with 'any man for liking her.'

'But you would be angry,' ſaid Booth, 'with a 'man, who ſhould make uſe of ſtratagems and con-'trivances to ſeduce her virtue; eſpecially if he did 'this under the colour of entertaining the higheſt 'friendſhip for yourſelf.'

'Not at all,' cries Trent. 'It is human nature.'

'Perhaps it is,' cries Booth; 'but it is human 'nature depraved, ſtript of all its worth, and lovelineſs, and dignity, and degraded down to a level 'with the vileſt brutes.'

'Look ye, Booth,' cries Trent, 'I would not be 'miſunderſtood. I think, when I am talking to you, 'I talk to a man of ſenſe, and to an inhabitant of this 'country; not to one who dwells in a land of ſaints. 'If you have really ſuch an opinion as you expreſs 'of this noble Lord, you have the fineſt opportunity 'of making a complete fool and bubble of him that 'any man can deſire, and of making your own for-'tune at the ſame time. I do not ſay that your ſuſ-'picions are groundleſs; for, of all men upon earth, I 'know my Lord is the greateſt bubble to women, 'though I believe he hath had very few. And this I 'am confident of, that he hath not the leaſt jealouſy 'of theſe ſuſpicions. Now therefore, if you will act 'the part of a wiſe man, I will undertake that you ſhall 'make your fortune, without the leaſt injury to the 'chaſtity of Mrs. Booth.'

'I do not underſtand you, ſir,' ſaid Booth.

'Nay,' cries Trent, 'if you will not underſtand 'me, I have done. I meant only your ſervice; and I 'thought I had known you better.'

Booth

Booth begged him to explain himſelf. 'If you can,' ſaid he, 'ſhew me any way to improve ſuch circumſtances as I have opened to you, you may depend on it I ſhall readily embrace it, and own my obligations to you.'

'That is ſpoken like a man,' cries Trent. 'Why, what is it more than this? Carry your ſuſpicions in your own boſom. Let Mrs. Booth, in whoſe virtue I am ſure you may be juſtly confident, go to the public places; there let her treat my lord with common civility only; I am ſure he will bite. And thus, without ſuffering him to gain his purpoſe, you will gain yours. I know ſeveral who have ſucceeded with him in this manner.'

'I am very ſorry, ſir,' cries Booth, 'that you are acquainted with any ſuch raſcals. I do aſſure you, rather than I would act ſuch a part, I would ſubmit to the hardeſt ſentence that fortune could pronounce againſt me.'

'Do as you pleaſe, ſir,' ſaid Trent; 'I have only ventured to adviſe you as a friend. But do you not think your nicety is a little over-ſcrupulous?'

'You will excuſe me, ſir,' ſaid Booth; 'but I think no man can be too ſcrupulous in points which concern his honour.'

'I know many men of very nice honour,' anſwered Trent, 'who have gone much farther; and no man, I am ſure, had ever a better excuſe for it than yourſelf.—You will forgive me, Booth, ſince what I ſpeak proceeds from my love to you; nay, indeed, by mentioning your affairs to me, which I am heartily ſorry for, you have given me a right to ſpeak. You know beſt what friends you have to depend upon; but, if you have no other pretenſions than your merit, I can aſſure you, you would fail, if it was poſſible you could have ten times more merit than you have. And, if you love your wife, as I am convinced you do, what muſt be your condition, in ſeeing her want the neceſſaries of life?'

'I know my condition is very hard,' cries Booth; but I have one comfort in it, which I will never part with, and that is innocence. As to the mere ne-

'ceſſaries of life, however, it is pretty difficult to 'deprive us of them; this I am ſure of, no one can 'want them long.'

'Upon my word, ſir,' cries Trent, 'I did not know 'you had been ſo great a philoſopher. But, believe 'me, theſe matters look much leſs terrible at a diſ-'tance, than when they are actually preſent. You 'will then find, I am afraid, that honour hath no 'more ſkill in cookery, than Shakeſpeare tells us it 'hath in ſurgery.——D—n me, if I don't wiſh his 'Lordſhip loved my wife as well as he doth yours, I 'promiſe you I would truſt her virtue; and, if he 'ſhould get the better of it, I ſhould have people of 'faſhion enough to keep me in countenance.'

Their ſecond bottle being now almoſt out, Booth, without making any anſwer, called for a bill. Trent preſt very much the drinking of another bottle; but Booth abſolutely refuſed, and preſently afterwards they parted, not extremely well ſatisfied with each other. They appeared indeed one to the other in diſ-advantageous lights of a very different kind. Trent concluded Booth to be a very ſilly fellow; and Booth began to ſuſpect, that Trent was very little better than a ſcoundrel.

CHAP. VIII.

Contains a letter, and other matters.

WE will now return to Amelia; to whom, im-mediately upon her huſband's departure to walk with Mr. Trent, a porter brought the follow-ing letter; which ſhe immediately opened and read.

'MADAM,

'THE quick diſpatch which I have given to 'your firſt commands, will, I hope, aſſure you 'of the diligence with which I ſhall always obey every 'command that you are pleaſed to honour me with. 'I have indeed, in this trifling affair, acted as if 'my life itſelf had been at ſtake; nay, I know not 'but it may be ſo: for this inſignificant matter you

'was

'was pleaſed to tell me, would oblige the charming 'perſon in whoſe power is not only my happineſs, 'but, as I am well perſuaded, my life too. Let me 'reap therefore ſome little advantage in your eyes, as 'you have in mine, from this trifling occaſion: for if 'any thing could add to the charms of which you are 'miſtreſs, it would be perhaps that amiable zeal with 'which you maintain the cauſe of your friend. I 'hope, indeed, ſhe will be my friend and advocate 'with the moſt lovely of her ſex, as I think ſhe hath 'reaſon, and as you was pleaſed to inſinuate ſhe had 'been. Let me beſeech you, madam, let not that 'dear heart, whoſe tenderneſs is ſo inclined to com-'paſſionate the miſeries of others, be hardened only 'againſt the ſufferings which itſelf occaſions. Let not 'that man alone have reaſon to think you cruel, who, 'of all others, would do the moſt to procure your 'kindneſs. How often have I lived over in my re-'flexions, in my dreams, thoſe two ſhort minutes we 'were together? But alas! how faint are theſe mi-'micries of the imagination! What would I not 'give to purchaſe the reality of ſuch another bleſſing! 'This, madam, is in your power, to beſtow on the 'man who hath no wiſh, no will, no fortune, no 'heart, no life, but what are at your diſpoſal. Grant 'me only the favour to be at Lady ——'s aſſembly. '—— You can have nothing to fear from indulging 'me with a moment's ſight, a moment's converſa-'tion; I will aſk no more. I know your delicacy, 'and had rather die than offend it. Could I have ſeen 'you ſometimes, I believe the fear of offending you 'would have kept my love for ever buried in my own 'boſom; but, to be totally excluded even from the 'ſight of what my ſoul doats on, is what I cannot 'bear. It is that alone which hath extorted the fatal 'ſecret from me. Let that obtain your forgiveneſs for 'me. I need not ſign this letter, otherwiſe than 'with that impreſſion of my heart which I hope it 'bears; and, to conclude it in any form, no lan-'guage hath words of devotion ſtrong enough to tell 'you with what truth, what anguiſh, what zeal, what 'adoration, I love you.'

Amelia had juſt ſtrength to hold out to the end, when her trembling grew ſo violent, that ſhe dropt the letter, and had probably dropt herſelf, had not Mrs. Atkinſon come timely in to ſupport her.

'Good Heavens!' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'what is 'the matter with you, madam?'

'I know not what is the matter,' cries Amelia; 'but I have received a letter at laſt from that infa- 'mous colonel.'

'You will take my opinion again then, I hope, 'madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon. 'But don't be ſo af- 'fected; the letter cannot eat you, or run away with 'you.—Here it lies, I ſee; will you give me leave 'to read it?'

'Read it with all my heart,' cries Amelia, 'and 'give me your advice how to act; for I am almoſt 'diſtracted.'

'Hey day!' ſays Mrs. Atkinſon, 'here is a piece of 'parchment too———What is that?' In truth, this parchment had dropt from the letter when Amelia firſt opened it: but her attention was ſo fixed by the contents of the letter itſelf, that ſhe had never read the other. Mrs. Atkinſon had now opened the parchment firſt; and, after a moment's peruſal, the fire flaſhed from her eyes, and the blood fluſhed into her cheeks, and ſhe cried out in a rapture, 'It is a 'commiſſion for my huſband; upon my ſoul, it is a 'commiſſion for my huſband;' and at the ſame time began to jump about the room, in a kind of frantic fit of joy.

'What can be the meaning of all this?' cries Amelia, under the higheſt degree of aſtoniſhment.

'Do not I tell you, my dear madam,' cried ſhe, 'that it is a commiſſion for my huſband; and can you 'wonder at my being overjoyed at what I know will 'make him ſo happy?—And now it is all out. The 'letter is not from the colonel, but from that noble 'Lord of whom I have told you ſo much. But in- 'deed, madam, I have ſome pardons to aſk of you.— 'However, I know your goodneſs, and I will tell 'you all.'

'You

'You are to know then, madam, that I had not been in the opera-houſe ſix minutes before a maſque came up, and taking me by the hand, led me aſide. I gave the maſque my hand; and ſeeing a lady at that time lay hold on Capt. Booth, I took that opportunity of ſlipping away from him: for though by the help of the ſqueaking voice, and by attempting to mimic yours, I had pretty well diſguiſed my own, I was ſtill afraid, if I had much converſation with your huſband, he would diſcover me. I walked therefore away with this maſque to the upper end of the fartheſt room, where we ſat down in a corner together. He preſently diſcovered to me, that he took me for you; and I ſoon after found out who he was: indeed, ſo far from attempting to diſguiſe himſelf, he ſpoke in his own voice, and in his own perſon. He now began to make very violent love to me; but it was rather in the ſtile of a great man of the preſent age, than of an Arcadian ſwain. In ſhort, he laid his whole fortune at my feet, and bade me make whatever terms I pleaſed, either for myſelf or for others. By others, I ſuppoſe, he meant your huſband. This, however, put a thought into my head, of turning the preſent occaſion to advantage. I told him, there were two kinds of perſons, the fallaciouſneſs of whoſe promiſes had become proverbial in the world. Theſe were lovers, and great men. What reliance then could I have on the promiſe of one, who united in himſelf both thoſe characters? That I had ſeen a melancholy inſtance, in a very worthy woman of my acquaintance (meaning myſelf, madam) of his want of generoſity. I ſaid, I knew the obligations that he had to his woman, and the injuries he had done her: all which I was convinced ſhe forgave: for that ſhe had laid the handſomeſt things in the world of him to me. He anſwered, that he thought he had not been deficient in generoſity to this lady (for I explain'd to him whom I meant); but that indeed, if ſhe had ſpoke well of him to me (meaning yourſelf, madam) he would not fail to reward her for ſuch an obligation. I then told him ſhe had married a very

'deſerving man, who had ſerved long in the army 'abroad as a private man, and who was a ſerjeant in 'the guards; that I knew it was ſo very eaſy for him 'to get him a commiſſion, that I ſhould not think he 'had any honour or goodneſs in the world, if he neg-'lected it. I declared this ſtep muſt be a preliminary 'to any good opinion he muſt ever hope for of mine. 'I then profeſſed the greateſt friendſhip to that lady '(in which I am convinced you will think me ſerious) 'and aſſured him he would give me one of the high-'eſt pleaſures, in letting me be the inſtrument of doing 'her ſuch a ſervice. He promiſed me in a moment to 'do what you ſee, madam, he hath ſince done. And 'to you I ſhall always think myſelf indebted for it.'

'I know not how you are indebted to me,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, I am very glad of any good for-'tune that can attend poor Atkinſon: but I wiſh it 'had been obtained ſome other way. Good Heavens! 'what muſt be the conſequence of this? What muſt 'this Lord think of me, for liſtening to his mention 'of love; nay, for making any terms with him? for 'what muſt he ſuppoſe thoſe terms mean? Indeed, 'Mrs. Atkinſon, you carried it a great deal too far. 'No wonder he had the aſſurance to write to me in 'the manner he hath done. It is too plain what he 'conceives of me, and who knows what he may 'ſay to others. You may have blown up my re-'putation by your behaviour.'

'How is that poſſible?' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon, 'Is it not in my power to clear up all matters? If 'you will but give me leave to make an appointment 'in your name, I will meet him myſelf, and declare 'the whole ſecret to him.'

'I will conſent to no ſuch appointment,' cries Amelia. 'I am heartily ſorry I ever conſented to 'practiſe any deceit. I plainly ſee the truth of what 'Dr. Harriſon hath often told me, that if one ſteps 'ever ſo little out of the way of virtue and innocence, 'we know not how we may ſlide; for all the ways of 'vice are a ſlippery deſcent.'

'That ſentiment,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'is much 'older than Dr. Harriſon. *Omne vitium in proclivi eſt.*'

'However

'However new or old it is, I find it is true,' cries Amelia.——'But pray, tell me all, though I tremble to hear it.'

'Indeed, my dear friend,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you are terrified at nothing—Indeed, indeed, you are too great a prude.'

'I do not know what you mean by prudery,' anſwered Amelia. 'I ſhall never be aſhamed of the ſtricteſt regard to decency, to reputation, and to that honour in which the deareſt of all human creatures hath his ſhare. But pray give me the letter, there is an expreſſion in it which alarmed me when I read it.—Pray, what doth he mean by his two ſhort minutes, and by purchaſing the reality of ſuch another bleſſing?'

'Indeed, I know not what he means by two minutes,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'unleſs he calls two hours ſo; for we were not together much leſs.—And as for any bleſſing he had—I am a ſtranger to it. Sure, I hope you have a better opinion of me, than to think I granted him the laſt favour.'

'I don't know what favours you granted him, madam, anſwered Amelia peeviſhly; but I am ſorry you granted him any in my name.'

'Upon my word,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you uſe me unkindly—and it is an uſage I did not expect at your hands; nor do I know that I have deſerved it. I am ſure I went to the maſquerade with no other view than to oblige you; nor did I ſay or do any thing there which any woman, who is not the moſt confounded prude upon earth, would have ſtarted at on a much leſs occaſion than what induced me. Well, I declare upon my ſoul then, that, if I was a man, rather than be married to a woman who makes ſuch a fuſs with her virtue, I would wiſh my wife was without ſuch a troubleſome companion.'

'Very poſſibly, madam, theſe may be your ſentiments,' cries Amelia; 'and I hope they are the ſentiments of your huſband.'

'I deſire, madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you would not reflect on my huſband. He is as worthy a

'man,

'man, and as brave a man as yours; yes, madam, 'and he is now as much a captain.'

She ſpoke thoſe words with ſo loud a voice, that Atkinſon, who was accidentally going up ſtairs, heard them; and, being ſurpriſed at the angry tone of his wife's voice, he entered the room, and with a look of much aſtoniſhment, begged to know what was the matter.

'The matter, my dear,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'is 'that I have got a commiſſion for you, and your good 'old friend here is angry with me for getting it.'

'I have not ſpirits enow,' cries Amelia, 'to an-'ſwer you as you deſerve; and, if I had, you are be-'low my anger.'

'I do not know, Mrs. Booth,' anſwered the other, 'whence this great ſuperiority over me is derived; 'but, if your virtue gives it you, I would have you 'to know, madam, that I deſpiſe a prude, as much 'as you can do a ——.

'Though you have ſeveral times,' cries Amelia, 'inſulted me with that word, I ſcorn to give you any 'ill language in return. If you deſerve any bad ap-'pellation, you know it, without my telling it you.'

Poor Atkinſon, who was more frightened than he had ever been in his life, did all he could to procure peace. He fell upon his knees to his wife, and begged her to compoſe herſelf; for, indeed, ſhe ſeemed to be in a moſt furious rage.

While he was in this poſture, Booth, who had knocked ſo gently at the door, for fear of diſturbing his wife, that he had not been heard in the tempeſt, came into the room. The moment Amelia ſaw him, the tears, which had been gathering for ſome time, burſt in a torrent from her eyes, which, however, ſhe endeavoured to conceal with her handkerchief. The entry of Booth turned all in an inſtant into a ſilent picture; in which, the firſt figure which ſtruck the eyes of the captain, was the ſerjeant on his knees to his wife.

Booth immediately cried—'What's the meaning 'of this?'—but received no anſwer. He then caſt his eyes towards Amelia; and plainly diſcerning her con-

dition,

ition, he ran to her, and in a very tender phraſe egged to know what was the matter. To which ſhe nſwered,—'Nothing, my dear, nothing, my dear, nothing of any conſequence.' He replied—that he vould know; and then turned to Atkinſon, and aſked he ſame queſtion.'

Atkinſon anſwered, 'Upon my hononr, ſir, I 'know nothing of it.———Something hath paſſed 'between madam and my wife; but what it is, I 'know no more than your honour.'

'Your wife,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'hath uſed me 'cruelly ill, Mr. Booth. If you muſt be ſatisfied, 'that is the whole matter.'

Booth rapt out a great oath, and cried, 'It is 'impoſſible; my wife is not capable of uſing any 'one ill.'

Amelia then caſt herſelf upon her knees to her huſband, and cried, 'For Heaven's ſake, do not throw 'yourſelf into a paſſion—Some few words have paſt— 'Perhaps I may be in the wrong.'

'Damnation ſeize me, if I think ſo, cries Booth. 'And I wiſh whoever hath drawn theſe tears from 'your eyes, may pay it with as many drops of their 'heart's blood'

'You ſee, madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you 'have your bully to take your part; ſo, I ſuppoſe, 'you will uſe your triumph.'

Amelia made no anſwer; but ſtill kept hold of Booth, who, in a violent rage, cried out,——'My 'Amelia triumph over ſuch a wretch as thee!—— 'What can lead thy inſolence to ſuch preſumption? 'Serjeant, I deſire you'll take that monſter out of the 'room, or I cannot anſwer for myſelf.'

The ſerjeant was beginning to beg his wife to retire, (for he perceived very plainly, that ſhe had, as the phraſe is, taken a ſip too much that evening) when, with a rage little ſhort of madneſs, ſhe cried out,— 'And do you tamely ſee me inſulted in ſuch a manner 'now that you are a gentleman and upon a footing 'with him?'

'It is lucky for us all, perhaps,' anſwered Booth, 'that he is not my equal.'

'You

'You lie, ſirrah,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'he is every 'way your equal; he is as good a gentleman as your-'ſelf, and as much an officer.——No, I retract what 'I ſay—he hath not the ſpirit of a gentleman, nor of 'a man neither—or he would not bear to ſee his wife 'inſulted.'

'Let me beg of you, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, 'to go with me and compoſe yourſelf.'

'Go with thee, thou wretch,'——cries ſhe, look-ing with the utmoſt diſdain upon him,——'no, nor 'ever ſpeak to thee more.'——At which words ſhe burſt out of the room: and the ſerjeant, without ſay-ing a word, followed her.

A very tender and pathetic ſcene now paſſed be-tween Booth and his wife, in which, when ſhe was a little compoſed, ſhe related to him the whole ſtory. For beſides that it was not poſſible for her otherwiſe to account for the quarrel which he had ſeen, Booth was now poſſeſſed of the letter that lay on the floor.

Amelia having emptied her mind to her huſband, and obtained his faithful promiſe that he would not reſent the affair to my lord, was pretty well compoſed, and began to relent a little towards Mrs. Atkinſon; but Booth was ſo highly incenſed with her, that he declared he would leave her houſe the next morning; which they both accordingly did, and immediately ac-commodated themſelves with convenient apartments within a few doors of their friend the doctor.

CHAP. IX.

Containing ſome things worthy obſervation.

NOtwithſtanding the exchange of his lodgings, Booth did not forget to ſend an excuſe to Mr. Trent, of whoſe converſation he had taken a full ſur-feit the preceding evening.

That day in his walks, Booth met with an old bro-ther-officer, who had ſerved with him at Gibraltar, and was on half-pay as well as himſelf. He had not, indeed, had the fortune of being broke with his regi-ment, as was Booth; but had gone out, as they call it,

on

on half-pay as a lieutenant, a rank to which he had riſen in five and thirty years.

This honeſt gentleman, after ſome diſcourſe with Booth, deſired him to lend him half a crown; which he aſſured him he would faithfully pay the next day, when he was to receive ſome money for his ſiſter. This ſiſter was the widow of an officer that had been killed in the ſea-ſervice; and ſhe and her brother lived together, on their joint-ſtock, out of which, they maintained likewiſe an old mother, and two of the ſiſter's children, the eldeſt of which was about nine years old.

'You muſt know,' ſaid the old lieutenant, 'I have 'been diſappointed this morning by an old ſcoundrel, 'who wanted fifteen per cent. for advancing my ſiſ-'ter's penſion; but I have now got an honeſt fellow, 'who hath promiſed it me to-morrow, at ten per 'cent.'

'And enough too of all conſcience,' cries Booth.

'Why, indeed, I think ſo too,' anſwered the other, 'conſidering it is ſure to be paid one time or other. 'To ſay the truth, it is a little hard the government 'doth not pay thoſe penſions better; for my ſiſter's 'hath been due almoſt theſe two years; that is my 'way of thinking.'

Booth anſwered he was aſhamed to refuſe him ſuch a ſum; but, 'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid he, 'I have not a 'ſingle half-penny in my pocket; for I am in a worſe 'condition, if poſſible, than yourſelf; for I have loſt 'all my money, and what is worſe, I owe Mr. Trent, 'whom you remember at Gibraltar, fifty pounds.

'Remember him! yes, d—n him, I remember him 'very well,' cries the old gentleman, 'though he 'will not remember me. He is grown ſo great now, 'that he will not ſpeak to his old acquaintance; and 'yet I ſhould be aſhamed of myſelf to be great in ſuch 'a manner.'

'What manner do you mean?' cries Booth a little eagerly.

'Why, pimping,' anſwered the other. 'He is 'pimp in ordinary to my lord ——, who keeps his 'family; or how the devil he lives elſe I don't know; 'for his place is not worth three hundred pounds a

'year,

'year, and he and his wife ſpend a thouſand at leaſt. 'But ſhe keeps an aſſembly, which, I believe, if you 'was to call a bawdy-houſe, you would not miſ-name 'it. But d—n me, if I had not rather be an honeſt 'man, and walk on foot, with holes in my ſhoes, as 'I do now, or go without a dinner, as I and all my 'family will to-day, than ride in a chariot, and feaſt 'by ſuch means. I am honeſt Bob Bound, and always 'will be; that's my way of thinking; and there's no 'man ſhall call me otherwiſe; for if he doth, I will 'knock him down for a lying raſcal; that is my way 'of thinking.'

'And a very good way of thinking too,' cries Booth. 'However, you ſhall not want a dinner to-day; for if 'you will go home with me, I will lend you a crown 'with all my heart.

'Lookee,' ſaid the old man, if it be any wiſe in-'convenient to you, I will not have it; for I will 'never rob another man of his dinner, to eat myſelf '——that is my way of thinking.'

'Pooh,' ſaid Booth, 'never mention ſuch a trifle 'twice between you and me. Beſides, you ſay you 'can pay it me to-morrow; and I promiſe you that 'will be the ſame thing.'

They then walked together to Booth's lodgings, where Booth, from Amelia's pocket, gave his friend double the little ſum he had aſked. Upon which, the old gentleman ſhook him heartily by the hand, and repeating his intention of paying him the next day, made the beſt of his way to a butcher's, whence he carried off a leg of mutton to a family that had lately kept Lent without any religious merit.

When he was gone, Amelia aſked her huſband who that old gentleman was. Booth anſwered, he was one of the ſcandals of his country. That the duke of Marlborough had about thirty years before made him an enſign from a private man, for very particular merit; and that he had not long ſince gone out of the army with a broken heart, upon having ſeveral boys put over his head. He then gave her an account of his family, which he had heard from the old gentle-

man

man in their way to his houſe, and with which we have already in a conciſe manner acquainted the reader.

'Good Heavens!' cries Amelia, 'what are our 'great men made of! are they in reality a diſtinct 'ſpecies from the reſt of mankind? are they born 'without hearts?'

'One would indeed ſometimes,' cries Booth, 'be 'inclined to think ſo. In truth, they have no per-'fect idea of thoſe common diſtreſſes of mankind 'which are far removed from their own ſphere. Com-'paſſion, if thoroughly examined, will, I believe, ap-'pear to be the fellow-feeling only of men of the ſame 'rank and degree of life for one another, on account 'of the evils to which they themſelves are liable. Our 'ſenſations are, I am afraid, very cold towards thoſe 'who are at a great diſtance from us, and whoſe cala-'mities can conſequently never reach us.

'I remember,' cries Amelia, 'a ſentiment of Dr. 'Harriſon's, which he told me was in ſome Latin 'book; *I am a man myſelf, and my heart is intereſted in 'whatever can befal the reſt of mankind.* That is the 'ſentiment of a good man, and whoever thinks other-'wiſe is a bad one.'

'I have often told you, my dear Emily,' cries Booth, 'that all men, as well the beſt as the worſt, 'act alike from the principle of ſelf-love. Where 'benevolence therefore is the uppermoſt paſſion, ſelf-'love directs you to gratify it by doing good, and by 'relieving the diſtreſſes of others; for they are then 'in reality your own. But where ambition, avarice, 'pride, or any other paſſion, governs the man, and 'keeps his benevolence down, the miſeries of all 'other men affect him no more than they would a 'ſtock or a ſtone. And thus the man and his ſtatue 'have often the ſame degree of feeling or compaſſion.

'I have often wiſhed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'to 'hear you converſe with Dr. Harriſon on this ſubject; 'for I am ſure he would convince you, though I can't, 'that there are really ſuch things as religion and 'virtue.'

This was not the firſt hint of this kind which Amelia had given; for ſhe ſometimes apprehended

from

from his diſcourſe that he was little better than an atheiſt. A conſideration which did not diminiſh her affection for him; but gave her great uneaſineſs. On all ſuch occaſions, Booth immediately turned the diſcourſe to ſome other ſubject; for though he had in other points a great opinion of his wife's capacity; yet as a divine or a philoſopher, he did not hold her in a very reſpectable light, nor did he lay any great ſtreſs on her ſentiments in ſuch matters. He now therefore gave a ſpeedy turn to the converſation, and began to talk of affairs below the dignity of this hiſtory.

MELIA.

BOOK XI.

CHAP. I.

Containing a very polite ſcene.

'E will now look back to ſome perſonages, who, though not the principal characters in ſtory, have yet made too conſiderable a figure in e abruptly dropt. And theſe are colonel James 's lady.

s fond couple never met till dinner the day af- e maſquerade, when they happened to be alone er in an antichamber before the arrival of the the company.

e converſation began with the colonel's ſaying, pe, madam, you got no cold laſt night at the querade.' To which the lady anſwered by much me kind of queſtion.

ey then ſat together near five minutes without ig their mouths to each other. At laſt Mrs. ſaid, 'Pray, ſir, who was that maſque with in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs? How could you ſe yourſelf by walking with ſuch a trollop in lic; for certainly no woman of any figure would ear there in ſuch a dreſs. You know, Mr. es, I never interfere with your affairs; but I ld, methinks, for my own ſake, if I was you, erve a little decency in the face of the world.'

pon my word,' ſaid James, 'I do not know m you mean. A woman in ſuch a dreſs might k to me for ought I know—A thouſand people

'ſpeak

'ſpeak to me at a maſquerade. But I promiſe you, I 'ſpoke to no woman acquaintance there that I know 'of——Indeed, I now recollect there was a woman in 'a dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs; and there was another auk-'ward thing in a blue domino that plagued me a lit-'tle; but I ſoon got rid of them.

'And I ſuppoſe you do not know the lady in the 'blue domino neither?'———

'Not I, I aſſure you,' ſaid James. 'But pray, 'why do you aſk me theſe queſtions? It looks ſo like 'jealouſy.'

'Jealouſy!' cries ſhe, 'I jealous! no, Mr. James, 'I ſhall never be jealous, I promiſe you, eſpecially of 'the lady in the blue domino; for to my knowledge 'ſhe deſpiſes you of all human race.'

'I am heartily glad of it,' ſaid James; 'for I ne-'ver ſaw ſuch a tall aukward monſter in my life.'

'That is a very cruel way of telling me you knew 'me.'——

'You, madam,' ſaid James——'you was in a 'black domino.'

'It is not ſo unuſual a thing, I believe, you your-'ſelf know, to change dreſſes.—I own I did it to diſ-'cover ſome of your tricks. I did not think you 'could have diſtinguiſhed the tall aukward monſter ſo 'well.'

'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid James, 'if it was you, I 'did not even ſuſpect it; ſo you ought not to be of-'fended at what I have ſaid ignorantly.'

'Indeed, ſir,' cries ſhe, 'you cannot offend me 'by any thing you can ſay to my face—no, by my 'ſoul, I deſpiſe you too much. But I wiſh, Mr. 'James, you would not make me the ſubject of your 'converſation amongſt your wenches. I deſire I may 'not be afraid of meeting them for fear of their in-'ſults: that I may not be told by a dirty trollop, 'you make me the ſubject of your wit amongſt 'them, of which, it ſeems, I am the favour-'ite topic. Though you have married a tall auk-'ward monſter, Mr. James, I think ſhe hath a right 'to be treated, as your wife, with reſpect at leaſt—'Indeed, I ſhall never require any more: indeed

Mr. James, I never ſhall.—I think, a wife hath a itle to that.'

'Who told you this, madam?' ſaid James.

'Your ſlut,' ſaid ſhe, 'your wench, your ſhep-erdeſs.'

'By all that's ſacred,' cries James, 'I do not now who the ſhepherdeſs was.'

'By all that's ſacred, then' ſays ſhe—'ſhe told me o—and I am convinced ſhe told me truth.—But I o not wonder at your denying it; for that is equally onſiſtent with honour as to behave in ſuch a man-er to a wife who is a gentlewoman.—I hope you ill allow me that, ſir.——Becauſe I had not quite o great a fortune, I hope you do not think me be-eath you, or that you did me any honour in marry-ng me. I am come of as good a family as your-elf, Mr. James; and if my brother knew how you reated me, he would not bear it.'

'Do you threaten me with your brother, madam?' d James.

'I will not be ill treated, ſir,' anſwered ſhe.

'Nor I neither, madam,' cries he; 'and therefore deſire you will prepare to go into the country to-morrow morning.'

'Indeed, ſir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall not.'

'By Heavens, madam, but you ſhall,' anſwered he; will have my coach at the door to-morrow morn-ng by ſeven; and you ſhall either go into it or be arried.'

'I hope, ſir, you are not in earneſt,' ſaid ſhe.

ndeed, madam,' anſwered he, 'but I am in arneſt, and reſolved; and into the country you go o-morrow.'

'But why into the country,' ſaid ſhe, 'Mr. James? Why will you be ſo barbarous to deny me the plea-ures of the town?'

'Becauſe you interfere with my pleaſures,' cried ies; 'which I have told you long ago I would ot ſubmit to. It is enough for fond couples to have ieſe ſcenes together. I thought we had been upon *better footing*, and had cared too little for each ier to become mutual plagues. I thought you had

'been

'been ſatisfied with the full liberty of doing what you 'pleaſe.'

'So I am; I defy you to ſay I have ever given you 'any uneaſineſs.'

'How,' cries he, 'have you not juſt now upbraided 'me with what you heard at the maſquerade?'

'I own,' ſaid ſhe, 'to be inſulted by ſuch a creature 'to my face ſtung me to the ſoul. I muſt have had no 'ſpirit to bear the inſults of ſuch an animal. Nay, 'ſhe ſpoke of you with equal contempt. Whoever ſhe 'is, I promiſe you, Mr. Booth is her favourite. But, 'indeed, ſhe is unworthy any one's regard: for ſhe 'behaved like an arrant dragoon.'

'Hang her,' cries the colonel, 'I know nothing 'of her.'

'Well, but, Mr. James—I am ſure you will not 'ſend me into the country. Indeed, I will not go 'into the country.'

'If you was a reaſonable woman,' cries James, 'perhaps I ſhould not deſire it.—And on one con-'ſideration'—

'Come, name your conſideration,' ſaid ſhe.

'Let me firſt experience your diſcernment,' ſaid he '———Come, Molly, let me try your judgment. 'Can you gueſs at any woman of your acquaintance 'that I like?'

'Sure,' ſaid ſhe, 'it cannot be Mrs. Booth!'

'And why not Mrs. Booth,' anſwered he? 'Is ſhe 'not the fineſt woman in the world?'

'Very far from it,' replied ſhe, 'in my opinion.'

'Pray what faults,' ſaid he, 'can you find in her?'

'In the firſt place,' cries Mrs. James, 'her eyes 'are too large; and ſhe hath a look with them that I 'don't know how to deſcribe; but I know I don't 'like it. Then her eye-brows are too large; there-'fore, indeed, ſhe doth all in her power to remedy 'this with her pincers: for if it was not for thoſe, her 'eyebrows would be prepoſterous.——Then her noſe, 'as well proportioned as it is, has a viſible ſcar on one 'ſide.——Her neck likewiſe is too protuberant for 'the genteel ſize, eſpecially as ſhe laces herſelf: for 'no woman in my opinion can be genteel who is not

'entirely

entirely flat before. And laſtly, ſhe is both too ſhort and too tall.——Well, you may laugh, Mr. James, I know what I mean, though I cannot well expreſs it.——I mean that ſhe is too tall for a pretty woman, and too ſhort for a fine woman.—— There is ſuch a thing as a kind of inſipid medium—a kind of ſomething that is neither one thing or another. I know not how to expreſs it more clearly; but when I ſay ſuch a one is a pretty woman, a pretty thing, a pretty creature, you know very well I mean a little woman; and when I ſay ſuch a one is a very fine woman, a very fine perſon of a woman, to be ſure I muſt mean a tall woman. Now a woman that is between both, is certainly neither the one nor the other.'

'Well, I own,' ſaid he, 'you have explained yourſelf with great dexterity; but with all theſe imperfections, I cannot help liking her.'

'That you need not tell me, Mr. James,' anſwered the lady; 'for that I knew before you deſired me to invite her to your houſe. And nevertheleſs, did not I, like an obedient wife, comply with your deſires? did I make any objection to the party you propoſed for the maſquerade, though I knew very well your motive? what can the beſt of wives do more? to procure you ſucceſs is not in my power; and if I may give you my opinion, I believe you never will ſucceed with her.'

'Is her virtue ſo very impregnable,' ſaid he, with a ſneer.

'Her virtue,' anſwered Mrs. James, 'hath the beſt guard in the world, which is a moſt violent love for her huſband.'

'All pretence and affectation,' cries the colonel. It is impoſſible ſhe ſhould have ſo little taſte, or, indeed, ſo little delicacy, as to like ſuch a fellow.'

'Nay, I do not much like him myſelf,' ſaid ſhe. — He is not indeed at all ſuch a ſort of man as I ſhould like; but I thought he had been generally allowed to be handſome.'

'He handſome!' cries James. 'What with a noſe like the *proboſcis* of an elephant, with the ſhoulders

'of a porter, and the legs of a chairman? The fel-
'low has not in the leaſt the look of a gentleman;
'and one would rather think he had followed the
'plough than the camp all his life.'

'Nay, now I proteſt,' ſaid ſhe, 'I think you do him
'injuſtice. He is genteel enough, in my opinion.
'It is true, indeed, he is not quite of the moſt deli-
'cate make; but whatever he is, I am convinced ſhe
'thinks him the fineſt man in the world.'

'I cannot believe it,' anſwered he peeviſhly——
'But will you invite her to dinner here to-morrow?'

'With all my heart, and as often as you pleaſe,
anſwered ſhe——'But I have ſome favours to aſk
'of you.——Firſt, I muſt hear no more of going out
'of town till I pleaſe.'

'Very well,' cried he.

'In the next place,' ſaid ſhe, 'I muſt have two hun-
'dred guineas within theſe two or three days.'

'Well—I agree to that too,' anſwered he. 'And
'when I do go out of town, too, I go to Tunbridge—
'I inſiſt upon that; and from Tunbridge I go to Bath
'——poſitively to Bath. And I promiſe you faith-
'fully I will do all in my power to carry Mrs. Booth
'with me.'

'On that condition,' anſwered he, 'I promiſe you
'you ſhall go wherever you pleaſe.——And to ſhew
'you, I will even prevent your wiſhes by my genero-
'ſity, as ſoon as I receive the five thouſand pounds,
'which I am going to take up on one of my eſtates,
'you ſhall have two hundred more.'

She thanked him with a low curteſie; and he was in ſuch good humour, that he offered to kiſs her. To this kiſs ſhe coldly turned her cheek—and then flirting her fan, ſaid——'Mr. James, there is one thing
'I forgot to mention to you—I think you intended to
'get a commiſſion in ſome regiment abroad for this
'young man.——Now if you would take my advice,
'I know this will not oblige his wife; and beſides, I
'am poſitive ſhe reſolves to go with him.—— But if
'you can provide for him in ſome regiment at home,
'I know ſhe will dearly love you for it; and when he
'is ordered to quarters, ſhe will be left behind—and

'Yorkſhire

Yorkſhire or Scotland, I think, is as good a diſtance as either of the Indies.'

'Well, I will do what I can,' anſwered James; 'but I cannot aſk any thing yet; for I got two places of a hundred a year each for two of my footmen, within this fortnight.'

At this inſtant a violent knock at the door ſignified e arrival of their company; upon which, both huſ- and and wife put on their beſt looks to receive their ieſts; and, from their behaviour to each other dur- ig the reſt of the day, a ſtranger might have con- uded he had been in company with the fondeſt cou- le in the univerſe.

CHAP. II.

Matters political.

BEFORE we return to Booth, we will relate a ſcene in which Doctor Harriſon was concerned. This good man, whilſt in the country, happened to e in the neighbourhood of a nobleman of his ac- uaintance, and whom he knew to have very conſi- erable intereſt with the miniſters at that time.

The doctor, who was very well known to this no- leman, took this opportunity of paying him a viſit n order to recommend poor Booth to his favour. Nor lid he much doubt of his ſucceſs, the favour he was to ſk being a very ſmall one, and to which he thought he ſervice of Booth gave him ſo juſt a title.

The doctor's name ſoon gained him an admiſſion to he preſence of this great man, who, indeed, received im with much courteſy and politeneſs; not ſo much erhaps from any particular regard to the ſacred func- on, nor from any reſpect to the doctor's perſonal me- t, as from ſome conſiderations which the reader will erhaps gueſs anon. After many ceremonials, and me previous diſcourſe on different ſubjects, the doc- r opened his buſineſs, and told the great man, that e was come to him to ſolicit a favour for a young ntleman who had been an officer in the army, and as *now on half-pay*. 'All the favour I aſk, my

'lord,' ſaid he, 'is, that this gentleman may be again 'admitted *ad eundem*. I am convinced, your lordſhip 'will do me the juſtice to think I would not aſk for a 'worthleſs perſon; but, indeed, the young man I 'mean has very extraordinary merit. He was at 'the ſiege of Gibraltar, in which he behaved with 'diſtinguiſhed bravery; and was dangerouſly wound-'ed at two ſeveral times in the ſervice of his country. 'I will add, that he is at preſent in great neceſſity, 'and hath a wife and ſeveral children, for whom he 'hath no other means of providing; and if it will re-'commend him further to your lordſhip's favour, his 'wife, I believe, is one of the beſt and worthieſt of all 'her ſex.'

'As to that, my dear doctor,' cries the nobleman, 'I ſhall make no doubt. Indeed, any ſervice I ſhall 'do the gentleman will be upon your account. As to 'neceſſity, it is the plea of ſo many, that it is impoſ-'ſible to ſerve them all.——And with regard to the 'perſonal merit of theſe inferior officers, I believe, I 'need not tell you that it is very little regarded. But 'if you recommend him, let the perſon be what he 'will, I am convinced it will be done: for I know it 'is in your power at preſent to aſk for a greater matter 'than this.'

'I depend entirely upon your lordſhip,' anſwered the doctor.

'Indeed, my worthy friend,' replied the lord, 'I 'will not take a merit to myſelf, which will ſo little 'belong to me. You are to depend on yourſelf. It 'falls out very luckily too at this time when you have 'it in your power ſo greatly to oblige us.'

'What, my lord, is in my power?' cries the doctor.

'You certainly know,' anſwered his lordſhip, 'how 'hard Colonel Trompington is run at your town, in 'the election of a mayor; they tell me, it will be a 'very near thing, unleſs you join us. But we know 'it is in your power to do the buſineſs, and turn the 'ſcale. I heard your name mentioned the other day 'on that account; and I know you may have any 'thing in reaſon, if you will give us your interest.'

Sure, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'you are not in arneſt in aſking my intereſt for the colonel.'

Indeed I am,' anſwered the peer. 'Why ſhould ou doubt it?'

For many reaſons,' anſwered the doctor. 'Firſt, am an old friend and acquaintance of Mr. Fairield, as your lordſhip, I believe, very well knows. 'he little intereſt, therefore, that I have, you may e aſſured, will go in his favour. Indeed, I do not oncern myſelf deeply in theſe affairs: for I do not hink it becomes my cloth ſo to do. But as far as think it decent to intereſt myſelf, it will certainly e on the ſide of Mr. Fairfield. Indeed, I ſhould do o, if I was acquainted with both the gentlemen, nly by reputation: the one being a neighbouring entleman, of a very large eſtate, a very ſober and enſible man, of known probity and attachment to he true intereſt of his country. The other is a mere tranger, a boy, a ſoldier of fortune, and, as far as can diſcern from the little converſation I have had vith him, of a very ſhallow capacity, and no edu-ation.'

'No education! my dear friend,' cries the noble-an. 'Why he hath been educated in half the courts of Europe.'

'Perhaps ſo, my lord,' anſwered the doctor; 'but I ſhall always be ſo great a pedant as to call a man of no learning, a man of no education.——And from my own knowledge, I can aver, that I am perſuaded there is ſcarce a foot ſoldier in the army who is more illiterate than the colonel.'

'Why as to Latin and Greek, you know,' replied e lord, 'they are not much required in the army.'

'It may be ſo,' ſaid the doctor. 'Then let ſuch perſons keep to their own profeſſion. It is a very low civil capacity indeed for which an illiterate man can be qualified. And, to ſpeak a plain truth, if your ordſhip is a friend to the colonel, you would do vell to adviſe him to decline an attempt, in which *am certain he* hath no probability of ſucceſs.'

'*Well, ſir,*' ſaid the lord, 'if you are reſolved againſt *e, I muſt* deal as freely with you, and tell you plainly

'plainly I cannot ſerve you in your affair. Nay,
'will be the beſt thing I can do, to hold my tongu
'for if I ſhould mention his name with your reco
'mendation, after what you have ſaid, he would p
'haps never get provided for as long as he lives.'

'Is his own merit then, my Lord, no recomm
'dation?' cries the doctor.

'My dear, dear ſir,' cries the other—'what is
'merit of a ſubaltern officer?'

'Surely, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'it is the m
'which ſhould recommend him to the poſt of a ſ
'altern officer. And it is a merit which will hereaf
'qualify him to ſerve his country in a higher ca
'city. And I do aſſure you of this young man, t
'he hath not only a good heart, but a good head t
'And I have been told by thoſe who are judges, t
'he is for his age an excellent officer.'

'Very probably!' cries my lord——'And there
'abundance with the ſame merit, and the ſame qu
'fications, who want a morſel of bread for themſel
'and their families.'

'It is an infamous ſcandal on the nation,' cries
doctor; 'and I am heartily ſorry it can be ſaid e
'with a colour of truth.'

'How can it be otherwiſe?' ſays the peer. 'Do
'think it is poſſible to provide for all men of merit

'Yes, ſurely do I,' ſaid the doctor. 'And v
'eaſily too.

'How, pray?'—cries the lord—'Upon my w
'I ſhall be glad to know.'

'Only by not providing for thoſe who have no
'——The men of merit in any capacity are not
'am afraid, ſo extremely numerous, that we n
'ſtarve any of them, unleſs we wickedly ſuffer a ſet
'worthleſs fellows to eat their bread.'

'This is all mere Utopia,' cries his lordſhip. 'T
'chimerical ſyſtem of Plato's commonwealth, w
'which we amuſed ourſelves at the univerſity; pc
'tics which are inconſiſtent with the ſtate of hum
'affairs.'

'Sure, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'we have read
'*ſtates* where ſuch doctrines have been put in practi

'W

hat is your lordſhip's opinion of Rome in the ear-ages of the commonwealth, of Sparta, and even Athens itſelf in ſome periods of its hiſtory?'

ndeed, doctor,' cries the lord, 'all theſe notions obſolete and long ſince exploded. To apply max-s of government drawn from the Greek and Ro-n hiſtories, to this nation, is abſurd and impoſſi-. But if you will have Roman examples, fetch m from thoſe times of the republic that were moſt e our own. Do you not know, doctor, that this is corrupt a nation as ever exiſted under the ſun? id would you think of governing ſuch a people by e ſtrict principles of honour and morality?'

If it be ſo corrupt,' ſaid the doctor, 'I think it is gh time to amend it. Or elſe it is eaſy to foreſee at Roman and Britiſh liberty will have the ſame e; for corruption in the body politic as naturally ads to diſſolution as in the natural body.'

I thank you for your ſimile,' cries my lord: 'for the natural body, I believe, you will allow there the ſeaſon of youth, the ſeaſon of manhood, and e ſeaſon of old age; and that, when the laſt of eſe arrives, it will be an impoſſible attempt by all e means of art to reſtore the body again to its youth, to the vigour of its middle age. The ſame peri-s happen to every great kingdom. In its youth, it es by arts and arms to power and proſperity. is it enjoys and flouriſhes for a while; and then may be ſaid to be in the vigour of its age, en-hed at home with all the emoluments and bleſſings peace, and formidable abroad with all the terrors war. At length, this very proſperity introduces ruption; and then comes on its old age. Virtue l learning, art and induſtry, decay by degrees. e people ſink into ſloth and luxury, and proſtitu-n. It is enervated at home, becomes contempti-abroad; and ſuch indeed is its miſery and wretch-neſs, that it reſembles a man in the laſt decrepit ge of life, who looks with unconcern at his ap-aching diſſolution.'

This is a melancholy picture indeed,' cries the r; 'and if the latter part of it can be applied to

'our caſe, I ſee nothing but religion, which woul
'have prevented this decrepit ſtate of the conſtitu
'tion, ſhould prevent a man of ſpirit from hangin
'himſelf out of the way of ſo wretched a conten
'plation.'

'Why ſo?' ſaid the peer. 'Why, hang myſel
'doctor? would it not be wiſer, think you, to mak
'the beſt of your time, and the moſt you can in ſuch
'nation?'

'And is religion then to be really laid out of t
'queſtion?' cries the doctor.

'If I am to ſpeak my own opinion, ſir,' anſwer
the peer, 'you know I ſhall anſwer in the negative.
'But you are too well acquainted with the world
'be told, that the conduct of politicians is not form
'upon the principles of religion.'

'I am very ſorry for it,' cries the doctor; 'but
'will talk to them then of honour and honeſty: th
'is a language which I hope they will at leaſt prete
'to underſtand. Now to deny a man the preferme
'which he merits, and to give it to another man w
'doth not merit it, is a manifeſt act of injuſtice; a
'is conſequently inconſiſtent with both honour and h
'neſty. Nor is it only an act of injuſtice to the m
'himſelf, but to the public, for whoſe good prin
'pally all public offices are, or ought to be, inſtitute
'Now this good can never be completed, nor obtai
'ed, but by employing all perſons according to th
'capacities. Wherever true merit is liable to be
'perſeded by favour and partiality, and men are i
'truſted with offices, without any regard to capaci
'or integrity, the affairs of that ſtate will always be
'a deplorable ſituation. Such, as Livy tells us, w
'the ſtate of Capua, a little before its final deſtru
'tion; and the conſequence your lordſhip well know
'But, my lord, there is another miſchief which
'tends this kind of injuſtice; and that is, it hath
'manifeſt tendency to deſtroy all virtue and all a
'*lity* among the people, by taking away all that
'*couragement* and incentive, which ſhould prom
'*emulation*, and raiſe men to aim at excelling in
'*art*, *ſcience*, or profeſſion. Nor can any thin

lord, contribute more to render a nation contemptible among its neighbours; for what opinion can other countries have of the councils, or what terror can they conceive of the arms, of ſuch a people? and it was chiefly owing to the avoiding of this error, that Oliver Cromwell carried the reputation of England higher than it ever was at any other time. I will add only one argument more, and that is founded on the moſt narrow and ſelfiſh ſyſtem of politics; and this is, that ſuch a conduct is ſure to create univerſal diſcontent and grumbling at home: for nothing can bring men to reſt ſatisfied, when they ſee others preferred to them, but an opinion that they deſerve that elevation; for, as one of the greateſt men this country ever produced obſerves,

One worthleſs man that gains what he pretends,
Diſguſts a thouſand unpretending friends.'

With what heart-burnings then muſt any nation ſee themſelves obliged to contribute to the ſupport of a ſet of men, of whoſe incapacity to ſerve them they are well appriſed, and who do their country a double diſkindneſs; by being themſelves employed in poſts to which they are unequal, and by keeping others out of thoſe employments, for which they are qualified!'

'And do you really think, doctor, cries the nobleman, 'that any miniſter could ſupport himſelf in this country upon ſuch principles as you recommend? Do you think he would be able to baffle an oppoſition, unleſs he ſhould oblige his friends by conferring places often, contrary to his own inclinations, and his own opinion?'

'Yes, really do I,' cries the doctor. 'Indeed, if a miniſter is reſolved to make good his confeſſion in the liturgy, *by leaving undone all thoſe things which he ought to have done, and by doing all thoſe things which he ought not to have done*; ſuch a miniſter, I grant, will be obliged to baffle oppoſition, as you are plea-

'ſed to term it, by theſe arts; for, as Shakeſpeare 'ſomewhere ſays,

"Things ill begun ſtrengthen themſelves by ill."

'But if, on the contrary, he will pleaſe to conſider 'the true intereſt of his country, and that only in 'great and national points; if he will engage his 'country in neither alliances or quarrels, but where it 'is really intereſted; if he will raiſe no money but 'what is wanted; nor employ any civil or military 'officers but what are uſeful; and place in theſe em-'ployments men of the higheſt integrity, and of the 'greateſt abilities; if he will employ ſome few of his 'hours to advance our trade, and ſome few more to 'regulate our domeſtic government: if he would do 'this, my lord, I will anſwer for it, he ſhall either 'have no oppoſition to baffle, or he ſhall baffle it by 'a fair appeal to his conduct. Such a miniſter may, 'in the language of the law, put himſelf on his coun-'try when he pleaſes, and he ſhall come off with ho-'nour and applauſe.'

'And do you really believe, doctor,' cries the peer, 'there ever was ſuch a miniſter, or ever will be?'

'Why not, my lord?' anſwered the doctor. 'It 'requires no very extraordinary parts, nor any extra-'ordinary degree of virtue. He need practiſe no great 'inſtances of ſelf-denial. He ſhall have power, and 'honour, and riches, and, perhaps, all in a much 'greater degree than he can ever acquire by purſuing 'a contrary ſyſtem. He ſhall have more of each, and 'much more of ſafety.'

'Pray, doctor,' ſaid my lord, 'let me aſk you one 'ſimple queſtion. Do you really believe any man 'upon earth was ever a rogue out of choice?'

'Really, my lord,' ſays the doctor, 'I am aſhamed 'to anſwer in the affirmative; and yet, I am afraid, 'experience would almoſt juſtify me, if I ſhould. 'Perhaps the opinion of the world may ſometimes 'miſlead men to think thoſe meaſures neceſſary, which 'in reality are not ſo. Or the truth may be, that a 'man of good inclinations finds his office filled with

'ſuch

'ſuch corruption by the iniquity of his predeceſſors, 'that he may deſpair of being capable of purging it; 'and ſo ſits down contented, as Augeas did with the 'filth of his ſtables, not becauſe he thought them the 'better, or that ſuch filth was really neceſſary to a 'ſtable; but that he deſpaired of ſufficient force to 'cleanſe them.'

'I will aſk you one queſtion more, and I have done,' ſaid the nobleman. 'Do you imagine that, if any 'miniſter was really as good as you would have him, 'the people in general would believe that he was 'ſo?'

'Truly, my lord,' ſaid the doctor, 'I think they 'may be juſtified in not believing too haſtily. But I 'beg leave to anſwer your lordſhip's queſtion by ano-'ther. Doth your lordſhip believe that the people of 'Greenland, when they ſee the light of the ſun, and 'feel his warmth, after ſo long a ſeaſon of cold and 'darkneſs, will really be perſuaded that he ſhines 'upon them?'

My lord ſmiled at the conceit; and then the doctor took an opportunity to renew his ſuit, to which his lordſhip anſwered he would promiſe nothing, and could give him no hopes of ſucceſs: But you may 'be aſſured,' ſaid he with a leering countenance, 'I 'ſhall do him all the ſervice in my power.' A language which the doctor well underſtood, and ſoon after took a civil, but not a very ceremonious leave.

CHAP. III.

The hiſtory of Mr. Trent.

WE will now return to Mr. Booth and his wife. The former had ſpent his time very uneaſily, ever ſince he had diſcovered what ſort of man he was indebted to; but leſt he ſhould forget it, Mr. Trent thought now proper to remind him, in the following letter, which he read the next morning after he had put off the appointment.

'SIR,

'I AM ſorry the neceſſity of my affairs obliges me 'to mention that ſmall ſum which I had the ho- 'nour to lend you the other night at play; and which 'I ſhall be much obliged to you, if you will let me 'have ſome time either to-day, or to-morrow.

'I am, Sir,
'Your moſt obedient,
'moſt humble ſervant,
'George Trent.'

This letter a little ſurpriſed Booth, after the genteel, and, indeed, as it appeared, generous behaviour of Trent. But leſt it ſhould have the ſame effect upon the reader, we will now proceed to account for this, as well as for ſome other phænomena that have appeared in this hiſtory, and which, perhaps, we ſhall be forgiven, for not having opened more largely before.

Mr. Trent then was a gentleman, poſſibly, of a good family; for it was not certain whence he ſprung on the father's ſide. His mother, who was the only parent he ever knew or heard of, was a ſingle gentlewoman, and for ſome time carried on the trade of a milliner in Covent-Garden. She ſent her ſon, at the age of eight years old, to a charity-ſchool, where he remained till he was of the age of fourteen, without making any great proficiency in learning. Indeed, it is not very probable he ſhould; for the maſter, who, in preference to a very learned and proper man, was choſen by a party into this ſchool, the ſalary of which was upwards of a hundred pounds a year, had himſelf never travelled through the Latin Grammar, and was in truth a moſt conſummate blockhead.

At the age of fifteen, Mr. Trent was put clerk to an attorney, where he remained a very ſhort time before he took leave of his maſter; rather, indeed, departed without taking leave; and having broke *open his* mother's eſcritore, and carried off with him all

all the valuable effects he there found, to the amount of about fifty pound, he marched off to ſea, and went on board a merchantman, whence he was afterwards preſſed into a man of war.

In this ſervice he continued above three years; during which time, he behaved ſo ill in his moral character, that he twice underwent a very ſevere diſcipline for thefts in which he was detected; but at the ſame time, he behaved ſo well as a ſailor in an engagement with ſome pirates, that he wiped off all former ſcores, and greatly recommended himſelf to his captain.

At his return home, being then about twenty years of age, he found that the attorney had in his abſence married his mother, had buried her, and ſecured all her effects, to the amount, as he was informed, of about fifteen hundred pound. Trent applied to his ſtep-father, but to no purpoſe; the attorney utterly diſowned him, nor would he ſuffer him to come a ſecond time within his doors.

It happened that the attorney had, by a former wife, an only daughter, a great favourite, who was about the ſame age with Trent himſelf; and had, during his reſidence at her father's houſe, taken a very great liking to this young fellow, who was extremely handſome, and perfectly well made. This her liking was not, during his abſence, ſo far extinguiſhed, but that it immediately revived on his return. Of this, ſhe took care to give Mr. Trent proper intimation; for ſhe was not one of thoſe backward and delicate ladies, who can die rather than make the firſt overture. Trent was overjoyed at this, and with reaſon; for ſhe was a very lovely girl in her perſon, the only child of a rich father; and the proſpect of ſo complete a revenge on the attorney charmed him above all the reſt. To be as ſhort in the matter as the parties, a marriage was ſoon conſummated between them.

The attorney at firſt raged and was implacable; but at laſt, fondneſs for his daughter ſo far overcame reſentment, that he advanced a ſum of money to buy his ſon-

ſon-in-law (for now he acknowledged himſelf as ſuch) an enſign's commiſſion in a marching regiment then ordered to Gibraltar; at which place, the attorney heartily hoped that Trent might be knocked on the head: for in that caſe he thought he might marry his daughter more agreeably to his own ambition, and to her advantage.

The regiment into which Trent purchaſed, was the ſame with that in which Booth likewiſe ſerved; the one being an enſign, and the other a lieutenant, in the two additional companies.

Trent had no blemiſh in his military capacity. Though he had had but an indifferent education, he was naturally ſenſible and genteel; and nature, as we have ſaid, had given him a very agreeable perſon. He was likewiſe a very bold fellow, and as he really behaved himſelf every way well enough while he was at Gibraltar, there was ſome degree of intimacy between him and Booth.

When the ſiege was over, and the additional companies were again reduced, Trent returned to his wife, who received him with great joy and affection. Soon after this an accident happened, which proved the utter ruin of his father-in-law, and ended in breaking his heart. This was nothing but making a miſtake, pretty common at this day, of writing another man's name to a deed inſtead of his own. In truth, this matter was no leſs than what the law calls forgery; and was juſt then made capital by an act of parliament. From this offence, indeed, the attorney was acquitted by not admitting the proof of the party who was to avoid his own deed, by his evidence; and therefore no witneſs, according to thoſe excellent rules, called the law of evidence; a law very excellently calculated for the preſervation of the lives of his majeſty's roguiſh ſubjects, and moſt notably uſed for that purpoſe.

But though by common law the attorney was honourably acquitted; yet, as Common ſenſe manifeſted to every one that he was guilty, he unhappily loſt his reputation, and of conſequence his buſineſs; the chagrin of which latter ſoon put an end to his life.

This

This proſecution had been attended with a very great expence; for, beſides the ordinary coſts of avoiding the gallows by the help of the law, there was a very high article of no leſs than a thouſand pounds paid down to remove out of the way a witneſs, againſt whom there was no legal exception. The poor gentleman had beſides ſuffered ſome loſſes in buſineſs; ſo that, to the ſurpriſe of all his acquaintance, when his debts were paid, there remained no more than a ſmall eſtate of fourſcore pounds a year, which he ſettled upon his daughter, far out of the reach of her huſband, and about two hundred pounds in money.

The old gentleman had not long been in his grave, before Trent ſet himſelf to conſider ſeriouſly of the ſtate of his affairs. He had lately begun to look on his wife with a much leſs degree of liking and deſire than formerly; for he was one of thoſe who think too much of one thing is good for nothing. Indeed, he had indulged theſe ſpeculations ſo far, that, I believe, his wife, though one of the prettieſt women in town, was the laſt ſubject that he would have choſe for any amorous dalliance.

Many other perſons however, greatly differed from him in this opinion. Amongſt the reſt, was the illuſtrious peer of amorous memory. This noble peer having therefore got a view of Mrs. Trent one day in the ſtreet, did, by means of an emiſſary then with him, make himſelf acquainted with her lodging, to which he immediately laid ſiege in form, ſetting himſelf down in a lodging directly oppoſite to her, from whence the battery of ogles began to play the very next morning.

This ſiege had not continued long before the governor of the garriſon became ſufficiently appriſed of all the works which were carrying on; and having well reconnoitred the enemy, and diſcovered who he was, notwithſtanding a falſe name and ſome diſguiſe of his perſon, he called a council of war within his own breaſt. In fact, to drop all allegory, he began to conſider whether his wife was not really a more valuable poſſeſſion than he had lately thought her. In ſhort, as he had been diſappointed in her fortune, he

now

now conceived ſome hopes of turning her beauty into a fortune.

Without communicating theſe views to her, h ſcraped an acquaintance with his oppoſite neig by the name which he there uſurped, and co feited an entire ignorance of his real name anc On this occaſion, Trent had his diſguiſe likewi he affected the utmoſt ſimplicity; of which affec as he was a very artful fellow, he was ext capable.

The peer fell plump into this ſnare; and wh the ſimplicity, as he imagined, of the huſbar became acquainted with the wife, he was ſo ex gantly charmed with her perſon, that he re whatever was the coſt or the conſequence, he poſſeſs her.

His lordſhip, however, preſerved ſome caut his management of this affair; more, perhaps was neceſſary. As for the huſband, none was ſite; for he knew all he could; and with reg the wife herſelf, as ſhe had, for ſome time, per the decreaſe of her huſband's affection (for few v are, I believe, to be impoſed upon in that matte was not diſpleaſed to find the return of all tha plaiſance and endearment, of thoſe looks an guiſhments, from another agreeable perſon, whi had formerly received from Trent, and which ſ found ſhe ſhould receive from him no longer.

My lord, therefore, having been indulged w much opportunity as he could wiſh from Tren having received rather more encouragement th could well have hoped from the lady, began t pare all matters for a ſtorm; when luckily Mr. declaring he muſt go out of town for two da fixed on the firſt day of his departure as the t carrying his deſign into execution.

And now, after ſome debate with himſelf i manner he ſhould approach his love, he at laſt mined to do it in his own perſon; for he conc *and perhaps* very rightly, that the lady, like S *was not* void of ambition, and would have p *Jupiter in* all his glory to the ſame deity in the

f an humble ſhepherd. He dreſſed himſelf therefore
i the richeſt embroidery of which he was maſter, and
ppeared before his miſtreſs arrayed in all the bright-
eſs of peerage. A ſight whoſe charms ſhe had not
ie power to reſiſt, and the conſequences are only to
e imagined. In ſhort, the ſame ſcene which Jupiter
ted with his above-mentioned miſtreſs of old, was
iore than beginning, when Trent burſt from the clo-
:t into which he had conveyed himſelf, and unkindly
iterrupted the action.

His lordſhip preſently run to his ſword; but Trent,
ith great calmneſs, anſwered, that as it was very
ell known he durſt fight, he ſhould not draw his
word on this occaſion: 'For ſure,' ſays he, 'my
lord, it would be the higheſt imprudence in me to
kill a man who is now become ſo conſiderably my
debtor.' At which words, he fetched a perſon from
he cloſet, who had been confined with him, telling
im he had done his buſineſs, and might now, if he
leaſed, retire.

It would be tedious here to amuſe the reader with
ll that paſſed on the preſent occaſion; the rage and
:nfuſion of the wife, or the perplexity in which my
ord was involved. We will omit therefore all ſuch
natters, and proceed directly to buſineſs, as Trent
nd his lordſhip did ſoon after. And in the conclu-
ion, my lord ſtipulated to pay a good round ſum, and
o provide Mr. Trent with a good place on the firſt
pportunity.

On the ſide of Mr. Trent, were ſtipulated abſolute
emiſſion of all paſt, and full indulgence for the time
o come.

Trent now immediately took a houſe at the polite
nd of the town, furniſhed it elegantly, and ſet up his
quipage, rigged out both himſelf and his wife with
ery handſome cloaths, frequented all public places
vhere he could get admiſſion, puſhed himſelf into ac-
quaintance; and his wife ſoon afterwards began to keep
n aſſembly, or, in the faſhionable phraſe, to be at
ome once a week; when, by my lord's aſſiſtance, ſhe
as preſently viſited by moſt men of the firſt rank, and

by

by all ſuch women of faſhion as are not very nice in their company.

My lord's amour with this lady laſted not long; for, as we have before obſerved, he was the moſt inconſtant of all human race. Mrs. Trent's paſſion was not however of that kind which leads to any very deep reſentment of ſuch fickleneſs. Her paſſion, indeed, was principally founded upon intereſt; ſo that foundation ſerved to ſupport another ſuperſtructure; and ſhe was eaſily prevailed upon, as well as her huſband, to be uſeful to my lord in a capacity, which, though very often exerted in the polite world, hath not, as yet, to my great ſurpriſe, acquired any polite name, or, indeed, any which is not too coarſe to be admitted in this hiſtory.

After this preface, which we thought neceſſary to account for a character of which ſome of my country and collegiate readers might poſſibly doubt the exiſtence, I ſhall proceed to what more immediately regards Mrs. Booth. The reader may be pleaſed to remember that Mr. Trent was preſent at the aſſembly to which Booth and his wife were carried by Mrs. James, and where Amelia was met by the noble peer.

His lordſhip, ſeeing there that Booth and Trent were old acquaintance, failed not, to uſe the language of ſportſmen, to put Trent on upon the ſcent of Amelia. For this purpoſe, that gentleman viſited Booth the very next day, and had purſued him cloſe ever ſince. By his means, therefore, my lord learned that Amelia was to be at the maſquerade, to which place ſhe was dogged by Trent in a ſailor's jacket, who meeting my lord according to agreement, at the entrance of the opera-houſe, like the four-legged gentlemen of the ſame vocation, made a dead point, as it is called, at the game.

My lord was ſo ſatisfied and delighted with his converſation at the maſquerade with the ſuppoſed Amelia, and the encouragement which in reality ſhe had given him, that, when he ſaw Trent the next morning, he embraced him with great fondneſs, gave him a bank note of a hundred pound, and promiſed him both the

Indies

Indies on his ſucceſs, of which he began now to have no manner of doubt.

The affair that happened at the gaming table, was likewiſe a ſcheme of Trent's, on a hint given by my lord to him to endeavour to lead Booth into ſome ſcrape or diſtreſs, his lordſhip promiſing to pay whatever expence Trent might be led into by ſuch means. Upon his lordſhip's credit, therefore, the money lent to Booth was really advanced. And hence aroſe all that ſeeming generoſity, and indifference as to the payment; Trent being ſatisfied with the obligation conferred on Booth, by means of which he hoped to effect his purpoſe.

But now the ſcene was totally changed; for Mrs. Atkinſon, the morning after the quarrel, beginning ſeriouſly to recollect that ſhe had carried the matter rather too far, and might really injure Amelia's reputation, a thought to which the warm purſuit of her own intereſt had a good deal blinded her at the time, reſolved to viſit my lord himſelf, and to let him into the whole ſtory; for, as ſhe had ſucceeded already in her favourite point, ſhe thought ſhe had no reaſon to fear any conſequence of the diſcovery. This reſolution ſhe immediately executed.

Trent came to attend his lordſhip juſt after Mrs. Atkinſon had left him. He found the peer in a very ill humour, and brought no news to comfort or recruit his ſpirits; for he had himſelf juſt received a billet from Booth, with an excuſe for himſelf and his wife, from accepting the invitation at Trent's houſe that evening, where matters had been previouſly concerted for their entertainment; and when his lordſhip was by accident to drop into the room where Amelia was, while Booth was to be engaged at play in another.

And now after much debate, and after Trent had acquainted my lord with the wretched ſituation of Booth's circumſtances, it was reſolved, that Trent ſhould immediately demand his money of Booth, and upon his not paying it, for they both concluded it impoſſible he ſhould pay it, to put the note which Trent had for the money in ſuit againſt him, by the genteel means of paying it away to a nominal third perſon; and this

they

they both conceived muſt end immediately in the ruin of Booth, and conſequently in the conqueſt of Amelia.

In this project, and with this hope, both my lord and his ſetter, or (if the ſportſmen pleaſe) ſetting-dog greatly exulted, and it was next morning executed as we have already ſeen.

CHAP. IV.

Containing ſome diſtreſs.

TRENT's letter drove Booth almoſt to madneſs. To be indebted to ſuch a fellow, at any rate had ſtuck much in his ſtomach, and had given him very great uneaſineſs; but to anſwer this demand in any other manner than by paying the money, was abſolutely what he could not bear. Again, to pay this money, he very plainly ſaw there was but one way; and this was by ſtripping his wife not only of every farthing, but almoſt of every rag ſhe had in the world; a thought ſo dreadful, that it chilled his very ſoul with horror; and yet pride at laſt ſeemed to re preſent this as the leſſer evil of the two.

But how to do this was ſtill a queſtion. It was not ſure, at leaſt he feared it was not, that Amelia her ſelf would readily conſent to this; and ſo far from perſuading her to ſuch a meaſure, he could not bear even to propoſe it. At length, his determination was to acquaint his wife with the whole affair, and to ask her conſent by way of aſking her advice; for he was well aſſured ſhe could find no other means of extricating him out of his dilemma. This he accordingly did repreſenting the affair as bad as he could; though, indeed, it was impoſſible for him to aggravate the real truth.

Amelia heard him patiently, without once interrupting him. When he had finiſhed, ſhe remained ſilent ſome time: indeed, the ſhock ſhe received from this ſtory, almoſt deprived her of the power of ſpeaking. At laſt ſhe anſwered: 'Well, my dear, you have

'a

my advice; I certainly can give you no other than that the money muſt be paid.'

'But how muſt it be paid?' cries he, 'Oh Heavens! thou ſweeteſt creature, what! not once upbraid me for bringing this ruin on thee!'

'Upbraid you, my dear!' ſays ſhe—'Would to Heaven, I could prevent your upbraiding yourſelf. But do not deſpair. I will endeavour by ſome means or other to get you the money.'

'Alas! my dear love,' cries Booth, 'I know the only way by which you can raiſe it. How can I conſent to that? do you forget the fears you ſo lately expreſſed of what would be our wretched condition, when our little all was mouldered away?—Oh, my Amelia, they cut my very heart-ſtrings, when you ſpoke them; for I had then loſt this little all. Indeed, I aſſure you, I have not played ſince, nor ever will more.'

'Keep that reſolution,' ſaid ſhe, 'my dear, and I hope we ſhall yet recover the paſt.'——At which words, caſting her eyes on the children, the tears burſt from her eyes, and ſhe cried——'Heaven will, I hope, provide for us.'

A pathetic ſcene now enſued between the huſband and wife, which would not perhaps pleaſe many readers to ſee drawn at too full a length. It is ſufficient to ſay, that this excellent woman not only uſed her utmoſt endeavours to ſtifle and conceal her own concern, but ſaid and did every thing in her power to allay that of her huſband.

Booth was at this time to meet a perſon whom we have formerly mentioned in the courſe of our hiſtory. This gentleman had a place in the war-office, and pretended to be a man of great intereſt and conſequence; by which means he did not only receive great reſpect and court from the inferiour officers, but actually bubbled ſeveral of their money, by undertaking to do them ſervices, which, in reality, were not within his power. In truth, I have known few great men who have not been beſet with one or more ſuch fellows as theſe, through whom the inferiour part of *mankind are obliged* to make their court to the great

men

men themſelves; by which means, I believe principally, perſons of real merit have been often deterred from the attempt; for theſe ſubaltern coxcombs ever aſſume an equal ſtate with their maſters, and look for an equal degree of reſpect to be-paid to them; to which men of ſpirit, who are in every light their betters, are not eaſily brought to ſubmit. Theſe fellows, indeed, themſelves have a jealous eye towards all great abilities, and are ſure, to the utmoſt of their power, to keep all who are ſo endowed, from the preſence of their maſters. They uſe their maſters, as bad miniſters have ſometimes uſed a prince; they keep all men of merit from his ears, and daily ſacrifice his true honour and intereſt to their own profit, and their own vanity.

As ſoon as Booth was gone to his appointment with this man, Amelia immediately betook herſelf to her buſineſs with the higheſt reſolution. She packed up not only her own little trinkets, and thoſe of the children, but the greateſt part of her own poor cloaths (for ſhe was but barely provided), and then drove in a hackney-coach to the ſame pawn-broker's, who had before been recommended to her by Mrs. Atkinſon: who advanced her the money ſhe deſired.

Being now provided with her ſum, ſhe returned well-pleaſed home; and her huſband coming in ſoon after, ſhe with much chearfulneſs delivered him all the money.

Booth was ſo overjoyed with the proſpect of diſcharging his debt to Trent, that he did not perfectly reflect on the diſtreſs to which his family was now reduced. The good humour which appeared in the countenance of Amelia, was perhaps another help to ſtifle thoſe reflexions; but above all, were the aſſurances he had received from the great man, whom he had met at a coffee-houſe, and who had promiſed to do him all the ſervice in his power; which ſeveral half-pay ſubaltern officers aſſured him was very conſiderable.

With this comfortable news he acquainted his wife, *who either* was, or ſeemed to be extremely well pleaſed *with it.* And now he ſet out with the money

pocket to pay his friend Trent, who unluckily for
ı happened not be at home.
)n his return home, he met his old friend the lieu-
ınt, who thankfully paid him his crown, and in-
d on his going with him and taking part of a bot-
This invitation was ſo eager and preſſing, that
r Booth, who could not reſiſt much importunity,
ıplied.
While they were over this bottle, Booth acquaint-
his friend with the promiſes he had received that
rnoon at the coffee-houſe, with which the old gen-
ıan was very well pleaſed: 'For I have heard,'
he, 'that gentleman hath very powerful in-
reſt;' but he informed him likewiſe, that he had
:d that the great man muſt be touched; for that
ıever did any thing without touching. Of this,
:ed, the great man himſelf had given ſome oblique
s, by ſaying, with great ſagacity and ſlyneſs, that
knew where fifty pound might be depoſited to
:h advantage.
ooth anſwered, that he would very readily advance
ıall ſum, if he had it in his power; but that at
ent it was not ſo; for that he had no more in the
d than the ſum of fifty pounds, which he owed
nt, and which he intended to pay him the next
ning.
It is very right undoubtedly to pay your debts,'
the old gentleman; 'but ſure, on ſuch an oc-
ſion, any man but the rankeſt uſurer would be
ntented to ſtay a little while for his money; and
will be only a little while, I am convinced: for if
ıu depoſite this ſum in the great man's hands, I
ake no doubt but you will ſucceed immediately in
tting your commiſſion; and then I will help you
a method of taking up ſuch a ſum as this.' The
gentleman perſiſted in this advice, and backed it
every argument he could invent; declaring, as
indeed true, that he gave the ſame advice which
ould purſue, was the caſe his own.
ooth long rejected the opinion of his friend; till,
ey had not argued with dry lips, he became
d with wine, and then at laſt the old gentleman

ſucceeded. Indeed, ſuch was his love either for Booth, or for his own opinion, and perhaps for both, that he omitted nothing in his power. He even endeavoured to palliate the character of Trent, and unſaid half what he had before ſaid of that gentleman. In the end he undertook to make Trent eaſy, and to go to him the very next morning for that purpoſe.

Poor Booth at laſt yielded, though with the utmoſt difficulty. Indeed, had he known quite as much of Trent as the reader doth, no motive whatſoever would have prevailed on him to have taken the old gentleman's advice.

CHAP. V.

Containing more wormwood, and other ingredients.

IN the morning, Booth communicated the matter to Amelia, who told him ſhe would not preſume to adviſe him in an affair, of which he was ſo much the better judge.

While Booth remained in a doubtful ſtate what conduct to purſue, Bound came to make him a viſit, and informed him that he had been at Trent's houſe, but found him not at home; adding, that he would pay him a ſecond viſit that very day, and would not reſt till he found him.

Booth was aſhamed to confeſs his wavering reſolution, in an affair in which he had been ſo troubleſome to his friend; he therefore dreſſed himſelf immediately, and together they both went to wait on the little great man, to whom Booth now hoped to pay his court in the moſt effectual manner.

Bound had been longer acquainted with the modern methods of buſineſs than Booth; he adviſed his friend therefore to begin with tipping (as it is called) the great man's ſervant. He did ſo, and by that means got ſpeedy acceſs to the maſter.

The great man received the money, not as a gudgeon doth a bait, but as a pike receives a poor gudgeon into his maw. To ſay the truth, ſuch fellows as theſe may well be likened to that voracious fiſh, which fattens himſelf by devouring all the little inhabi-

of the river. As ſoon as the great man had pocketed the caſh, he ſhook Booth by the hand, and told him he would be ſure to ſlip no opportunity of ſerving him, and would ſend him word as ſoon as any offered.

Here I ſhall ſtop one moment, and ſo, perhaps, will my good-natured reader; for ſurely it muſt be a hard heart, which is not affected, with reflecting on the manner in which this poor little ſum was raiſed, and on the manner in which it was beſtowed. A worthy family, the wife and children of a man who had loſt his blood abroad in the ſervice of his country, parting with their little all, and expoſed to cold and hunger, to pamper ſuch a fellow as this!

And if any ſuch reader, as I mention, ſhould happen to be in reality a great man, and in power, perhaps the horror of this picture may induce him to put a final end to this abominable practice of touching, as it is called; by which indeed a ſet of leaches are permitted to ſuck the blood of the brave and the indigent, of the widow and the orphan.

Booth now returned home, where he found his wife with Mrs. James. Amelia had, before the arrival of her huſband, abſolutely refuſed Mrs. James's invitation to dinner the next day; but when Booth came in, the lady renewed her application, and that in ſo preſſing a manner, that Booth ſeconded her; for though he had enough of jealouſy in his temper, yet ſuch was his friendſhip to the colonel, and ſuch his gratitude to the obligations which he had received from him, that his own unwillingneſs to believe any thing of him, co-operating with Amelia's endeavours to put every thing in the faireſt light, had brought him to acquit his friend of any ill deſign. To this, perhaps, the late affair concerning my lord had morcover contributed: for it ſeems to me, that the ſame paſſion cannot much energize on two different objects at one and the ſame time: an obſervation which I believe will hold as true, with regard to the cruel paſſions of jealouſy and anger, as to the gentle paſſion of love, in which one great and mighty object is ſure to engage *the whole paſſion.*

When Booth grew importunate, Amelia anſwered, 'My dear, I ſhould not refuſe you whatever was in 'my power; but this is abſolutely out of my power; 'for, ſince I muſt declare the truth, I cannot dreſs 'myſelf.'

'Why ſo?' ſaid Mrs. James, 'I am ſure you are 'in good health.'

'Is there no other impediment to dreſſing but want 'of health, madam?' anſwered Amelia.

'Upon my word none that I know of,' replied Mrs. James.

'What do you think of want of cloaths, madam?' ſaid Amelia.

'Ridiculous!' cried Mrs. James. 'What need 'have you to dreſs yourſelf out?—You will ſee no 'body but our own family, and I promiſe you I don't 'expect it.—A plain night-gown will do very well.'

'But if I muſt be plain with you, madam,' ſaid Amelia, 'I have no other cloaths but what I have 'now on my back.——— I have not even a clean ſhift 'in the world; for you muſt know, my dear,' ſaid ſhe to Booth, 'that little Betty is walked off this morning, 'and hath carried all my linen with her.'

'How, my dear,' cries Booth, 'little Betty rob-'bed you!'

'It is even ſo,' anſwered Amelia. Indeed, ſhe ſpoke truth; for little Betty having perceived the evening before that her miſtreſs was moving her goods, was willing to lend all the aſſiſtance in her power, and had accordingly moved off early that morning, taking with her whatever ſhe could lay her hands on.

Booth expreſſed himſelf with ſome paſſion on the occaſion, and ſwore he would make an example of the girl. 'If the little ſlut be above ground,' cried he, 'I will find her out, and bring her to juſtice.'

'I am really ſorry for this accident,' ſaid Mrs. James, 'and (though I know not how to mention it) 'I beg you'll give me leave to lend you any linen of 'mine, till you can make new of your own.'

Amelia thanked Mrs. James, but declined the favour, ſaying, ſhe would do well enough at home; and th

.t as ſhe had no ſervant now to take care of her ildren, ſhe could not, nor would not leave them on y account.

'Then bring maſter and miſs with you,' ſaid Mrs. nes. 'You ſhall poſitively dine with us to-morrow.'

'I beg, madam, you will mention it no more,' d Amelia; 'for, beſides the ſubſtantial reaſons I ıave already given, I have ſome things on my mind ıt preſent which make me unfit for company; and I ım reſolved nothing ſhall prevail on me to ſtir from ıome.'

Mrs. James had carried her invitation already to : very utmoſt limits of good-breeding, if not be- ıd them. She deſiſted therefore from going any ther, and after ſome ſhort ſtay longer took her ve, with many expreſſions of concern, which, how- er, great as it was, left her heart and her mouth ether, before ſhe was out of the houſe.

Booth now declared that he would go in purſuit of tle Betty, againſt whom he vowed ſo much venge- ce, that Amelia endeavoured to moderate his anger repreſenting to him the girl's youth, and that this ıs the firſt fault ſhe had ever been guilty of. 'In- deed,' ſays ſhe, 'I ſhould be very glad to have my things again, and I would have the girl too puniſh- ed in ſome degree, which might poſſibly be for her own good; but I tremble to think of taking away her life:' for Booth in his rage had ſworn he would ng her.

'I know the tenderneſs of your heart, my dear,' d Booth, 'and I love you for it; but I muſt ɔeg leave to diſſent from your opinion. I do not hink the girl in any light an object of mercy. She s not only guilty of diſhoneſty, but of cruelty: for he muſt know our ſituation, and the very little we ıad left. She is beſides guilty of ingratitude to you, vho have treated her with ſo much kindneſs, that ou have rather acted the part of a mother than of a niſtreſs. And ſo far from thinking her youth an *xcuſe, I think it* rather an aggravation. It is true, *ideed, there are* faults which the youth of the *rty very ſtrongly* recommends to our pardon. Such

'are all thoſe which proceed from careleſſneſs, and 'want of thought; but crimes of this black die, 'which are committed with deliberation, and imply 'a bad mind, deſerve a more ſevere puniſhment in a 'young perſon than in one of riper years: for what 'muſt the mind be in old age, which hath acquired 'ſuch a degree of perfection in villainy ſo very early! 'ſuch perſons as theſe it is really a charity to the pub-'lic to put out of the ſociety; and, indeed, a reli-'gious man would put them out of the world for the 'ſake of themſelves; for whoever underſtands any 'thing of human nature muſt know, that ſuch people, 'the longer they live, the more they will accumu-'late vice and wickedneſs.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I cannot argue 'with you on theſe ſubjects. I ſhall always ſubmit 'to your ſuperior judgment, and I know you too 'well to think that you will ever do any thing 'cruel.'

Booth then left Amelia to the care of her children, and went in purſuit of the thief.

CHAP. VI.

A ſcene of the tragic kind.

HE had not been long gone, before a thundering knock was heard at the door of the houſe where Amelia lodged, and preſently after a figure all pale, ghaſtly, and almoſt breathleſs, ruſhed into the room where ſhe then was with her children.

This figure Amelia ſoon recognized to be Mrs. Atkinſon, though, indeed, ſhe was ſo diſguiſed, that at her firſt entrance Amelia ſcarce knew her. Her eyes were ſunk in her head, her hair diſhevelled, and not only her dreſs, but every feature in her face, was in the utmoſt diſorder.

Amelia was greatly ſhocked at this ſight, and the little girl was much frightened; as for the boy, he immediately knew her, and running to Amelia, he cried, 'La! mamma, what is the matter with poor Mrs. 'Atkinſon?'

As

As ſoon as Mrs. Atkinſon recovered her breath, ſhe cried out—— 'O Mrs. Booth, I am the moſt miſera-'ble of women; I have loſt the beſt of huſbands.'

Amelia looking at her with all the tenderneſs imaginable; forgetting, I believe, that there had ever been any quarrel between them,——ſaid —— 'Good 'Heavens, madam, what's the matter?'

'O Mrs. Booth,' anſwered ſhe, 'I fear I have loſt 'my huſband. The doctor ſays, there is but little 'hope of his life. O madam, however I have been 'in the wrong, I am ſure you will forgive me and pity 'me. I am ſure I am ſeverely puniſhed: for to that 'curſed affair I owe all my miſery.'

'Indeed, madam,' cries Amelia, 'I am extremely 'concerned for your misfortune. But pray tell me 'hath any thing happened to the ſerjeant?'

'O madam,' cries ſhe, 'I have the greateſt reaſon 'to fear I ſhall loſe him. The doctor hath almoſt 'given him over.———He ſays he hath ſcarce any 'hopes.———O madam, that evening that the fatal 'quarrel happened between us, my dear captain took 'it ſo to heart, that he ſat up all night and drank a 'whole bottle of brandy.——— Indeed, he ſaid, he 'wiſhed to kill himſelf: for nothing could have hurt 'him ſo much in the world, he ſaid, as to have any 'quarrel between you and me. His concern, and 'what he drank together, threw him into a high fe-'ver.——So that, when I came home from my lord's '—(for indeed, madam, I have been and ſet all to 'rights— your reputation is now in no danger) 'when I came home, I ſay, I found the poor man in 'a raving delirious fit, and in that he hath continued 'ever ſince till about an hour ago, when he came per-'fectly to his ſenſes; but now he ſays he is ſure he 'ſhall die, and begs for Heaven's ſake to ſee you firſt. 'Would you, madam, would you have the goodneſs 'to grant my poor captain's deſire; conſider he is a 'dying man, and neither he nor I ſhall ever aſk 'you a ſecond favour. He ſays he hath ſomething to 'ſay to you that he can mention to no other perſon, 'and that he cannot die in peace unleſs he ſees you.'

'Upon my word, madam,' cries Amelia, 'I 'extremely concerned at what you tell me. I k 'the poor ſerjeant from his infancy, and always 'an affection for him, as I think him to be one of 'beſt-natured and honeſteſt creatures upon earth. 'am ſure, if I could do him any ſervice,——bu 'what uſe can my going be?'——

'Of the higheſt in the world,' anſwered Mrs. kinſon. 'If you knew how earneſtly he entreated 'how his poor breaking heart begged to ſee you, 'would not refuſe.'—

'Nay, I do not abſolutely refuſe,' cries Ame —— 'Something to ſay to me of conſequence, 'that he could not die in peace, unleſs he ſaid it— 'Did he ſay that, Mrs. Atkinſon?'

'Upon my honour he did,' anſwered ſhe, ' 'much more than I have related.'

'Well, I will go with you,' cries Amelia. 'I c 'not gueſs what this ſhould be; but I will go.'

Mrs. Atkinſon then poured out a thouſand bleſſi and thankſgivings; and taking hold of Amelia's ha and eagerly kiſſing it, cried out,—'How could t 'fury paſſion drive me to quarrel with ſuch a cr 'ture?'

Amelia told her ſhe had forgiven and forgot and then calling up the miſtreſs of the houſe, committing to her the care of the children, ſhe clo ed herſelf up as well as ſhe could, and ſet out with M Atkinſon.

When they arrived at the houſe, Mrs. Atkinſon ſ ſhe would go firſt and give the captain ſome noti for that if Amelia entered the room unexpectedly, ſurpriſe might have an ill effect. She left theref Amelia in the parlour, and proceeded directly ſtairs.

Poor Atkinſon, weak and bad as was his con tion, no ſooner heard that Amelia was come, than diſcovered great joy in his countenance, and preſen *afterwards* ſhe was introduced to him.

Atkinſon exerted his utmoſt ſtrength to thank *for this* goodneſs to a dying man (for ſo he c *himſelf)*. He ſaid, he ſhould not have preſu

give her this trouble, had he not had ſomething, which he thought of conſequence, to ſay to her, and which he could not mention to any other perſon. He then deſired his wife to give him a little box, of which he always kept the key himſelf, and afterwards begged her to leave the room for a few minutes; at which, neither ſhe, nor Amelia, expreſſed any diſſatisfaction.

When he was alone with Amelia, he ſpoke as follows: 'This, madam, is the laſt time my eyes will ever behold what——Do pardon me, madam, I will never offend you more.'——Here he ſunk down in his bed, and the tears guſhed from his eyes.

'Why ſhould you fear to offend me, Joe?' ſaid Amelia. 'I am ſure, you never did any thing willingly to offend me.'

'No, madam,' anſwered he, 'I would die a thouſand times, before I would have ventured it in the ſmalleſt matter. But—I cannot ſpeak—and yet I muſt. You cannot pardon me, and yet, perhaps, as I am a dying man, and never ſhall ſee you more. —Indeed, if I was to live after this diſcovery, I ſhould never dare to look you in the face again—and yet, madam, to think I ſhall never ſee you more is worſe than ten thouſand deaths.'

'Indeed, Mr. Atkinſon,' cries Amelia, bluſhing, and looking down on the floor, 'I muſt not hear you talk in this manner. If you have any thing to ſay, tell it me, and do not be afraid of my anger; for I think I may promiſe to forgive whatever it was poſſible you ſhould do.'

'Here then, madam,' ſaid he, 'is your picture; I ſtole it when I was eighteen years of age, and have kept it ever ſince. It is ſet in gold, with three little diamonds; and yet I can truly ſay, it was not the gold nor the diamonds which I ſtole—It was that face, which, if I had been the emperor of the world—'

'I muſt not hear any more of this;' ſaid ſhe—*comfort yourſelf*, Joe, and think no more of this *matter. Be aſſured*, I freely and heartily forgive

doing—well—there—. She then carefully
her hand, which he put gently to his lips,
preſently let it drop, and fell back into the
Amelia now ſummoned Mrs. Atkinſon,
indeed no further off than juſt without the d
then haſtened down ſtairs and called for a g
of water, which having drank off, ſhe thre
into a chair, and the tears ran plentifully fro
with compaſſion for the poor wretch ſhe had j
his bed.

To ſay the truth, without any injury to he
that heart which had ſtood firm as a rock t
attacks of title and equipage, of finery and
and which all the treaſures of the univerſe
have purchaſed, was yet a little ſoftened by
honeſt, modeſt, involuntary, delicate, heroic
this poor and humble ſwain: for whom, in
herſelf, ſhe felt a momentary tenderneſs
placence, at which Booth, if he had known
perhaps have been diſpleaſed.

Having ſtaid ſome time in the parlour,
finding Mrs. Atkinſon come down, (for i
huſband was then ſo bad ſhe could not quit h
He left a meſſage with the maid of the hou

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr. Booth meets with more than one adventure.

BOOTH having hunted about for two hours, at laſt ſaw a young lady in a tattered ſilk gown, ſtepping out of a ſhop in Monmouth-Street into a hackney coach. This lady, notwithſtanding the diſguiſe of her dreſs, he preſently diſcovered to be no other than little Betty.

He inſtantly gave the alarm of 'ſtop thief, ſtop coach;' upon which, Mrs. Betty was immediately ſtopt in her vehicle, and Booth and his myrmidons laid hold of her.

The girl no ſooner found that ſhe was ſeized by her maſter, than the conſciouſneſs of her guilt overpowered her; for ſhe was not yet an experienced offender, and ſhe immediately confeſſed her crime.

She was then carried before a juſtice of the peace, where ſhe was ſearched, and there was found in her poſſeſſion four ſhillings and ſix-pence in money, beſides the ſilk gown, which was indeed proper furniture for Rag-fair, and ſcarce worth a ſingle farthing, though the honeſt ſhop-keeper in Monmouth-ſtreet had ſold it for a crown to this ſimple girl.

The girl being examined by the magiſtrate, ſpoke as follows: 'Indeed, ſir, an't pleaſe your worſhip, 'I am very ſorry for what I have done; and to be 'ſure, an't pleaſe your honour, my lord, it muſt 'have been the devil that put me upon it; for to be 'ſure, pleaſe your majeſty, I never thought upon ſuch 'a thing in my whole life before, any more than I 'did of my dying day; but, indeed, ſir, an't pleaſe 'your worſhip——'

She was running on in this manner, when the juſtice interrupted her, and deſired her to give an account of what ſhe had taken from her maſter, and what ſhe had done with it.

'Indeed, an't pleaſe your majeſty,' ſaid ſhe, 'I 'took no more than two ſhifts of madam's, and I 'pawned them for five ſhillings, which I gave for 'the gown that's upon my back; and as for the mo-

'ney in my pocket, it is every farthing of it my own. 'I am ſure I intended to carry back the ſhifts too as 'ſoon as ever I could get money to take them out.'

The girl having told them where the pawnbroker lived, the juſtice ſent to him, to produce the ſhifts, which he preſently did; for he expected that a warrant to ſearch his houſe would be the conſequence of his refuſal.

The ſhifts being produced, on which the honeſt pawnbroker had lent five ſhillings, appeared plainly to be worth above thirty; indeed, when new, they had coſt much more. So that by their goodneſs, as well as by their ſize, it was certain they could not have belonged to the girl.

Booth grew very warm againſt the pawnbroker. 'I hope, ſir,' ſaid he to the juſtice, 'there is ſome 'puniſhment for this fellow, likewiſe, who ſo plainly 'appears to have known that theſe goods were ſtolen. 'The ſhops of theſe fellows may indeed be called the 'fountains of theft; for it is in reality the encouragement which they meet with from theſe receivers of 'their goods that induces men very often to become 'thieves; ſo that theſe deſerve equal, if not ſeverer 'puniſhment than the thieves themſelves.'

The pawnbroker proteſted his innocence; and denied the taking in the ſhifts. Indeed, in this he ſpoke truth; for he had ſlipt into an inner room, as was always his cuſtom on theſe occaſions, and left the little boy to do the buſineſs; by which means he had carried on the trade of receiving ſtolen goods for many years with impunity, and had been twice acquitted at the Old-Baily, though the juggle appeared upon the moſt manifeſt evidence.

As the juſtice was going to ſpeak, he was interrupted by the girl, who falling upon her knees to Booth with many tears, begged his forgiveneſs.

'Indeed, Betty,' cries Booth, 'you do not deſerve 'forgiveneſs; for you know you had very good reaſons why you ſhould not have thought of robbing 'your miſtreſs, particularly at this time. And what 'further aggravates your crime, is, that you have 'robbed the beſt and kindeſt miſtreſs in the world

Nay, you are not only guilty of felony, but of a felonious breach of truſt; for you know very well every thing your miſtreſs had, was intruſted to your care.'

Now it happened by very great accident that the uſtice before whom the girl was brought, underſtood he law. Turning therefore to Booth, he ſaid, 'Do you ſay, ſir, that this girl was intruſted with the ſhifts?'

'Yes, ſir,' ſaid Booth, 'ſhe was intruſted with every thing?'

'And will you ſwear that the goods ſtolen,' ſaid the uſtice, 'are worth forty ſhillings?'

'No, indeed, ſir,' anſwered Booth, 'nor that they are worth thirty either.'

'Then, ſir,' cries the juſtice, 'the girl cannot be guilty of felony.'

'How, ſir,' ſaid Booth, 'is it not a breach of truſt? and is not a breach of truſt felony, and the worſt felony too?'

'No, ſir,' anſwered the juſtice, 'a breach of truſt is no crime in our law, unleſs it be in a ſervant; and then the act of parliament requires the goods taken to be of the value of forty ſhillings.'

'So then a ſervant,' cries Booth, 'may rob his maſter of thirty nine ſhillings whenever he pleaſes, and he can't be puniſhed.'

'If the goods are under his care, he can't,' cries the uſtice.

'I aſk your pardon, ſir,' ſays Booth. 'I do not doubt what you ſay; but ſure this is a very extraordinary law.'

'Perhaps I think ſo too,' ſaid the juſtice; 'but it belongs not to my office to make or to mend laws. My buſineſs is only to execute them. If therefore the caſe be as you ſay, I muſt diſcharge the girl.'

'I hope, however, you will puniſh the pawnbroker,' cries Booth.

'If the girl is diſcharged,' cries the juſtice, 'ſo muſt be the pawnbroker: for if the goods are not ſtolen, he cannot be guilty of receiving them, knowing them to be ſtolen. And beſides, as to his offence, to ſay the truth, I am almoſt weary of proſecuting

'it; for ſuch are the difficulties laid in the way of 'this proſecution, that it is almoſt impoſſible to con-'vict any one on it. And to ſpeak my opinion plainly, 'ſuch are the laws, and ſuch the method of proceed-'ing, that one would almoſt think our laws were ra-'ther made for the protection of rogues, than for the 'puniſhment of them.'

Thus ended this examination; the thief and the receiver went about their buſineſs, and Booth departed in order to go home to his wife.

In his way home, Booth was met by a lady in a chair; who, immediately upon ſeeing him, ſtopt her chair, bolted out of it, and going directly up to him, ſaid: 'So, Mr. Booth, you have kept your word 'with me.'

This lady was no other than Miſs Matthews, and the ſpeech ſhe meant was of a promiſe made to her at the maſquerade, of viſiting her within a day or two; which, whether he ever intended to keep I cannot ſay, but in truth, the ſeveral accidents that had ſince happened to him, had ſo diſcompoſed his mind, that he had abſolutely forgot it.

Booth however was too ſenſible, and too well bred, to make the excuſe of forgetfulneſs to a lady; nor could he readily find any other. While he ſtood therefore heſitating, and looking not over wiſe, Miſs Matthews ſaid: 'Well, ſir, ſince by your confuſion 'I ſee you have ſome grace left, I will pardon you on 'one condition, and that is, that you will ſup with 'me this night. But if you fail me now, expect all 'the revenge of an injured woman.' She then bound herſelf by a moſt outrageous oath, that ſhe would complain to his wife—— 'And I am ſure,' ſays ſhe, 'ſhe is ſo much a woman of honour, as to do me 'juſtice.—And though I miſcarried in my firſt at-'tempt, be aſſured I will take care of my ſecond.'

Booth aſked what ſhe meant by her firſt attempt; to which ſhe anſwered, that ſhe had already writ his wife an account of his ill uſage of her, but that ſhe was pleaſed it had miſcarried. She then repeated her aſſeverations, that ſhe would now do it effectually if he diſappointed her.

This threat ſhe reckoned would moſt certainly terrify poor Booth; and, indeed, ſhe was not miſtaken; for I believe it would have been impoſſible, by any other menace, or by any other means, to have brought him once even to balance in his mind on this queſtion. But by this threat ſhe prevailed; and Booth promiſed, upon his word and honour, to come to her at the hour ſhe appointed. After which, ſhe took leave of him with a ſqueeze by the hand, and a ſmiling countenance, and walked back to her chair.

But, however ſhe might be pleaſed with having obtained this promiſe, Booth was far from being delighted with the thoughts of having given it. He looked indeed upon the conſequences of this meeting with horror; but as to the conſequence which was ſo apparently intended by the lady, he reſolved againſt it. At length he came to this determination; to go, according to his appointment, to argue the matter with the lady, and to convince her, if poſſible, that from a regard to his honour only, he muſt diſcontinue her acquaintance. If this failed to ſatisfy her, and ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her threats to acquaint his wife with the affair, he then reſolved, whatever pains it coſt him, to communicate the whole truth himſelf to Amelia, from whoſe goodneſs he doubted not but to obtain an abſolute remiſſion.

CHAP. VIII.

In which Amelia appears in a light more amiable than gay.

WE will now return to Amelia, whom we left in ſome perturbation of mind departing from Mrs. Atkinſon.

Though ſhe had before walked through the ſtreets in a very improper dreſs with Mrs. Atkinſon, ſhe was unwilling, eſpecially as ſhe was alone, to return in the ſame manner. Indeed, ſhe was ſcarce able to walk in her preſent condition; for the caſe of poor Atkinſon had much affected her tender heart, and her eyes had overflown with many tears.

It occurred likewiſe to her at preſent, that ſhe had not a ſingle ſhilling in her pocket, or at home, to provide food for herſelf and her family. In this ſituation ſhe reſolved to go immediately to the pawnbroker whither ſhe had gone before, and to depoſite her picture for what ſhe could raiſe upon it. She then immediately took a chair, and put her deſign in execution.

The intrinſic value of the gold, in which this picture was ſet, and of the little diamonds which ſurrounded it, amounted to nine guineas. This therefore was advanced to her, and the prettieſt face in the world (ſuch is often the fate of beauty) was depoſited, as of no value, into the bargain.

When ſhe came home, ſhe found the following letter from Mrs. Atkinſon:

'My deareſt Madam,

'AS I know your goodneſs, I could not delay 'a moment acquainting you with the happy turn 'of my affairs ſince you went. The doctor, on his 'return to-viſit my huſband, has aſſured me, that the 'captain was on the recovery, and in very little dan-'ger; and I really think he is ſince mended. I hope 'to wait on you ſoon with better news. Heaven bleſs 'you, dear madam; and believe me to be, with the 'utmoſt ſincerity,

'Your moſt obliged,
'obedient humble ſervant,
'Atkinſon.'

Amelia was really pleaſed with this letter; and now it being paſt four o'clock, ſhe deſpaired of ſeeing her huſband till the evening. She therefore provided ſome tarts for her children, and then eating nothing but a ſlice of bread and butter herſelf, ſhe began to prepare for the captain's ſupper.

There were two things of which her huſband was particularly fond, which, though it may bring the *ſimplicity* of his taſte into great contempt with ſome of *my readers*, I will venture to name. Theſe were a fowl

fowl and egg ſauce, and mutton broth; both which Amelia immediately purchaſed.

As ſoon as the clock ſtruck ſeven, the good creature went down into the kitchen, and began to exerciſe her talents of cookery, of which ſhe was a great miſtreſs, as ſhe was of every œconomical office, from the higheſt to the loweſt; and as no woman could outſhine her in a drawing-room, ſo none could make the drawing-room itſelf ſhine brighter than Amelia. And if I may ſpeak a bold truth, I queſtion whether it be poſſible to view this fine creature in a more amiable light, than while ſhe was dreſſing her huſband's ſupper with her little children playing round her.

It was now half an hour paſt eight, and the meat almoſt ready, the table likewiſe neatly ſpread with materials borrowed from her landlady, and ſhe began to grow a little uneaſy at Booth's not returning; when a ſudden knock at the door rouſed her ſpirits, and ſhe cried, 'There, my dear, there is your good 'papa;' at which words ſhe darted ſwiftly up ſtairs, and opened the door to her huſband.

She deſired her huſband to walk up into the dining-room, and ſhe would come to him in an inſtant; for ſhe was deſirous to encreaſe his pleaſure, by ſurpriſing him with his two favourite diſhes. She then went down again to the kitchen, where the maid of the houſe undertook to ſend up the ſupper, and ſhe with her children returned to Booth.

He then told her conciſely what had happened, with relation to the girl — To which ſhe ſcarce made any anſwer; but aſked him if he had not dined. He aſſured her he had not eat a morſel the whole day. 'Well,' ſays ſhe, 'my dear, I am a fellow-ſufferer; 'but we ſhall both enjoy our ſupper the more; for I 'have made a little proviſion for you, as I gueſſed 'what might be the caſe. I have got you a bottle of 'wine too. And here is a clean cloth and a ſmiling 'countenance, my dear Will. Indeed, I am in un-'uſual good ſpirits to-night, and I have made a pro-'miſe to the children, which you muſt confirm; I '*have promiſed* to let them ſit up this one night to '*ſupper with us.*——Nay, don't look ſo ſerious; caſt off

'off all uneaſy thoughts—I have a preſent for you 'here—No matter how I came by it.' —— At which words, ſhe put eight guineas into his hand, crying: 'Come, my dear Bill, be gay—Fortune will yet be 'kind to us—at leaſt, let us be happy this night. 'Indeed, the pleaſures of many women, during their 'whole lives, will not amount to my happineſs this 'night, if you will be in good humour.'

Booth fetched a deep ſigh, and cried—'How unhappy 'am I, my dear, that I can't ſup with you to-night!'

As in the delightful month of June, when the ſky is all ſerene, and the whole face of nature looks with a pleaſing and ſmiling aſpect, ſuddenly a dark cloud ſpreads itſelf over the hemiſphere, the ſun vaniſhes from our ſight, and every object is obſcured by a dark and horrid gloom. So happened it to Amelia; the joy that had enlightened every feature diſappeared in a moment; the luſtre forſook her ſhining eyes; and all the little loves, that played and wantoned in her cheeks, hung their drooping heads, and with a faint trembling voice, ſhe repeated her huſband's words: 'Not ſup with me to-night, my dear!'

'Indeed, my dear,' anſwered he, 'I cannot. I 'need not tell you how uneaſy it makes me, or that I 'am as much diſappointed as yourſelf; but I am en-'gaged to ſup abroad. I have abſolutely given my 'honour; and beſides, it is on buſineſs of import-'ance.'

'My dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſay no more. I am con-'vinced you would not willingly ſup from me. I 'own it is a very particular diſappointment to me to-'night, when I had propoſed unuſual pleaſure; but 'the ſame reaſon which is ſufficient to you, ought to 'be ſo to me.'

Booth made his wife a compliment on her ready compliance, and then aſked her, what ſhe intended by giving him that money, or how ſhe came by it.

'I intend, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'to give it you; 'that is all. As to the manner in which I came by it, 'you know, Billy, that is not very material. You 'are well aſſured I got it by no means which would 'diſpleaſe you; and, perhaps, another time I may tell 'you.'

Booth

Booth aſked no farther queſtions; but he returned and inſiſted on her taking all but one guinea, ing, ſhe was the ſafeſt treaſurer. He then promiſ- her to make all the haſte home in his power, and hoped, he ſaid, to be with her in an hour and half fartheſt, and then took his leave.

When he was gone, the poor diſappointed Amelia down to ſupper with her children; with whoſe com- ny ſhe was forced to conſole herſelf for the abſence her huſband.

CHAP. IX.

A very tragic ſcene.

THE clock had ſtruck eleven, and Amelia was juſt proceeding to put her children to bed, ien ſhe heard a knock at the ſtreet door. Upon ich the boy cried out, 'There's papa, mamma, ray let me ſtay and ſee him before I go to bed.' iis was a favour very eaſily obtained; for Amelia tantly ran down ſtairs, exulting in the goodneſs of r huſband for returning ſo ſoon, though half an ur was already elapſed beyond the time in which he omiſed to return.

Poor Amelia was now again diſappointed; for it s not her huſband at the door, but a ſervant with a ter for him, which he delivered into her hands. She mediately returned up ſtairs, and ſaid—'It was not your papa, my dear; but I hope it is one who hath brought us ſome good news.' For Booth had d her, that he hourly expected to receive ſuch from e great man, and had deſired her to open any letter ich came to him in his abſence.

Amelia therefore broke open the letter, and read as lows:

'SIR,

AFTER what hath paſt between us, I need only tell you that I know you ſupped this very night alone with Miſs Matthews: a fact which will upbraid you ſufficiently, without putting me to that

'trouble,

'trouble, and will very well account for my desiring 'the favour of seeing you to-morrow in Hyde-Park at 'six in the morning. You will forgive my remind-'ing you once more how inexcusable this behaviour 'is in you who are possessed in your own wife of the 'most inestimable jewel.

'Yours, &c.

'T. James.

'I shall bring pistols with me.'

It is not easy to describe the agitation of Amelia's mind when she read this letter. She threw herself into her chair, turned as pale as death, began to tremble all over, and had just power enough left to tap the bottle of wine, which she had hitherto preserved entire for her husband, and to drink off a large bumper.

The little boy perceived the strange symptoms which appeared in his mother; and running to her, he cried, 'What's the matter, my dear mamma, you 'don't look well?—No harm hath happened to poor 'papa, I hope—Sure that bad man hath not carried 'him away again,'

Amelia answered, 'No, child, nothing—nothing 'at all.'——And then a large shower of tears came to her assistance; which presently after produced the same in the eyes of both the children.

Amelia, after a short silence, looking tenderly at her children, cried out, 'It is too much, too much to 'bear. Why did I bring these little wretches into 'the world! why were these innocents born to such 'a fate!'—She then threw her arms round them both, (for they were before embracing her knees) and cried, 'O my children! my children, forgive me, my 'babes——Forgive me that I have brought you into 'such a world as this. You are undone—my children 'are undone.'

The little boy answered with great spirit, 'How 'undone, mamma? my sister and I don't care a far-'thing for being undone—Don't cry so upon our ac-'counts—we are both very well; indeed we are—But

'do

do pray tell us. I am ſure ſome accident hath happened to poor papa.'

'Mention him no more,' cries Amelia, 'your papa is—indeed he is a wicked man—he cares not for any of us——O Heavens, is this the happineſs I promiſed myſelf this evening!'——At which words ſhe ell into an agony, holding both her children in her rms.

The maid of the houſe now entered the room, with letter in her hand, which ſhe had received from a orter, whoſe arrival the reader will not wonder to ave been unheard by Amelia in her preſent condition.

The maid, upon her entrance into the room, perceiving the ſituation of Amelia, cried out, 'Good Heavens! madam, what's the matter?' Upon hich, Amelia, who had a little recovered herſelf fter the laſt violent vent of her paſſion, ſtarted up, nd cried —'Nothing, Mrs. Suſan — nothing extraordinary. I am ſubject to theſe fits ſometimes; but I am very well now. Come, my dear children, I am very well again; indeed I am. You muſt now go to bed; Mrs. Suſan will be ſo good as to put you to bed.'

'But why doth not papa love us?' cries the little oy, 'I am ſure we have none of us done any thing to diſoblige him.'

This innocent queſtion of the child ſo ſtung Amelia, iat ſhe had the utmoſt difficulty to prevent a relapſe. lowever ſhe took another dram of wine; for ſo it iight be called to her, who was the moſt temperate f women, and never exceeded three glaſſes on any ccaſion. In this glaſs ſhe drank her children's health, id ſoon after ſo well ſoothed and compoſed them, iat they went quietly away with Mrs. Suſan.

The maid, in the ſhock ſhe had conceived at the elancholy, indeed frightful ſcene, which had prented itſelf to her at her firſt coming into the room, id quite forgot the letter, which ſhe held in her ind. However, juſt at her departure, ſhe recollected , and delivered it to Amelia; who was no ſooner one, than ſhe opened it, and read as follows:

'My

'My deareſt ſweeteſt love,

'I Write this from the bailiff's houſe, where I was 'formerly, and to which I am again brought at 'the ſuit of that villain, Trent. I have the misfor-'tune to think I owe this accident (I mean, that it 'happened to-night) to my own folly, in endeavour-'ing to keep a ſecret from you — O my dear, had I 'had reſolution to confeſs my crime to you, your for-'giveneſs would, I am convinced, have coſt me only 'a few bluſhes, and I had now been happy in your 'arms. Fool that I was, to leave you on ſuch an ac-'count, and to add to a former tranſgreſſion a new 'one.—Yet by Heavens I mean not a tranſgreſſion of 'the like kind; for of that I am not, nor ever will be 'guilty; and when you know the true reaſon of my 'leaving you to-night, I think you will pity, rather 'than upbraid me. I am ſure you would, if you 'knew the compunction with which I left you to go 'to the moſt worthleſs, the moſt infamous———Do 'gueſs the reſt————Gueſs that crime with which 'I cannot ſtain my paper——but ſtill believe me no 'more guilty than I am—or, if it will leſſen your 'vexation at what hath befallen me, believe me as 'guilty as you pleaſe, and think me for a while, at 'leaſt, as undeſerving of you, as I think myſelf. 'This paper and pen are ſo bad, I queſtion whether 'you can read what I write; I almoſt doubt whether 'I wiſh you ſhould. Yet this I will endeavour to 'make as legible as I can——Be comforted, my dear 'love, and ſtill keep up your ſpirits with the hopes of 'better days. The doctor will be in town to-morrow, 'and I truſt on his goodneſs for my delivery once 'more from this place, and that I ſhall ſoon be able 'to repay him. That Heaven may bleſs and preſerve 'you, is the prayer of,

'My deareſt love,

'Your ever fond, affectionate,

'and hereafter faithful huſband,

'W. Booth.'

Amel'

Amelia pretty well gueſſed the obſcure meaning of this letter, which though, at another time, it might have given her unſpeakable torment, was at preſent rather of the medicinal kind, and ſerved to allay her anguiſh. Her anger to Booth too began a little to abate, and was ſoftened by her concern for his misfortune. Upon the whole, however, ſhe paſt a miſerable and ſleepleſs night, her gentle mind torn and diſtracted with various and contending paſſions, diſtreſſed with doubts, and wandering in a kind of twilight, which preſented her only objects of different degrees of horror; and where black deſpair cloſed at a ſmall diſtance the gloomy proſpect.

AMELIA.

BOOK XII.

CHAP. I.

The book begins with polite hiſtory.

BEFORE we return to the miſerable couple, whom we left at the end of the laſt book, we will give our reader the more chearful view of the gay and happy family of Colonel James.

Mrs. James, when ſhe could not, as we have ſeen, prevail with Amelia to accept that invitation, which, at the deſire of the colonel, ſhe had ſo kindly and obediently carried her, returned to her huſband, and acquainted him with the ill ſucceſs of her embaſſy; at which, to ſay the truth, ſhe was almoſt as much diſappointed as the colonel himſelf: for he had not taken a much ſtronger liking to Amelia, than ſhe herſelf had conceived for Booth. This will account for ſome paſſages, which may have a little ſurpriſed the reader in the former chapters of this hiſtory, as we were not then at leiſure to communicate to them a hint of this kind: it was indeed on Mr. Booth's account that ſhe had been at the trouble of changing her dreſs at the maſquerade.

But her paſſions of this ſort, happily for her, were not extremely ſtrong; ſhe was therefore eaſily baulked, and as ſhe met with no encouragement from Booth, ſhe ſoon gave way to the impetuoſity of Miſs Matthews; and from that time ſcarce thought more of the affair, till her huſband's deſign againſt the wife revived *her's* likewiſe; inſomuch, that her paſſion was,

his time, certainly ſtrong enough for Booth, to luce a good hearty hatred for Amelia, whom ſhe abuſed to the colonel in very groſs terms; both he account of her poverty, and her inſolence: for ıe termed the refuſal of all her offers.

'he colonel, ſeeing no hopes of ſoon poſſeſſing his miſtreſs, began, like a prudent and wiſe man, to his thoughts towards the ſecuring his old one. n what his wife had mentioned, concerning the ıviour of the ſhepherdeſs, and particularly her preıce of Booth, he had little doubt but that this was identical Miſs Matthews. He reſolved therefore ıatch her cloſely, in hopes of diſcovering Booth's ıgue with her. In this, beſides the remainder of ıtion which he yet preſerved for that lady, he had her view, as it would give him a fair pretence to rel with Booth; who, by carrying on this intrigue, ld have broke his word and honour given to him. l he began now to hate poor Booth heartily, from ſame reaſon from which Mrs. James had contracted averſion to Amelia.

'he colonel therefore employed an inferior kind of p to watch the lodgings of Miſs Matthews, and to ıaint him if Booth, whoſe perſon was known to pimp, made any viſit there

he pimp faithfully performed his office, and ng laſt night made the wiſhed-for diſcovery, imiately acquainted his maſter with it.

'pon this news, the colonel preſently diſpatched to th the ſhort note which we have before ſeen. He it to his own houſe inſtead of Miſs Matthews's, ı hopes of that very accident which actually did pen. Not that he had any ingredient of the bully im, and deſired to be prevented from fighting, but ı a proſpect of injuring Booth in the affection and m of Amelia, and of recommending himſelf ſomet to her by appearing in the light of her champion; which purpoſe he added that compliment to Amen his letter. He concluded upon the whole, that, ooth himſelf opened the letter, he would certainly t him the next morning; but if his wife ſhould ı it before he came home, it might have the ef-

fects

fects before mentioned; and for his future exp
tian with Booth, it would not be in Amelia's p
prevent it.

Now it happened, that this pimp had more
than one. Amongſt theſe, was the worthy Mr.
for whom he had often done buſineſs of the p
vocation. He had been employed indeed in t
vice of the great peer himſelf, under the dire
the ſaid Trent, and was the very perſon who ha
ed the ſaid Trent in dogging Booth and his
the opera-houſe on the maſquerade night.

This ſubaltern pimp was with his ſuperior
yeſterday morning, when he found a bailiff wi
in order to receive his inſtructions for the a
Booth; when the bailiff ſaid it would be a ve
cult matter to take him; for that, to his knowle
was as ſhy a cock as any in England. The ſu
immediately acquainted Trent with the buſi
which he was employed by the colonel. Upon
Trent enjoined him the moment he had ſet him
immediate notice to the bailiff; which he agr
and performed accordingly.

The bailiff, on receiving the notice, imme
ſet out for his ſtand at an alehouſe within thre
of Miſs Matthews's lodgings. At which, u
nately for poor Booth, he arrived a very few n
before Booth left that lady in order to re
Amelia.

Theſe were ſeveral matters, of which we t
neceſſary our reader ſhould be informed; for,
that it conduces greatly to a perfect underſtan
all hiſtory, there is no exerciſe of the mind of
ble reader more pleaſant than the tracing of the
ſmall and almoſt imperceptible links in every c
events, by which all the great actions of the wo
produced. We will now in the next chapter
with our hiſtory.

CHAP. II.

In which Amelia viſits her huſband.

AMELIA, after much anxious thinking, in which ſhe ſometimes flattered herſelf that her huſband was leſs guilty than ſhe had at firſt imagined him, and that he had ſome good excuſe to make for himſelf (for, indeed, ſhe was not ſo able as willing to make one for him); at length reſolved to ſet out for the bailiff's caſtle. Having therefore ſtrictly recommended the care of her children to her good landlady, ſhe ſent for a hackney-coach, and ordered the coachman to drive to Gray's-Inn-Lane.

When ſhe came to the houſe, and aſked for the captain, the bailiff's wife, who came to the door, gueſſing, by the greatneſs of her beauty and the diſorder of her dreſs, that ſhe was a young lady of pleaſure, anſwered ſurlily, 'Captain! I do not know of any captain 'that is here, not I;' for this good woman was, as well as dame Purgante in Prior, a bitter enemy to all whores, eſpecially to thoſe of the handſome kind; for ſome ſuch ſhe expected to go ſhares with her in a certain property to which the law gave her the ſole right.

Amelia replied, ſhe was certain that Captain Booth was there. 'Well, if he is ſo,' cries the bailiff's wife, 'you may come into the kitchen, if you will— 'and he ſhall be called down to you if you have any 'buſineſs with him.' At the ſame time ſhe muttered ſomething to herſelf, and concluded a little more intelligibly, though ſtill in a muttering voice, that ſhe kept no ſuch houſe.

Amelia, whoſe innocence gave her no ſuſpicion of the true cauſe of this good woman's ſullenneſs, was frightened, and began to fear ſhe knew not what. At laſt ſhe made a ſhift to totter into the kitchen, when the miſtreſs of the houſe aſked her, 'Well, madam, 'who ſhall I tell the captain wants to ſpeak with him?'

'I aſk your pardon, madam,' cries Amelia, 'in 'my confuſion, I really forgot you did not know me. '——tell him, if you pleaſe, that I am his wife.'

'And are you indeed his wife, madam?' cries Mrs. Bailiff, a little ſoftened.

'Yes, indeed, and upon my honour,' anſwers Amelia.

'If this be the caſe,' cries the other, 'you may 'walk up ſtairs, if you pleaſe. Heaven forbid, I 'ſhould part man and wife. Indeed, I think they 'can never be too much together. But I never will 'ſuffer any bad doings in my houſe, nor any of the 'town ladies to come to gentlemen here.'

Amelia anſwered, that ſhe liked her the better; for, indeed, in her preſent diſpoſition, Amelia was as much exaſperated againſt wicked women as the virtuous miſtreſs of the houſe, or any other virtuous woman, could be.

The bailiff's wife then uſhered Amelia up ſtairs, and having unlocked the priſoners doors, cried, 'Cap-'tain, here is your lady, ſir, come to ſee you.' At which words, Booth ſtarted up from his chair, and caught Amelia in his arms, embracing her for a conſiderable time with ſo much rapture, that the bailiff's wife, who was an eye-witneſs of this violent fondneſs, began to ſuſpect whether Amelia had really told her truth. However, ſhe had ſome little awe of the captain, and for fear of being in the wrong did not interfere, but ſhut the door and turned the key.

When Booth found himſelf alone with his wife, and had vented the firſt violence of his rapture in kiſſes and embraces, he looked tenderly at her, and cried, 'Is it poſſible, Amelia, is it poſſible you can have 'this goodneſs to follow ſuch a wretch as me to ſuch 'a place as this?—or do you come to upbraid me with 'my guitt, and to ſink me down to that perdition I ſo 'juſtly deſerve?'

'Am I ſo given to upbraiding then?' ſays ſhe, in a gentle voice; 'have I ever given you occaſion to 'think I would ſink you to perdition?'

'Far be it from me, my love, to think ſo,' anſwered he. 'And yet you may forgive the utmoſt 'fears of an offending, penitent ſinner. I know, in-'deed, the extent of your goodneſs, and yet I know 'my guilt ſo great———'

'Alas

'Alas! Mr. Booth,' ſaid ſhe, 'What guilt is this 'which you mention, and which you writ to me of 'laſt night———Sure, by your mentioning to me ſo 'much, you intend to tell me more, nay, indeed, to 'tell me all—and not leave my mind open to ſuſpi-'cions perhaps ten times worſe than the truth.'

'Will you give me a patient hearing?' ſaid he.

'I will, indeed,' anſwered ſhe; 'nay, I am pre-'pared to hear the worſt you can unfold; nay, per-'haps, the worſt is ſhort of my apprehenſions.'

Booth then, after a little further apology, began and related to her the whole that had paſſed between him and Miſs Matthews, from their firſt meeting in the priſon to their ſeparation the preceding evening. All which, as the reader knows it already, it would be tedious and unpardonable to tranſcribe from his mouth. He told her likewiſe all that he had done and ſuffered, to conceal his tranſgreſſion from her knowledge. This, he aſſured her, was the buſineſs of his viſit laſt night; the conſequence of which was, he declared in the moſt ſolemn manner, no other than an abſolute quarrel with Miſs Matthews, of whom he had taken a final leave.

When he had ended his narration, Amelia, after a ſhort ſilence, anſwered,—'Indeed, I firmly believe 'every word you have ſaid—but I cannot now forgive 'you the fault you have confeſſed—and my reaſon is '—becauſe I have forgiven it long ago. Here, my 'dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'is an inſtance that I am likewiſe 'capable of keeping a ſecret.'——She then delivered her huſband a letter, which ſhe had ſome time ago received from Miſs Matthews, and which was the ſame which that lady had mentioned, and ſuppoſed, as Booth had never heard of it, that it had miſcarried; for ſhe ſent it by the penny-poſt. In this letter, which was ſigned by a feigned name, ſhe had acquainted Amelia with the infidelity of her huſband, and had beſides very greatly abuſed him; taxing him with many falſhoods; and, among the reſt, with having ſpoken *very ſlightingly and diſreſpectfully* of his wife.

Amelia never ſhined forth to Booth in ſo amiable and great a light; nor did his own unworthineſs ever

appear to him ſo mean and contemptible, as at this inſtant. However, when he had read the letter, he uttered many violent proteſtations to her, that all which related to herſelf was abſolutely falſe.

'I am convinced it is,' ſaid ſhe. 'I would not 'have a ſuſpicion of the contrary for the world. I aſ- 'ſure you I had, till laſt night revived it in my me- 'mory, almoſt forgot the letter; for, as I well knew 'from whom it came, by her mentioning obligations 'which ſhe had conferred on you, and which you had 'more than once ſpoken to me of, I made large allow- 'ances for the ſituation you was then in; and I was 'the more ſatisfied, as the letter itſelf, as well as 'many other circumſtances, convinced me the affair 'was at an end.'

Booth now uttered the moſt extravagant expreſſions of admiration and fondneſs that his heart could dictate, and accompanied them with the warmeſt embraces. All which warmth and tenderneſs ſhe returned; and tears of love and joy guſhed from both their eyes. So raviſhed indeed were their hearts, that for ſome time they both forgot the dreadful ſituation of their affairs.

This, however, was but a ſhort reverie. It ſoon recurred to Amelia, that, though ſhe had the liberty of leaving that houſe when ſhe pleaſed, ſhe could not take her beloved huſband with her. This thought ſtung her tender huſband to the quick; and ſhe could not ſo far command herſelf, as to refrain from many ſorrowful exclamations againſt the hardſhip of their deſtiny; but when ſhe ſaw the effect they had upon Booth, ſhe ſtifled her riſing grief, forced a little chearfulneſs into her countenance, and exerting all the ſpirits ſhe could raiſe within herſelf, expreſſed her hopes of ſeeing a ſpeedy end to their ſufferings. She then aſked her huſband what ſhe ſhould do for him, and to whom ſhe ſhould apply for his deliverance.

'You know, my dear,' cries Booth, 'that the 'doctor is to be in town ſome time to-day. My hopes 'of immediate redemption are only in him; and if 'that can be obtained, I make no doubt but of the 'ſucceſs of that affair which is in the hands of a gen-

'tleman

eman who hath faithfully promiſed, and in whoſe ower I am ſo well aſſured it is, to ſerve me.'

Thus did this poor man ſupport his hopes by a ɔendance on that ticket which he had ſo dearly chaſed of one who pretended to manage the wheels he great ſtate lottery of preferment. A lottery in-d, which hath this to recommend it, that many ɔr wretches feed their imaginations with the pro-ct of a prize during their whole lives, and never cover they have drawn a blank.

Amelia, who was of a pretty ſanguine temper, and s entirely ignorant of theſe matters, was full as eaſy be deceived into hopes as her huſband; but in rea-y at preſent ſhe turned her eyes to no diſtant pro-ect; the deſire of regaining her huſband's liberty ving engroſſed her whole mind.

While they were diſcourſing on theſe matters, they ard a violent noiſe in the houſe, and immediately ter ſeveral perſons paſſed by their door up ſtairs to e apartment over their head. This greatly terrified e gentle ſpirit of Amelia, and ſhe cried—'Good Heavens! my dear, muſt I leave you in this horrid place? I am terrified with a thouſand fears concern-ing you.'

Booth endeavoured to comfort her, ſaying, that he is in no manner of danger, and that he doubted not it that the doctor would ſoon be with him.—'And ſtay, my dear,' cries he, 'now I recollect, ſuppoſe you ſhould apply to my old friend James; for I be-lieve you are pretty well ſatisfied, that your appre-henſions of him were groundleſs. I have no reaſon to think but that he would be as ready to ſerve me as formerly.'

Amelia turned pale as aſhes at the name of James, d, inſtead of making a direct anſwer to her huſband, e laid hold of him, and cried, 'My dear, I have one favour to beg of you, and I inſiſt on your grant-ing it me.'

Booth readily ſwore he would deny her nothing.

'It is only this, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'that, if that de-teſted colonel comes, you will not ſee him. Let the *people of the houſe* tell him you are not here.'

'He knows nothing of my being here,' anſwered Booth; 'but why ſhould I refuſe to ſee him, if he 'ſhould be kind enough to come hither to me? In-'deed, my Amelia, you have taken a diſlike to that 'man without ſufficient reaſon.'

'I ſpeak not upon that account,' cries Amelia; but 'I have had dreams laſt night about you two. Per-'haps you will laugh at my folly; but pray indulge 'it. Nay, I inſiſt on your promiſe of not denying 'me.'

'Dreams! my dear creature,' anſwered he. 'What 'dream can you have had of us?'

'One too horrible to be mentioned,' replied ſhe. ——'I cannot think of it without horror; and, un-'leſs you will promiſe me not to ſee the colonel till I 'return, I poſitively will never leave you.'

'Indeed, my Amelia,' ſaid Booth, 'I never knew 'you unreaſonable before. How can a woman of your 'ſenſe talk of dreams?'

'Suffer me to be once at leaſt unreaſonable,' ſaid Amelia; 'as you are ſo good-natured to ſay I am not 'often ſo. Conſider, what I have lately ſuffered, and 'how weak my ſpirits muſt be at this time.'

As Booth was going to ſpeak, the bailiff without any ceremony entered the room; and cried, 'No of-'fence, I hope, madam; my wife, it ſeems, did not 'know you. She thought the captain had a mind for 'a bit of fleſh by the bye. But I have quieted all 'matters: for I know you very well; I have ſeen that 'handſome face many a time, when I have been wait-'ing upon the captain formerly. No offence, I hope, 'madam; but if my wife was as handſome as you are '—I ſhould not look for worſe goods abroad.'

Booth conceived ſome diſpleaſure at this ſpeech; but he did not think proper to expreſs more than a piſh. ——And then aſked the bailiff what was the meaning of the noiſe they heard juſt now.

'I know of no noiſe,' anſwered the bailiff. 'Some 'of my men have been carrying a piece of bad lug-'gage up ſtairs; a poor raſcal that reſiſted the law 'and juſtice; ſo I gave him a cut or two with a han-'ger. If they ſhall prove mortal, he muſt thank him-

'ſelf

ſelf for it. If a man will not behave like a gentleman to an officer, he muſt take the conſequence; but I muſt ſay that for you, captain, you behave yourſelf like a gentleman; and therefore I ſhall always uſe you as ſuch; and I hope you will find bail ſoon with all my heart. This is but a paultry ſum to what the laſt was; and I do aſſure you, there is nothing elſe againſt you in the office.'

The latter part of the bailiff's ſpeech ſomewhat comforted Amelia, who had been a little frightened by the former; and ſhe ſoon after took leave of her huſband, to go in queſt of the doctor, who, as Amelia had heard that morning, was expected in town that very day, which was ſomewhat ſooner than he had intended at his departure.

Before ſhe went, however, ſhe left a ſtrict charge with the bailiff, who uſhered her very civilly down ſtairs, that if one Colonel James came there to enquire for her huſband, he ſhould deny that he was there.

She then departed; and the bailiff immediately gave a very ſtrict charge to his wife, his maid, and his followers, that if one Colonel James, or any one from him, ſhould enquire after the captain, they ſhould let him know he had the captain above ſtairs: for he doubted not but that the colonel was one of Booth's creditors; and he hoped for a ſecond bail bond by his means.

CHAP. III.

Containing matter pertinent to the hiſtory.

AMELIA, in her way to the doctor's, determined juſt to ſtop at her own lodgings, which lay little out of the road, and to pay a momentary viſit to her children.

This was fortunate enough; for had ſhe called at the doctor's houſe, ſhe would have heard nothing of him, which would have cauſed in her ſome alarm and diſappointment; *for the* doctor was ſet down at Mrs. *Atkinſon's, where he* was directed to Amelia's lodgings, *to which he* went before he called at his own;

and here Amelia now found him playing with her two children.

The doctor had been a little ſurpriſed at not finding Amelia at home, nor any one that could give an account of her. He was now more ſurpriſed to ſee her come in ſuch a dreſs, and at the diſorder which he very plainly perceived in her pale and melancholy countenance. He addreſſed her firſt (for, indeed, ſhe was in no great haſte to ſpeak) and cried 'My dear 'child, what is the matter? where is your huſband? 'ſome miſchief, I am afraid, hath happened to him in 'my abſence.'

'Oh, my dear doctor,' anſwered Amelia, 'ſure 'ſome good angel hath ſent you hither. My poor 'Will is arreſted again. I left him in the moſt miſe-'rable condition in the very houſe whence your good-'neſs fotmerly redeemed him.'

'Arreſted!' cries the doctor. 'Then it muſt be 'for ſome very inconſiderable trifle.'

'I wiſh it was,' ſaid Amelia; 'but it is for no leſs 'than fifty pound.'

'Then,' cries the doctor, 'he hath been diſingenuous 'with me. He told me, he did not owe ten pounds 'in the world for which he was liable to be ſued.'

'I know not what to ſay,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, 'I am afraid to tell you the truth.'

'How! child,' ſaid the doctor ——— 'I hope you 'will never diſguiſe it to any one, eſpecially to me. 'Any prevarication, I promiſe you, will forfeit my 'friendſhip for ever.'

'I will tell you the whole,' cries Amelia, 'and 'rely entirely on your goodneſs.' She then related the gaming ſtory, not forgetting to ſet in the fulleſt light, and to lay the ſtrongeſt emphaſis on, his promiſe never to play again.

The doctor fetched a deep ſigh when he had heard Amelia's relation, and cried, 'I am ſorry, child, for 'the ſhare you are to partake in your huſband's ſuffer-'ings! but as for him, I really think he deſerves no 'compaſſion. You ſay, he hath promiſed never to play 'again; but I muſt tell you he hath broke his promiſe 'to me already: for I had heard he was formerly ad-

'dic

'dicted to this vice, and had given him ſufficient caution againſt it. You will conſider, child, I am already pretty largely engaged for him, every farthing of which, I am ſenſible, I muſt pay. You know I would go to the utmoſt verge of prudence to ſerve you; but I muſt not exceed my ability, which is not very great; and I have ſeveral families on my hands, who are by misfortune alone brought to want. I do aſſure you, I cannot at preſent anſwer for ſuch a ſum as this, without diſtreſſing my own circumſtances.'

'Then Heaven have mercy upon us all,' cries Amelia; 'for we have no other friend on earth—My huſband is undone; and theſe poor little wretches muſt be ſtarved.'

The doctor caſt his eyes on the children, and then cried——'I hope not ſo. I told you I muſt diſtreſs my circumſtances, and I will diſtreſs them this once on your account, and on the account of theſe poor little babes——But things muſt not go on any longer in this way——You muſt take an heroic reſolution. I will hire a coach for you to-morrow morning, which ſhall carry you all down to my parſonage-houſe. There you ſhall have my protection, till ſomething can be done for your huſband; of which, to be plain with you, I at preſent ſee no likelihood.'

Amelia fell upon her knees in an ecſtaſy of thankſgiving to the doctor, who immediately raiſed her up and placed her in her chair. She then recollected herſelf and ſaid—'Oh! my worthy friend, I have ſtill another matter to mention to you, in which I muſt have both your advice and aſſiſtance. My ſoul bluſhes to give you all this trouble; but what other friend have I?——indeed, what other friend could I apply to ſo properly on ſuch an occaſion?'

The doctor, with a very kind voice and countenance, deſired her to ſpeak. She then ſaid—'Oh! ſir, that wicked colonel, whom I have mentioned to you formerly, hath picked ſome quarrel with my huſband (for ſhe did not think proper to mention the cauſe), and *hath ſent him* a challenge. It came to my hand

'laſt night, after he was arreſted; I opened and 'read it.'

'Give it me child,' ſaid the doctor.

She anſwered ſhe had burnt it; as was indeed true.

'But I remember it was an appointment to meet at 'ſword and piſtol this morning at Hyde-Park.'

'Make yourſelf eaſy, my dear child,' cries the doctor, 'I will take care to prevent any miſchief.'

'But conſider, my dear ſir,' ſaid ſhe, 'this is a 'tender matter. My huſband's honour is to be pre-'ſerved as well as his life.'

'And ſo is his ſoul, which ought to be the deareſt 'of all things,' cries the doctor. 'Honour! nonſenſe. 'Can honour dictate to him to diſobey the expreſs 'commands of his Maker, in compliance with a cuſ-'tom eſtabliſhed by a ſet of blockheads, founded on 'falſe principles of virtue, in direct oppoſition to the 'plain and poſitive precepts of religion, and tending 'manifeſtly to give a ſanction to ruffians, and protect 'them in all the ways of impudence and villainy?'

'All this, I believe, is very true,' cries Amelia; 'but yet you know, doctor, the opinion of the world.'

'You talk ſimply, child,' cries the doctor. 'What 'is the opinion of the world, oppoſed to religion and 'virtue? but you are in the wrong. It is not the 'opinion of the world; it is the opinion of the idle, 'ignorant, and profligate. It is impoſſible it ſhould 'be the opinion of one man of ſenſe, who is in earneſt 'in his belief of our religion. Chiefly indeed it hath 'been upheld by the nonſenſe of women, who, either 'from their extreme cowardice, and deſire of pro-'tection, or, as Mr. Bayle thinks, from their exceſſive 'vanity, have been always forward to countenance a 'ſet of hectors and bravoes, and to deſpiſe all men 'of modeſty and ſobriety; though theſe are often, at 'the bottom, not only the better, but the braver 'men.'

'You know, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I have never 'preſumed to argue with you; your opinion is to me 'always inſtruction, and your word a law.'

'Indeed, child,' cries the doctor, 'I know you are 'a good woman; and yet I muſt obſerve to you, that

'this

ery deſire of feeding the paſſion of female va-
/ith the heroiſm of her man, old Homer ſeems
ke the characteriſtic of a bad and looſe woman.
troduces Helen upbraiding her gallant with
g quitted the fight, and left the victory to Me-
i, and ſeeming to be ſorry that ſhe had left her
nd, only becauſe he was the better duelliſt of
'o; but in how different a light doth he repre-
ıe tender and chaſte love of Andromache to
orthy Hector! ſhe diſſuades him from expoſing
lf to danger, even in a juſt cauſe. This is in-
ı weakneſs; but it is an amiable one, and be-
g the true feminine character; but a woman,
ut of heroic vanity (for ſo it is) would hazard
ily the life, but the ſoul too of her huſband in
, is a monſter, and ought to be painted in no
:haracter than that of a Fury.'

ure you, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I never ſaw
atter in the odious light, in which you have
epreſented it, before. I am aſhamed to re-
what I have formerly ſaid on this ſubject.—
et whilſt the opinion of the world is as it is,
ould wiſh to comply as far as poſſible—eſpe-
as my huſband is an officer of the army. If
be done therefore with ſafety to his ho-
—'

in honour!' cries the doctor. 'Indeed I will
fer that noble word to be ſo baſely and barba-
proſtituted. I have known ſome of theſe men
our, as they call themſelves, to be the moſt
raſcals in the univerſe.'

l, I aſk your pardon,' ſaid ſhe.—'Reputation
f you pleaſe—or any other word you like bet-
ıu know my meaning very well.'

know your meaning,' cries the doctor, 'and
knew it a great while ago. The next time
your friend Mrs. Atkinſon, aſk her what it
de Dido fall in love with Æneas.'

dear ſir,' ſaid Amelia, 'do not rally me
ercifully; think where my poor huſband is

'He is,' answered the doctor, 'where I will pre-
'sently be with him. In the mean time, do you pack
'up every thing in order for your journey to-morrow;
'for, if you are wise, you will not trust your hus-
'band a day longer in this town—therefore to pack-
'ing——'

Amelia promised she would — though indeed she wanted not any warning for her journey on this account; for when she packed up herself in the coach, she packed up her all. However, she did not think proper to mention this to the doctor; for as he was now in pretty good humour, she did not care to venture again discomposing his temper.

The doctor then set out for Gray's-Inn Lane; and, as soon as he was gone, Amelia began to consider of her incapacity to take a journey in her present situation, without even a clean shift. At last she resolved, as she was possessed of seven guineas and a half, to go to her friend and redeem some of her own and her husband's linen out of captivity: indeed just so much, as would render it barely possible for them to go out of town with any kind of decency. And this resolution she immediately executed.

As soon as she had finished her business with the pawnbroker (if a man who lends under thirty per cent. deserves that name) he said to her, 'Pray, ma-
'dam, did you know that man who was here yester-
'day, when you brought the picture?' Amelia answered in the negative. 'Indeed, madam,' said the broker, 'he knows you, though he did not recollect
'you while you was here, as your hood was drawn
'over your face; but the moment you was gone, he
'begged to look at the picture, which I, thinking no
'harm, permitted. He had scarce looked upon it,
'when he cried out—"By heaven and earth, it is her
"picture!" He then asked me if I knew you—Indeed,
'says I, I never saw the lady before.'

In this last particular, however, the pawnbroker a little savoured of his profession, and made a small deviation from the truth: for when the man had asked *him if* he knew the lady, he answered she was some *poor* undone woman, who had pawned all her cloaths

to him the day before; and I ſuppoſe, ſays he, this picture is the laſt of her goods and chattels. This hint we thought proper to give the reader, as it may chance to be material.

Amelia anſwered coldly, that ſhe had taken ſo very little notice of the man, that ſhe ſcarce remembered he was there.

'I aſſure you, madam,' ſays the pawnbroker, 'he 'hath taken very great notice of you; for the man 'changed countenance upon what I ſaid, and pre-'ſently after begged me to give him a dram. Oho! 'thinks I to myſelf, are you thereabouts? I would 'not be ſo much in love with ſome folks, as ſome 'people are, for more intereſt than I ſhall ever make 'of a thouſand pound.'

Amelia bluſhed, and ſaid, with ſome peeviſhneſs, that ſhe knew nothing of the man; but ſuppoſed he was ſome impertinent fellow or other.

'Nay, madam,' anſwered the pawnbroker, 'I aſ-'ſure you he is not worthy your regard. He is a poor 'wretch, and I believe I am poſſeſſed of moſt of his 'moveables. However, I hope you are not offended; 'for, indeed, he ſaid no harm; but he was very 'ſtrangely diſordered, that is the truth of it.'

Amelia was very deſirous of putting an end to this converſation, and altogether as eager to return to her children; ſhe therefore bundled up her things as faſt as ſhe could, and calling for a hackney-coach, directed the coachman to her lodgings, and bid him drive her home with all haſte he could.

CHAP. IV.

In which Dr. Harriſon viſits Colonel James.

THE doctor, when he left Amelia, intended to go directly to Booth; but he preſently changed his mind, and determined firſt to call on the colonel, as he thought it was proper to put an end to that matter, before he gave Booth his liberty.

The

The doctor found the two colonels, James and Bath, together. They both received him very civilly; for James was a very well-bred man; and Bath always ſhewed a particular reſpect to the clergy, he being indeed a perfect good Chriſtian, except in the articles of fighting and ſwearing.

Our divine ſat ſome time without mentioning the ſubject of his errand, in hopes that Bath would go away; but when he found no likelihood of that (for indeed Bath was of the two much the moſt pleaſed with his company) he told James that he had ſomething to ſay to him relating to Mr. Booth, which he believed he might ſpeak before his brother.

'Undoubtedly, ſir,' ſaid James; 'for there can be 'no ſecrets between us which my brother may not hear.'

'I come then to you, ſir,' ſaid the doctor, 'from the 'moſt unhappy woman in the world, to whoſe afflic-'tions you have very greatly and very cruelly added, 'by ſending a challenge to her huſband, which hath 'very luckily fallen into her hands; for had the man, 'for whom you deſigned it, received it, I am afraid 'you would not have ſeen me upon this occaſion.'

'If I writ ſuch a letter to Mr. Booth, ſir,' ſaid James, 'you may be aſſured I did not expect this viſit 'in anſwer to it.'

'I do not think you did,' cries the doctor; 'but 'you have great reaſon to thank Heaven for ordering 'this matter contrary to your expectations. I know 'not what trifle may have drawn this challenge from 'you; but, after what I have ſome reaſon to know of 'you, ſir, I muſt plainly tell you, that, if you had 'added to your guilt already committed againſt this 'man that of having his blood upon your hands, your 'ſoul would have become as black as hell itſelf.'

'Give me leave to ſay,' cries the colonel, 'this is 'a language which I am not uſed to hear; and if 'your cloth was not your protection, you ſhould not 'give it me with impunity. After what you know of 'me, ſir! What do you preſume to know of me to 'my diſadvantage?'

'You ſay my cloth is my protection, colonel,' anſwered the doctor, 'therefore pray lay aſide your an-'ger;

'ger; I do not come with any deſign of affronting or 'offending you.—'

'Very well,' cries Bath, 'that declaration is ſuffi-'cient from a clergyman, let him ſay what he 'pleaſes.'

'Indeed, ſir,' ſays the doctor, very mildly, 'I con-'ſult equally the good of you both, and, in a ſpiri-'tual ſenſe, more eſpecially yours; for you know you 'have injured this poor man.'

'So far on the contrary,' cries James, 'that I have 'been his greateſt benefactor; I ſcorn to upbraid 'him; but you force me to it. Nor have I ever done 'him the leaſt injury.'

'Perhaps not,' ſaid the doctor; 'I will alter what 'I have ſaid.——But for this I apply to your honour '——Have you not intended him an injury, the very 'intention of which cancels every obligation?'

'How, ſir,' anſwered the colonel—'What do you 'mean?'

'My meaning,' replied the doctor, 'is almoſt too 'tender to mention——Come, colonel, examine your 'own heart; and then anſwer me on your honour, if 'you have not intended to do him the higheſt wrong 'which one man can do another.'

'I do not know what you mean by the queſtion,' anſwered the colonel.

'D—n me, the queſtion is very tranſparent,' cries Bath. 'From any other man it would be an affront 'with the ſtrongeſt emphaſis, but from one of the doc-'tor's cloth it demands a categorical anſwer.'

'I am not a papiſt, ſir,' anſwered Colonel James, 'nor am I obliged to confeſs to my prieſt. But if you 'have any thing to ſay, ſpeak openly—for I do not 'underſtand your meaning.'

'I have explained my meaning to you already,' ſaid the doctor, 'in a letter I wrote to you on the ſub-'ject—a ſubject which I am ſorry I ſhould have any oc-'caſion to write upon to a Chriſtian.'

'I do remember now,' cries the colonel, 'that I 'received a very impertinent letter, ſomething like a 'ſermon, againſt adultery; but I did not expect to 'hear the author own it to my face.'

'That

'That brave man then, ſir,' anſwered the doctor, 'ſtands before you, who dares own he wrote that letter, and dares affirm too, that it was writ on a juſt and ſtrong foundation. But if the hardneſs of your heart could prevail on you to treat my good intention with contempt and ſcorn, what, pray, could induce you to ſhew it, nay, to give it Mr. Booth? What motive could you have for that, unleſs you meant to inſult him, and to provoke your rival to give you that opportunity of putting him out of the world, which you have ſince wickedly ſought by your challenge?'

'I give him the letter!' ſaid the colonel.

'Yes, ſir,' anſwered the doctor, 'he ſhewed me the letter, and affirmed that you gave it him at the maſquerade.'

'He is a lying raſcal then,' ſaid the colonel, very paſſionately. 'I ſcarce took the trouble of reading the letter, and loſt it out of my pocket.'

Here Bath interfered, and explained this affair in the manner in which it happened, and with which the reader is already acquainted. He concluded by great eulogiums on the performance, and declared it was one of the moſt enthuſiaſtic (meaning, perhaps, eccleſiaſtic) letters that ever was written. 'And d—n me,' ſays he, 'if I do not reſpect the author with the utmoſt emphaſis of thinking.'

The doctor now recollected what had paſſed with Booth, and perceived he had made a miſtake of one colonel for another. This he preſently acknowledged to Colonel James, and ſaid that the miſtake had been his, and not Booth's.

Bath now collected all his gravity and dignity, as he called it, into his countenance, and addreſſing himſelf to James, ſaid—'And was that letter writ to you, brother?—I hope you never deſerved any ſuſpicion of this kind.'

'Brother,' cries James, 'I am accountable to myſelf for my actions, and ſhall not render an account either to you or that gentleman.'

'As to me, brother,' anſwered Bath, 'you ſay right; but I think this gentleman may call you to

'an account; nay, I think it is his duty ſo to do. And 'let me tell you, brother, there is one much greater 'than he to whom you muſt give an account. Mrs. 'Booth is really a fine woman, a lady of moſt impe-'rious and majeſtic preſence. I have heard you often 'ſay, that you liked her; and if you have quarrelled 'with her huſband upon this account, by all the dig-'nity of man, I think you ought to aſk his pardon.'

'Indeed, brother,' cries James, 'I can bear this 'no longer—you will make me angry preſently.'

'Angry! brother James,' cries Bath—'angry!—I 'love you, brother, and have obligations to you. I 'will ſay no more——but I hope you know I do not 'fear making any man angry.'

James anſwered he knew it well; and then the doctor apprehending that while he was ſtopping up one breach, he ſhould make another, preſently in-terfered, and turned the diſcourſe back to Booth. 'You tell me, ſir,' ſaid he to James, 'that my gown 'is my protection; let it then at leaſt protect me where 'I have had no deſign in offending; where I have 'conſulted your higheſt welfare, as in truth I did in 'writing this letter. And if you did not in the leaſt 'deſerve any ſuch ſuſpicion, ſtill you have no cauſe 'for reſentment. Caution againſt ſin, even to the 'innocent, can never be unwholeſome. But this I 'aſſure you, whatever anger you have to me, you 'can have none to poor Booth, who was entirely 'ignorant of my writing to you, and who, I am 'certain, never entertained the leaſt ſuſpicion of you; 'on the contrary, reveres you with the higheſt 'eſteem, and love, and gratitude. Let me therefore 'reconcile all matters between you, and bring you 'together before he hath even heard of this chal-'lenge.'

'Brother,' cries Bath, 'I hope I ſhall not make 'you angry—I lie when I ſay ſo; for I am indifferent 'to any man's anger——Let me be an acceſſary to 'what the doctor hath ſaid. I think I may be truſted 'with *matters of* this nature; and it is a little unkind 'that, *if you* intended to ſend a challenge, you did

'not

'not make me the bearer. But, indeed, as to what 'appears to me, this matter may be very well made 'up; and as Mr. Booth doth not know of the chal-'lenge, I don't ſee why he ever ſhould, any more 'than your giving him the lie juſt now; but that he 'ſhall never have from me, nor, I believe, from this 'gentleman; for, indeed, if he ſhould, it would be 'incumbent upon him to cut your throat.'

'Lookee, doctor,' ſaid James, 'I do not deſerve 'the unkind ſuſpicion you juſt now threw out againſt 'me. I never thirſted after any man's blood; and as 'for what hath paſſed, ſince this diſcovery hath hap-'pened, I may perhaps not think it worth my while 'to trouble myſelf any more about it.'

The doctor was not contented with 'perhaps;' he inſiſted on a firm promiſe, to be bound with the colonel's honour. This at length he obtained, and then departed well ſatisfied.

In fact, the colonel was aſhamed to avow the real cauſe of the quarrel to this good man, or, indeed, to his brother Bath, who would not only have condemned him equally with the doctor, but would poſſibly have quarrelled with him on his ſiſter's account, whom, as the reader muſt have obſerved, he loved above all things; and, in plain truth, though the colonel was a brave man, and dared to fight, yet he was altogether as willing to let it alone; and this made him now and then give a little way to the wrongheadedneſs of colonel Bath, who, with all the other principles of honour and humanity, made no more of cutting the throat of a man upon any of his punctilio's, than a butcher doth of killing ſheep.

CHAP. V.

What paſſed at the bailiff's houſe.

THE doctor now ſet forwards to his friend Booth, and as he paſt by the door of his attorney in the way, he called upon him, and took him with him.

The meeting between him and Booth need not be expatiated on. The doctor was really angry, and though he deferred his lecture to a more proper opportunity

yet, as he was no diſſembler (indeed, he was incapable of any diſguiſe), he could not put on a ſhew of that heartineſs with which he had formerly uſed to receive his friend.

Booth at laſt began himſelf in the following manner: 'Doctor, I am really aſhamed to ſee you; and 'if you knew the confuſion of my ſoul on this occa- 'ſion, I am ſure you would pity rather than upbraid 'me—And yet I can ſay with great ſincerity, I rejoice 'in this laſt inſtance of my ſhame, ſince I am like to 'reap the moſt ſolid advantage from it.' The doctor ſtared at this, and Booth thus proceeded: 'Since I 'have been in this wretched place, I have employed 'my time almoſt entirely in reading over a ſeries of 'ſermons, which are contained in that book,' (meaning Dr. Barrow's works, which then lay on the table before him), 'in proof of the Chriſtian religion, and 'ſo good an effect have they had upon me, that I ſhall, 'I believe, be the better man for them as long as I 'live. I have not a doubt (for I own I have had 'ſuch), which remains now unſatisfied.—If ever an 'angel might be thought to guide the pen of a wri- 'ter, ſurely the pen of that great and good man had 'ſuch an aſſiſtant.' The doctor readily concurred in the praiſes of Dr. Barrow, and added—'You ſay you 'have had your doubts, young gentleman; indeed, 'I did not know that—And pray, what were your 'doubts?' 'Whatever they were, ſir,' ſaid Booth, 'they are now ſatisfied, as I believe thoſe of every 'impartial and ſenſible reader will be, if he will, with 'due attention, read over theſe excellent ſermons.' 'Very well,' anſwered the doctor, 'though I have 'converſed, I find, with a falſe brother hitherto, I 'am glad you are reconciled to truth at laſt, and I 'hope your future faith will have ſome influence on 'your future life.' 'I need not tell you, ſir,' replied Booth, 'that will always be the caſe, where faith is 'ſincere, as I aſſure you mine is. Indeed, I never 'was a raſh diſbeliever; my chief doubt was founded 'on this, that as men appeared to me to act entirely 'from their paſſions, their actions could have neither 'merit nor demerit.' 'A very worthy concluſion truly,' cries

cries the doctor; 'but if men act, as I believe they 'do, from their paſſions, it would be fair to conclude 'that religion to be true, which applies immediately 'to the ſtrongeſt of theſe paſſions, hope and fear, 'chuſing rather to rely on its rewards and puniſh-'ments, than on that native beauty of virtue which 'ſome of the antient philoſophers thought proper to 'recommend to their diſciples.——But we will defer 'this diſcourſe till another opportunity; at preſent, 'as the devil hath thought proper to ſet you free, I 'will try if I can prevail on the bailiff to do the ſame.'

The doctor had really not ſo much money in town as Booth's debt amounted to, and therefore, though he would otherwiſe very willingly have paid it, he was forced to give bail to the action. For which purpoſe, as the bailiff was a man of great form, he was obliged to get another perſon to be bound with him. This perſon, however, the attorney undertook to procure, and immediately ſet out in queſt of him.

During his abſence, the bailiff came into the room, and addreſſing himſelf to the doctor, ſaid, 'I think, 'ſir, your name is Dr. Harriſon.' The doctor immediately acknowledged his name. Indeed, the bailiff had ſeen it to a bail-bond before. 'Why then, 'ſir,' ſaid the bailiff, 'there is a man above in a dying 'condition, that deſires the favour of ſpeaking to you; 'I believe he wants you to pray by him.'

The bailiff himſelf was not more ready to execute his office on all occaſions for his fee than the doctor was to execute his for nothing. Without making any further enquiry therefore into the condition of the man, he immediately went up ſtairs.

As ſoon as the bailiff returned down ſtairs, which was immediately after he had lodged the doctor in the room, Booth had the curioſity to aſk him who this man was. 'Why, I don't know much of him,' ſaid the bailiff. 'I had him once in cuſtody before now; I re-'member, it was when your honour was here laſt; 'and now I remember too, he ſaid, then, he knew 'your honour very well. Indeed, I had ſome opi-'nion of him at that time; for he ſpent his mo-'ney very much like a gentleman; but I have

'diſcovered

diſcovered ſince, that he is a poor fellow, and worth nothing. He is a mere ſhy cock. I have had the ſtuff about me this week, and could never get at him till this morning; nay, I don't believe we ſhould ever have found out his lodgings, had it not been for the attorney that was here juſt now, who gave us information. And ſo we took him this morning by a comical way enough. For we dreſſed up one of my men in women's cloaths, who told the people of the houſe, that he was his ſiſter juſt come to town: for we were told by the attorney, that he had ſuch a ſiſter, upon which he was let up ſtairs; and ſo kept the door a-jar till I and another ruſhed in. Let me tell you, captain, there are as good ſtratagems made uſe of in our buſineſs as any in the army.

'But pray, ſir,' ſaid Booth, 'did not you tell me this morning that the poor fellow was deſperately wounded; nay, I think you told the doctor that he was a dying man?'

'I had like to have forgot that,' cries the bailiff. ——Nothing would ſerve the gentleman but that he muſt make reſiſtance, and he gave my man a blow with a ſtick; but I ſoon quieted him, by giving him a wipe or two with a hanger. Not that I believe I have done his buſineſs neither; but the fellow is faint-hearted, and the ſurgeon, I fancy, frightens him more than he need.———But however, let the worſt come to the worſt, the law is all on my ſide, and it is only *ſe fendendo*. The attorney that was here juſt now told me ſo, and bid me fear nothing: for that he would ſtand my friend, and undertake the cauſe; and he is a deviliſh good one at a defence at the Old-Bailey, I promiſe you. I have known him bring off ſeveral that every body thought would have been hanged.'

'But ſuppoſe you ſhould be acquitted,' ſaid Booth; would not the blood of this poor wretch lie a little heavy at your heart?'

'Why ſhould it, captain?' ſaid the bailiff. 'Is it not all done in a lawful way? why will people reſiſt the law when they know the conſequence? To be ſure, if a man was to kill another in an unlawful *manner as it were*, and what the law calls murder,

'that

'that is quite and clear another thing. I ſhould not 'care to be convicted of murder any more than ano- 'ther man. Why now, captain, you have been 'abroad in the wars, they tell me, and to be ſure muſt 'have killed men in your time. Pray, was you ever 'afraid afterwards of ſeeing their ghoſts?'

'That is a different affair,' cries Booth; 'but I 'would not kill a man in cold blood for all the world.

'There is no difference at all, as I can ſee,' cries the bailiff. 'One is as much in the way of buſineſs 'as the other. When gentlemen behave themſelves 'like unto gentlemen, I know how to treat them as 'ſuch as well as any officer the king hath.——And 'when they do not, why they muſt take what follows, 'and the law doth not call it murder.'

Booth very plainly ſaw the bailiff had ſquared his conſcience exactly according to law, and that he could not eaſily ſubvert his way of thinking. He therefore gave up the cauſe, and deſired the bailiff to expedite the bonds, which he promiſed to do, ſaying, he hoped he had uſed him with proper civility this time, if he had not the laſt, and that he ſhould be remembered for it.

But before we cloſe this chapter, we ſhall endeavour to ſatisfy an enquiry which may ariſe in our moſt favourite readers (for ſo are the moſt curious) how it came to paſs that ſuch a perſon as was Dr. Harriſon ſhould employ ſuch a fellow as this Murphy.

The caſe then was thus. This Murphy had been clerk to an attorney in the very ſame town in which the doctor lived, and when he was out of his time, had ſet up with a character fair enough, and had married a maid ſervant of Mrs. Harris, by which means he had all the buſineſs to which that lady and her friends, in which number was the doctor, could recommend him.

Murphy went on with his buſineſs, and thrived very well, till he happened to make an unfortunate ſlip, in which he was detected by a brother of the ſame calling. But though we call this by the gentle name of a *ſlip, in* reſpect to its being ſo extremely common, it was a matter in which the law, if it had ever come to

its ears, would have paſſed a very ſevere cenſure, being, indeed, no leſs than perjury and ſubornation of perjury.

This brother attorney being a very good-natured man, and unwilling to beſpatter his own profeſſion, and conſidering, perhaps, that the conſequence did in no wiſe affect the public, who had no manner of intereſt in the alternative, whether A. in whom the right was, or B. to whom Mr. Murphy, by the means aforeſaid, had transferred it, ſucceeded in an action. We mention this particular, becauſe, as this brother attorney was a very violent party man, and a profeſſed ſtickler for the public, to ſuffer any injury to have been done to that, would have been highly inconſiſtent with his principles.

This gentleman, therefore, came to Mr. Murphy, and after ſhewing him that he had it in his power to convict him of the aforeſaid crime, very generouſly told him that he had not the leaſt delight in bringing any man to deſtruction, nor the leaſt animoſity againſt him. All that he inſiſted upon, was, that he would not live in the ſame town or country with one who had been guilty of ſuch an action. He then told Mr. Murphy that he would keep the ſecret on two conditions; the one was, that he immediately quitted that country; the other was, that he ſhould convince him he deſerved this kindneſs by his gratitude, and that Murphy ſhould transfer to the other all the buſineſs which he then had in thoſe parts, and to which he could poſſibly recommend him.

It is the obſervation of a very wiſe man, that it is a very common exerciſe of wiſdom in this world, of two evils to chuſe the leaſt. The reader therefore cannot doubt but that Mr. Murphy complied with the alternative propoſed by his kind brother, and accepted the terms on which ſecrecy was to be obtained.

This happened while the doctor was abroad; and with all this, except the departure of Mr. Murphy, not only the doctor, but the whole town (ſave his aforeſaid brother alone) were to this day unacquainted.

The

The doctor, at his return, hearing that Mr. Murphy was gone, applied to the other attorney in his affairs, who ſtill employed this Murphy as his agent in town, partly perhaps out of good-will to him, and partly from the recommendation of Miſs Harris; for as he had married a ſervant of the family, and a particular favourite of her's, there can be no wonder that ſhe, who was entirely ignorant of the affair above related, as well as of his conduct in town, ſhould continue her favour to him. It will appear therefore, I apprehend, no longer ſtrange, that the doctor, who had ſeen this man but three times ſince his removal to town, and then converſed with him only on buſineſs, ſhould remain as ignorant of his life and character, as a man generally is of the character of the hackney-coachman who drives him. Nor doth it reflect more on the honour or underſtanding of the doctor under theſe circumſtances to employ Murphy, than it would if he had been driven about the town by a thief or a murderer.

CHAP. VI.

What paſſed between the doctor and the ſick man.

WE left the doctor in the laſt chapter with the wounded man, to whom the doctor, in a very gentle voice, ſpoke as follows:

'I am ſorry, friend, to ſee you in this ſituation, 'and am very ready to give you any comfort or aſſiſt-'ance within my power.'

'I thank you kindly, doctor,' ſaid the man. 'In-'deed, I ſhould not have preſumed to have ſent to 'you, had I not known your character: for though I 'believe I am not at all known to you, I have lived 'many years in that town where you yourſelf had a 'houſe: my name is Robinſon. I uſed to write for 'the attornies in thoſe parts, and I have been em-'ployed on your buſineſs in my time.'

'I do not recollect you, nor your name,' ſaid the doctor; 'but conſider, friend, your moments are 'precious, and your buſineſs, as I am informed, is

'to offer up your prayers to that great being, before 'whom you are ſhortly to appear.—But firſt, let me 'exhort you earneſtly to a moſt ſerious repentance of 'all your ſins.'

'Oh! doctor,' ſaid the man—'Pray, what is your 'opinion of a death-bed repentance?'

'If repentance is ſincere,' cries the doctor, 'I 'hope, through the mercies and merits of our moſt 'powerful and benign interceſſor, it will never come 'too late.'

'But do you not think, ſir,' cries the man, 'that, in 'order to obtain forgiveneſs of any great ſin we have 'committed by an injury done to our neighbours, it 'is neceſſary, as far as in us lies, to make all the 'amends we can to the party injured, and to undo, if 'poſſible, the injury we have done.'

'Moſt undoubtedly,' cried the doctor; 'our pre-'tence to repentance would otherwiſe be groſs hypo-'criſy, and an impudent attempt to deceive and im-'poſe upon our Creator himſelf.'

'Indeed, I am of the ſame opinion,' cries the peni-tent; 'and I think further, that this is thrown in 'my way, and hinted to me by that Great Being; for 'an accident happened to me yeſterday, by which, as 'things have fallen out ſince, I think I plainly diſcern 'the hand of Providence. I went yeſterday, ſir, you 'muſt know, to a pawnbroker's, to pawn the laſt 'moveable, which, except the poor cloaths you ſee 'on my back, I am worth in the world. While I was 'there, a young lady came in, to pawn her picture. She 'had diſguiſed herſelf ſo much, and pulled her hood 'ſo over her face, that I did not know her while ſhe 'ſtaid, which was ſcarce three minutes. As ſoon as 'ſhe was gone, the pawnbroker, taking the picture in 'his hand, cried out—*Upon my word, this is the hand-'ſomeſt face I ever ſaw in my life.* I deſired him to let 'me look on the picture, which he readily did—and 'I no ſooner caſt my eyes upon it, than the ſtrong re-'ſemblance ſtruck me, and I knew it to be Mrs. 'Booth.'

'Mrs. Booth! what Mrs. Booth?' cries the doctor.

'Captain Booth's lady, the captain who is now b
'low,' ſaid the other.

'How!' cries the doctor with great impetuoſity.

'Have patience,' ſaid the man, 'and you ſh
'hear all. I expreſſed ſome ſurpriſe to the paw
'broker, and aſked the lady's name. He anſwer
'that he knew not her name, but that ſhe was ſon
'undone wretch, who had the day before left all h
'cloaths with him in pawn. My guilt immediate
'flew in my face, and told me I had been acceſſary
'this lady's undoing. The ſudden ſhock ſo affect
'me, that, had it not been for a dram which t
'pawnbroker gave me, I believe I ſhould have ſu
'on the ſpot.'

'Acceſſary to her undoing! how acceſſary?' ſa
the doctor. 'Pray tell me; for I am impatient
'hear.'

'I will tell you all, as faſt as I can,' cries the fi
man. 'You know, good doctor, that Mrs. Har
'of our town had two daughters, this Mrs. Booth a
'another. Now, ſir, it ſeems the other daughter ha
'ſome way or other, diſobliged her mother, a litt
'before the old lady died, therefore ſhe made a wil
'and left all her fortune, except one thouſand pound
'to Mrs. Booth; to which will, Mr. Murphy, m
'ſelf, and another, who is now dead, were the wi
'neſſes. Mrs. Harris afterwards died ſuddenly
'upon which it was contrived, by her other daug
'ter and Mr. Murphy, to make a new will, in whi
'Mrs. Booth had a legacy of ten pounds, and all t
'reſt was given to the other. To this will, Murph
'myſelf, and the ſame third perſon, again ſet o
'hands.'

'Good Heaven! how wonderful is thy providence
cries the doctor——'Murphy! ſay you?'

'He himſelf, ſir,' anſwered Robinſon; 'Murph
'who is the greateſt rogue, I believe, now in t
'world.'

'Pray, ſir, proceed,' cries the doctor.

'For this ſervice, ſir,' ſaid Robinſon, 'myſelf a
'the third perſon, one Carter, received two hundr
'*pounds* each. What reward Murphy himſelf had,
'kn

'know not. Carter died ſoon afterwards; and from 'that time, at ſeveral payments, I have by threats 'extorted above a hundred pound more.—And this, 'ſir, is the whole truth, which I am ready to teſtify, 'if it would pleaſe heaven to prolong my life.'

'I hope it will,' cries the doctor; 'but ſomething 'muſt be done, for fear of accidents—I will ſend to 'counſel immediately, to know how to ſecure your 'teſtimony.—Whom can I get to ſend?—Stay, ay— 'he will do—but I know not where his houſe or his 'chambers are—I will go myſelf—but I may be want- 'ed here.'

While the doctor was in this violent agitation, the ſurgeon made his appearance. The doctor ſtood ſtill in a meditating poſture, while the ſurgeon examined his patient. After which, the doctor begged him to declare his opinion, and whether he thought the wounded man in any immediate danger of death. 'I do not know,' anſwered the ſurgeon, 'what you 'call immediate. He may live ſeveral days——— 'nay, he may recover. It is impoſſible to give any 'certain opinion in theſe caſes.' He then launched forth into a ſet of terms, which the doctor, with all his ſcholarſhip, could not underſtand. To ſay the truth, many of them were not to be found in any dictionary or lexicon.

One diſcovery however the doctor made; and that was, that the ſurgeon was a very ignorant, conceited fellow, and knew nothing of his profeſſion. He reſolved therefore to get better advice for the ſick; but this he poſtponed at preſent, and applying himſelf to the ſurgeon, ſaid he ſhould be very much obliged to him, if he knew where to find ſuch a counſellor, and would fetch him thither. 'I ſhould not aſk ſuch a 'favour of you, ſir,' ſays the doctor, 'if it was not on 'buſineſs of the laſt importance, or if I could find any 'other meſſenger.'

'I fetch—ſir! ſaid the ſurgeon, very angrily, 'Do you take me for a footman, or a porter? 'I don't know who you are; but I believe you 'are full as proper to go on ſuch an errand as 'I am,' (for as the doctor, who was juſt come off

his journey, was very roughly dreſſed, the ſurgeon held him in no great reſpect). The ſurgeon then called aloud from the top of the ſtairs, 'Let my coach-'man draw up,' and ſtrutted off without any ceremony, telling his patient he would call again the next day.

At this very inſtant arrived Murphy with the other bail, and finding Booth alone, he aſked the bailiff at the door, what was become of the doctor, 'Why the 'doctor,' anſwered he, 'is above ſtairs, praying with '———' 'How!' cries Murphy.' How came you 'not to carry him directly to Newgate, as you pro-'miſed me?' 'Why, becauſe he was wounded,' cries the bailiff. I thought it was charity to take care of 'him; and beſides, why ſhould one make more noiſe 'about the matter than is neceſſary?' 'And Dr. 'Harriſon with him?' ſaid Murphy. 'Yes, he is,' ſaid the bailiff; 'he deſired to ſpeak with the doctor 'very much, and they have been praying together al-'moſt this hour.'——'All is up, and undone,' cries Murphy. 'Let me come by, I have thought of ſome-'thing which I muſt do immediately.'

Now as by means of the ſurgeon's leaving the door open, the doctor heard Murphy's voice naming Robinſon peeviſhly, he drew ſoftly to the top of the ſtairs, where he heard the foregoing dialogue; and as ſoon as Murphy had uttered his laſt words, and was moving downwards, the doctor immediately ſallied from his poſt, running as faſt as he could, and crying, 'ſtop 'the villain, ſtop the thief.'

The attorney wanted no better hint to accelerate his pace; and having the ſtart of the doctor, got down ſtairs, and out into the ſtreet; but the doctor was ſo cloſe at his heels, and being in foot the nimbler of the two, he ſoon overtook him, and laid hold of him, as he would have done on either Broughton or Slack in the ſame cauſe.

This action in the ſtreet, accompanied with the frequent cry of, ſtop thief, by the doctor, during the chace, *preſently* drew together a large mob, who began, as is *uſual*, to enter immediately upon buſineſs, and to make

ſtrift

ſtrict enquiry into the matter, in order to proceed to juſtice in their ſummary way.

Murphy, who knew well the temper of the mob, cried out, 'If you are a bailiff, ſhew me your writ. 'Gentlemen, he pretends to arreſt me here without a 'writ.'

Upon this, one of the ſturdieſt and forwardeſt of the mob, and who, by a ſuperior ſtrength of body and of lungs, preſided in this aſſembly, declared he would ſuffer no ſuch thing. 'D—n me,' ſays he, 'away to 'the pump with the catchpole directly—ſhew me your 'writ, or let the gentleman go——you ſhall not arreſt 'a man contrary to law.'

He then laid his hands on the doctor, who ſtill faſt griping the attorney, cried out: 'He is a villain— 'I am no bailiff, but a clergyman; and this lawyer is 'guilty of forgery, and hath ruined a poor family.'

'How!' cries the ſpokeſman——'a lawyer!—— 'that alters the caſe—'

'Yes, faith,' cries another of the mob, 'it is law- 'yer Murphy. I know him very well.'

'And hath he ruined a poor family? like enough, 'faith, if he's a lawyer—Away with him to the juſtice 'immediately.'

The bailiff now came up, deſiring to know what was the matter; to whom doctor Harriſon anſwered, that he had arreſted that villain for forgery. 'How can 'you arreſt him,' cries the bailiff, 'you are no offi- 'cer, nor have any warrant? Mr. Murphy is a gen- 'tleman, and he ſhall be uſed as ſuch.'

'Nay, to be ſure,' cries the ſpokeſman, 'there ought to be a warrant; that's the truth on't.'

'There needs no warrant,' cries the doctor. 'I 'accuſe him of felony; and I know ſo much of the 'law of England, that any man may arreſt a felon 'without any warrant whatever. This villain hath 'undone a poor family; and I will die on the ſpot 'before I part with him.'

'If the law be ſo,' cries the orator, 'that is ano- 'ther matter. And to be ſure, to ruin a poor man is 'the greateſt of ſins. And being a lawyer too, makes it ſo much the worſe—He ſhall go before the juſtice d—

'd—n me if he ſhan't go before the juſtice. I ſays 'the word, he ſhall.'

'I ſay he is a gentleman, and ſhall be uſed ac-'cording to law,' cries the bailiff. 'And though 'you are a clergyman,' ſaid he to Harriſon, 'you don't 'ſhew yourſelf as one by your actions.'

'That's a bailiff,' cries one of the mob—'one law-'yer will always ſtand by another; but I think the 'clergyman is a very good man, and acts becoming 'a clergyman to ſtand by the poor.'

At which words the mob all gave a great ſhout, and ſeveral cried out: 'Bring him along; away with him 'to the juſtice.'

And now a conſtable appeared, and with an authoritative voice declared what he was, produced his ſtaff, and demanded the peace.

The doctor then delivered his priſoner over to the officer, and charged him with felony; the conſtable received him; the attorney ſubmitted; the bailiff was huſhed; and the waves of the mob immediately ſubſided.

The doctor now balanced with himſelf how he ſhould proceed; at laſt he determined to leave Booth a little longer in captivity, and not quit ſight of Murphy, before he had lodged him ſafe with a magiſtrate. They then all moved forwards to the juſtice; the conſtable and his priſoner marching firſt, the doctor and the bailiff following next, and about five thouſand mob (for no leſs number were aſſembled in a very few minutes) following in the proceſſion.

They found the magiſtrate juſt ſitting down to his dinner; however, when he was acquainted with the doctor's profeſſion, he immediately admitted him, and heard his buſineſs. Which he no ſooner perfectly underſtood, with all its circumſtances, than he reſolved, though it was then very late, and he had been fatigued all the morning with public buſineſs, to poſtpone all refreſhment till he had diſcharged his duty. He accordingly adjourned the priſoner and his cauſe to the bailiff's houſe, whither he himſelf with the doctor immediately repaired, and whither the attorney was followed

lowed by a much larger number of attendants than he had been honoured with before.

CHAP. VII.

In which the hiſtory draws towards a concluſion.

NOTHING could exceed the aſtoniſhment of Booth at the behaviour of the doctor, at the time when he ſallied forth in purſuit of the attorney; for which it was ſo impoſſible for him to account in any manner whatever. He remained a long time in the utmoſt torture of mind, till at laſt the bailiff's wife came to him, and aſked him if the doctor was not a mad-man; and in truth he could hardly defend him from that imputation.

While he was in this perplexity, the maid of the houſe brought him a meſſage from Robinſon, deſiring the favour of ſeeing him above ſtairs. With this he immediately complied.

When theſe two were alone together, and the key turned on them (for the bailiff's wife was a moſt careful perſon, and never omitted that ceremony in the abſence of her huſband, having always at her tongue's end that excellent proverb of 'ſafe bind, ſafe find.') Robinſon looking ſtedfaſtly upon Booth, ſaid, 'I believe, ſir, you ſcarce remember me.'

Booth anſwered, that he thought he had ſeen his face ſomewhere before; but could not then recollect when or where.

'Indeed, ſir,' anſwered the man, 'it was a place 'which no man can remember with pleaſure. But 'do you not remember, a few weeks ago, that you 'had the misfortune to be in a certain priſon in this 'town, where you loſt a trifling ſum at cards to a 'fellow priſoner?'

This hint ſufficiently awakened Booth's memory, and he now recollected the features of his old friend Robinſon. He anſwered him a little ſurlily, 'I know 'you now very well; but I did not imagine you would 'ever have reminded me of that tranſaction.'

'Alas, ſir!' anſwered Robinſon, 'whatev
'pened then was very trifling, compared to th
'ries I have done you: but if my life be ſpare
'enough, I will now undo it all! and as I hav
'one of your worſt enemies, I will now be
'your beſt friends.'

He was juſt entering upon his ſtory, when
was heard below, which might be almoſt comp
what hath been heard in Holland, when the
have given way, and the ocean in an inun
breaks in upon the land. It ſeemed indeed as
whole world was burſting into the houſe at once

Booth was a man of great firmneſs of mind,
had need of it all at this inſtant. As for poor
ſon, the uſual concomitants of guilt attende
and he began to tremble in a violent manner.

The firſt perſon who aſcended the ſtairs w
doctor, who no ſooner ſaw Booth than he ran
and embraced him, crying, 'My child, I wi
'joy with all my heart. Your ſufferings are
'an end; and Providence hath done you the ju
'laſt, which it will one day or other render
'men.—You will hear all preſently; but I ca
'only tell you, that your ſiſter is diſcovered, a
'eſtate is your own.'

Booth was in ſuch confuſion, that he ſcarce
any anſwer; and now appeared the juſtice a
clerk, and immediately afterwards the conſtabl
his priſoner, the bailiff, and as many more as
poſſibly crowd up ſtairs.

The doctor now addreſſed himſelf to the fic
and deſired him to repeat the ſame information
the juſtice which he had made already; to whi
binſon readily conſented.

While the clerk was taking down the infor
the attorney expreſſed a very impatient deſire
inſtantly for his clerk; and expreſſed ſo much
neſs at the confuſion in which he had left his
at home, that a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to the
that, if his houſe was ſearched, ſome lights, a
dence, relating to this affair, would certa

found; he therefore deſired the juſtice to grant a ſearch-warrant immediately, to ſearch his houſe.

The juſtice anſwered that he had no ſuch power. That if there was any ſuſpicion of ſtolen goods, he could grant a warrant to ſearch for them.

'How, ſir!' ſaid the doctor, 'can you grant a 'warrant to ſearch a man's houſe for a ſilver tea-'ſpoon, and not in a caſe like this, where a man is 'robbed of his whole eſtate?'

'Hold, ſir!' ſays the ſick man, 'I believe I can 'anſwer that point; for I can ſwear he hath ſeveral 'title deeds of the eſtate now in his poſſeſſion, which 'I am ſure were ſtolen from the right owner.'

The juſtice ſtill heſitated. He ſaid title deeds ſavoured of the reality, and it was not felony to ſteal them. If, indeed, they were taken away in a box, then it would be felony to ſteal the box.

'Savour of the reality! ſavour of the fartality,' ſaid the doctor. 'I never heard ſuch incomprehen-'ſible nonſenſe. This is impudent, as well as child-'iſh, trifling with the lives and properties of men.'

'Well, ſir,' ſaid Robinſon, 'I now am ſure I can 'do his buſineſs; for I know he hath a ſilver cup in 'his poſſeſſion, which is the property of this gentle-'man (meaning Booth); and how he got it but by 'ſtealth, let him account if he can.'

'That will do,' cries the juſtice with great pleaſure, 'that will do; and if you will charge him on oath 'with that, I will inſtantly grant my warrant to ſearch 'his houſe for it.' 'And I will go and ſee it executed,' cries the doctor: for it was a maxim of his, that no man could deſcend below himſelf in doing any act which may contribute to protect an innocent perſon, or to bring a rogue to the gallows.

The oath was inſtantly taken, the warrant ſigned, and the doctor attended the conſtable in the execution of it.

The clerk then proceeded in taking the information of Robinſon, and had juſt finiſhed it, when the doctor returned with the utmoſt joy in his countenance, and *declared that* he had ſufficient evidence of the fact *in his poſſeſſion*. He had indeed two or three letters from

from Miſs Harris, in anſwer to the attorney's frequent demands of money for ſecrecy, that fully explained the whole villainy.

The juſtice now aſked the priſoner what he had to ſay for himſelf, or whether he choſe to ſay any thing in his own defence.

'Sir,' ſaid the attorney with great confidence, 'I am 'not to defend myſelf here. It will be of no ſervice 'to me; for I know you neither can nor will diſ-'charge me. But I am extremely innocent of all this 'matter, as I doubt not but to make appear to the 'ſatisfaction of a court of juſtice.'

The legal previous ceremonies were then gone through of binding over the proſecutor, &c. and then the attorney was committed to Newgate; whither he was eſcorted amidſt the acclamations of the populace.

When Murphy was departed, and a little calm reſtored in the houſe, the juſtice made his compliments of congratulation to Booth; who, as well as he could in his preſent tumult of joy, returned his thanks to both the magiſtrate and the doctor. They were now all preparing to depart, when Mr. Bondum ſtept up to Booth, and ſaid: 'Hold, ſir, you have forgot one 'thing——you have not given bail yet.'

This occaſioned ſome diſtreſs at this time; for the attorney's friend was departed; but when the juſtice heard this, he immediately offered himſelf as the other bondſman; and thus ended the affair.

It was now paſt ſix o'lock, and none of the gentlemen had yet dined. They very readily therefore accepted the magiſtrate's invitation, and went all together to his houſe.

And now the very firſt thing that was done, even before they ſat down to dinner, was to diſpatch a meſſenger to one of the beſt ſurgeons in town, to take care of Robinſon; and another meſſenger to Booth's lodgings, to prevent Amelia's concern at their ſtaying ſo long.

The latter however was to little purpoſe; for Amelia's patience had been worn out before, and ſhe had taken a hackney-coach, and driven to the bailiff's, where

where ſhe arrived a little after the departure of her huſband, and was thence directed to the juſtice's.

Though there was no kind of reaſon for Amelia's fright at hearing that her huſband and doctor Harriſon were gone before the juſtice; and though ſhe indeed imagined that they were there in the light of complainants, not of offenders; yet ſo tender were her fears for her huſband, and ſo much had her gentle ſpirits been lately agitated, that ſhe had a thouſand apprehenſions of ſhe knew not what. When ſhe arrived therefore at the houſe, ſhe ran directly into the room, where all the company were at dinner, ſcarce knowing what ſhe did, or whither ſhe was going.

She found her huſband in ſuch a ſituation, and diſcovered ſuch a chearfulneſs in his countenance, that ſo violent a turn was given to her ſpirits, that ſhe was juſt able, with the aſſiſtance of a glaſs of water, to ſupport herſelf. She ſoon however recovered her calmneſs, and in a little time began to eat what might indeed be almoſt called her breakfaſt.

The juſtice now wiſhed her joy of what had happened that day; for which ſhe kindly thanked him, apprehending he meant the liberty of her huſband. His worſhip might perhaps have explained himſelf more largely, had not the doctor given him a timely wink; for this wiſe and good man was fearful of making ſuch a diſcovery all at once to Amelia, leſt it ſhould overpower her; and luckily the juſtice's wife was not well enough acquainted with the matter to ſay any thing more on it than barely to aſſure the lady that ſhe joined in her huſband's congratulation.

Amelia was then in a clean white gown, which ſhe had that day redeemed, and was, indeed, dreſſed all over with great neatneſs and exactneſs; with the glow therefore which aroſe in her features from finding her huſband releaſed from his captivity, ſhe made ſo charming a figure, that ſhe attracted the eyes of the magiſtrate and of his wife; and they both agreed, when they were alone, that they had never ſeen ſo charming a creature; nay, Booth himſelf afterwards told *her that he ſcarce ever remembered her to look ſo extremely beautiful* as ſhe did that evening.

Whether Amelia's beauty, or the reflection on the remarkable act of juſtice he had performed, or whatever motive filled the magiſtrate with extraordinary good humour, and opened his heart and cellars, I will not determine; but he gave them ſo hearty a welcome, and they were all ſo pleaſed with each other, that Amelia, for that one night, truſted the care of her children to the woman where they lodged, nor did the company riſe from table till the clock ſtruck eleven.

They then ſeparated. Amelia and Booth, having been ſet down at their lodgings, retired into each other's arms; nor did Booth that evening, by the doctor's advice, mention one word of the grand affair to his wife.

CHAP. VIII.

Thus this hiſtory draws nearer to a concluſion.

IN the morning early Amelia received the following letter from Mrs. Atkinſon.

'The ſurgeon of the regiment, to which the captain my huſband lately belonged, and who came this evening to ſee the captain, hath almoſt frightened me out of my wits, by a ſtrange ſtory of your huſband being committed to priſon by a juſtice of peace for forgery. For Heaven's ſake, ſend me the truth. If my huſband can be of any ſervice, weak as he is, he will be carried in a chair to ſerve a brother officer, for whom he hath a regard, which I need not mention. Or if the ſum of twenty pound will be of any ſervice to you, I will wait upon you with it the moment I can get my cloaths on, the morning you receive this; for it is too late to ſend to-night. The captain begs his hearty ſervice and reſpects; and believe me,

'Dear Madam,

'Your ever affectionate friend,

'and humble ſervant,

'F. Atkinſon.'

When Amelia read this letter to Booth, they were both equally ſurprized, ſhe at the commitment for forgery, and he at ſeeing ſuch a letter from Mrs. Atkinſon; for he was a ſtranger yet to the reconciliation that had happened.

Booth's doubts were firſt ſatisfied by Amelia, from which he received great pleaſure; for he really had a very great affection and fondneſs for Mr. Atkinſon, who, indeed, ſo well deſerved it. 'Well, my dear,' ſaid he to Amelia ſmiling, 'ſhall we accept this gene-'rous offer?'

'O fy! no certainly,' anſwered ſhe.

'Why not,' cries Booth, 'it is but a trifle; and 'yet it will be of great ſervice to us?'

'But conſider, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'how ill theſe 'poor people can ſpare it.'

'They can ſpare it for a little while,' ſaid Booth; 'and we ſhall ſoon pay it them again.'

'When, my dear?' ſaid Amelia. 'Do, my dear 'Will, conſider our wretched circumſtances. I beg 'you let us go into the country immediately, and 'live upon bread and water, till fortune pleaſes to 'ſmile upon us.'

'I am convinced that day is not far off,' ſaid Booth. 'However, give me leave to ſend an anſwer to Mrs. 'Atkinſon, that we ſhall be glad of her company im-'mediately to breakfaſt.'

'You know I never contradict you,' ſaid ſhe; 'but 'I aſſure you it is contrary to my inclinations to take 'this money.'

'Well, ſuffer me,' cries he, 'to act this once 'contrary to your inclinations.' He then writ a ſhort note to Mrs. Atkinſon, and diſpatched it away immediately; which when he had done, Amelia ſaid, 'I ſhall be glad of Mrs. Atkinſon's company to break-'faſt; but yet I wiſh you would oblige me in refuſing 'this money. Take five guineas only. That is in-'deed ſuch a ſum, as, if we never ſhould pay it, would 'ſit light on my mind. The laſt perſons in the world 'from whom I would receive favours of that ſort, are 'the poor and generous.'

'You

'You can receive favours only from the generous,' cries Booth: 'and, to be plain with you, there are 'very few who are generous that are not poor.'

'What think you,' ſaid ſhe, 'of Dr. Harriſon?'

'I do aſſure you,' ſaid Booth, 'he is far from being rich. The doctor hath an income of little more 'than ſix hundred pounds a year; and I am convinced he gives away four of it. Indeed, he is one of 'the beſt œconomiſts in the world; but yet I am poſitive he never was at any time poſſeſſed of five hundred pounds ſince he hath been a man. Conſider, 'dear Emily, the late obligations we have to this 'gentleman; it would be unreaſonable to expect more, 'at leaſt at preſent; my half-pay is mortgaged for a 'year to come.—How then ſhall we live?'

'By our labour,' anſwered ſhe; 'I am able to labour, and I am ſure I am not aſhamed of it.'

'And do you really think you can ſupport ſuch a 'life?'

'I am ſure I could be happy in it,' anſwered Amelia. 'And why not I, as well as a thouſand others, 'who have not the happineſs of ſuch a huſband to 'make life delicious? why ſhould I complain of my 'hard fate, while ſo many, who are much poorer 'than I, enjoy theirs. Am I of a ſuperior rank of 'being to the wife of the honeſt labourer? am I not 'partaker of one common nature with her?'

'My angel,' cries Booth, 'it delights me to hear 'you talk thus, and for a reaſon you little gueſs; 'for I am aſſured that one who can ſo heroically en'dure adverſity, will bear proſperity with equal 'greatneſs of ſoul; for the mind that cannot be de'jected by the former, is not likely to be tranſported 'with the latter.'

'If it had pleaſed Heaven,' cried ſhe, 'to have 'tried me, I think, at leaſt I hope, I ſhould have pre'ſerved my humility.'

'Then, my dear,' ſaid he, 'I will relate you a 'dream I had laſt night. You know, you lately men'tioned a dream of yours.'

'Do ſo,' ſaid ſhe, 'I am attentive.'

'I dream'd

'I dreamt,' ſaid he, 'this night, that we were in 'the moſt miſerable ſituation imaginable. Indeed, 'in the ſituation we were yeſterday morning, or ra- 'ther worſe; that I was laid in a priſon for debt, and 'that you wanted a morſel of bread to feed the mouths 'of your hungry children. At length (for nothing 'you know is quicker than the tranſition in dreams) 'Dr. Harriſon, methought, came to me, with chearful- 'neſs and joy in his countenance. The priſon doors 'immediately flew open; and Dr. Harriſon introdu- 'ced you, gayly, though not richly, dreſſed. That 'you gently chid me for ſtaying ſo long; all on a 'ſudden appeared a coach with four horſes to it, in 'which was a maid ſervant with our two children. 'We both immediately went into the coach, and tak- 'ing our leave of the doctor, ſet out towards your 'country houſe: for yours I dreamt it was.—— I' 'only aſk you now, if this was real, and the tranſition 'almoſt as ſudden, could you ſupport it?'—

Amelia was going to anſwer, when Mrs. Atkinſon came into the room, and after very little previous ceremony preſented Booth with a bank note, which he received of her, ſaying, he would very ſoon repay it: a promiſe that a little offended Amelia, as ſhe thought he had no chance of keeping it.

The doctor preſently arrived, and the company ſat down to breakfaſt, during which Mrs. Atkinſon entertained them with the hiſtory of the doctors that had attended her huſband, by whoſe advice Atkinſon was recovered from every thing but the weakneſs which his diſtemper had occaſioned.

When the tea-table was removed, Booth told the doctor that he had acquainted his wife with a dream he had laſt night. 'I dreamt, doctor,' ſaid he, 'that 'ſhe was reſtored to her eſtate.

'Very well,' ſaid the doctor; 'and if I am to be 'the Oniropolos, I believe the dream will come to 'paſs. To ſay the truth, I have rather a better opi- 'nion of dreams than Horace had. Old Homer 'ſays, they came from Jupiter; and as to your dream, 'I *have often* had it in my waking thoughts, that 'ſome time or other that roguery (for ſo I was always

'convinced

'convinced it was) would be brought to light: for 'the ſame Homer ſays, as you, madam, (meaning 'Mrs. Atkinſon) very well know,

Εἴπερ γάρ τε καὶ αὐτίκ' Ὀλύμπιος οὐκ ἐτέλεσσεν,
Ἐκ τε καὶ ὀψὲ τελεῖ· σὺν τε μεγάλῳ ἀπέτισαν
Σὺν σφῇσιν κεφαλῇσι, καὶ αὐτοῖς καὶ τεκέεσσιν*.

'I have no Greek ears, ſir,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon. 'I believe, I could underſtand it in the Delphin 'Homer.'

'I wiſh,' cries he, 'my dear child, (to Amelia) 'you would read a little in the Delphin Ariſtotle, or 'elſe in ſome Chriſtian divine, to learn a doctrine 'which you will one day have a uſe for. I mean to 'bear the hardeſt of all human conflicts, and ſupport 'with an even temper, and without any violent tranſ-'ports of mind, a ſudden guſt of proſperity.

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'I ſhould almoſt think 'my huſband and you, doctor, had ſome very good 'news to tell me, by your uſing, both of you, the 'ſame introduction. As far as I know myſelf, I think 'I can anſwer, I can ſupport any degree of proſpe-'rity; and I think I yeſterday ſhewed I could: for I 'do aſſure you, it is not in the power of fortune to 'try me with ſuch another tranſition from grief to 'joy, as I conceived from ſeeing my huſband in pri-'ſon and at liberty.

'Well, you are a good girl,' cries the doctor, 'and 'after I have put on my ſpectacles I will try you.'

The doctor then took out a news paper, and read as follows:

'Yeſterday one Murphy, an eminent attorney at 'law, was committed to Newgate, for the forgery of 'a will under which an eſtate hath been for many 'years detained from the right owner.'

Now in this paragraph there is ſomething very remarkable, and that is——that it is true: but *opus eſt*

* 'If Jupiter doth not immediately execute his vengeance, he 'will however execute it at laſt; and their tranſgreſſions ſhall fall 'heavily on their own heads, and on their wives and children.'

planatum. In the Delphin edition of this news paper, ere is the following note upon the words *right owner:* The right owner of this eſtate is a young lady of the higheſt merit, whoſe maiden name was Harris, and who ſome time ſince was married to an idle fellow, one lieutenant Booth. And the beſt hiſtorians aſſure us, that letters from the elder ſiſter of this lady, which manifeſtly prove the forgery, and clear up the whole affair, are in the hands of an old parſon called Dr. Harriſon.'

'And is this really true,' cries Amelia?

'Yes, really, and ſincerely,' cries the doctor. The whole eſtate: for your mother left it you all, and is as ſurely yours, as if you was already in poſſeſſion.'

'Gracious Heaven,' cries ſhe, falling on her nees, 'I thank you."——And then ſtarting up, ſhe n to her huſband, and embracing him, cried, 'My dear love, I wiſh you joy: and I ought in gratitude to wiſh it you: for you are the cauſe of mine. It is upon yours, and my children's account, that I principally rejoice.

Mrs. Atkinſon roſe from her chair, and jumped out the room for joy, repeating,

Turne, quod optanti divûm promittere nemo
Auderet, volvenda dies, en, attulit ultro.*

Amelia now threw herſelf into a chair, complained e was a little faint, and begged a glaſs of water. he doctor adviſed her to be blooded; but ſhe refuſed, ying, ſhe required a vent of another kind ——— he then deſired her children to be brought to her, hom ſhe immediately caught in her arms, and hav- g profuſely cried over them for ſeveral minutes, de- ared ſhe was eaſy. After which, ſhe ſoon regained r uſual temper and complexion.

That day they dined together, and in the afternoon ey all, except the doctor, viſited captain Atkinſon;

* 'What none of all the Gods could grant thy vows,
'That, Turnus, this auſpicious day beſtows.

he

he repaired to the bailiff's houſe to viſit the ſick whom he found very chearful, the ſurgeon hav ſured him that he was in no manner of danger.

The doctor had a long ſpiritual diſcourſe wit binſon, who aſſured him that he ſincerely repen his paſt life; that he was reſolved to lead his days in a different manner, and to make what a he could for his ſins to the ſociety, by bringing the greateſt rogues in it to juſtice. There was cumſtance which much pleaſed the doctor, and him conclude that, however Robinſon had bee rupted by his old maſter, he had naturally a go poſition. This was, that Robinſon declared chiefly induced to the diſcovery by what had ha at the pawnbroker's, and by the miſeries wh there perceived he had been inſtrumental in br on Booth and his family.

The next day Booth and his wife, at the c inſtance, dined with colonel James and his where they were received with great civility, s matters were accommodated, without Booth knowing a ſyllable of the challenge even to thi

The doctor inſiſted very ſtrongly on having Harris taken into cuſtody, and ſaid, if ſhe w ſiſter, he would deliver her to juſtice. He add ſides, that it was impoſſible to ſkreen her, and on the proſecution, or, indeed, recover the Amelia at laſt begged the delay of one day o which time ſhe wrote a letter to her ſiſter inf her of the diſcovery, and the danger in wh ſtood, and begged her earneſtly to make her with many aſſurances that ſhe would never ſuf to know any diſtreſs. This letter ſhe ſent aw preſs, and it had the deſired effect: for Miſs having received ſufficient information from the ney to the ſame purpoſe, immediately ſet o Pool, and from thence to France, carrying wi all her money, moſt of her cloaths, and ſome fe els. She had, indeed, packed up plate and je the value of two thouſand pound and upwards Booth, to whom Amelia communicated the prevented her, by ordering the man that w

the expreſs (who had been a ſerjeant of the foot guards recommended to him by Atkinſon) to ſuffer the lady to go whither ſhe pleaſed, but not to take any thing with her except her cloaths, which he was carefully to ſearch. Theſe orders were obeyed punctually, and with theſe ſhe was obliged to comply.

Two days after the bird was flown, a warrant from the lord chief juſtice arrived to take her up, the meſſenger of which returned with the news of her flight, highly to the ſatisfaction of Amelia, and conſequently of Booth, and, indeed, not greatly to the grief of the doctor.

About a week afterwards, Booth and Amelia, with their children, and captain Atkinſon and his lady, all ſet forwards together for Amelia's houſe, where they arrived amidſt the acclamations of all the neighbours, and every public demonſtration of joy.

They found the houſe ready prepared to receive them by Atkinſon's friend, the old ſerjeant, and a good dinner prepared for them by Amelia's old nurſe, who was addreſſed with the utmoſt duty by her ſon and daughter, moſt affectionately careſſed by Booth and his wife, and by Amelia's abſolute command ſeated next to herſelf at the table. At which, perhaps, were aſſembled ſome of the beſt and happieſt people then in the world.

CHAP. IX.

In which the hiſtory is concluded.

HAVING brought our hiſtory to a concluſion, as to thoſe points in which we preſume our reader was chiefly intereſted, in the foregoing chapter; we ſhall in this, by way of epilogue, endeavour to ſatisfy his curioſity, as to what hath ſince happened to the principal perſonages of whom we have treated in the foregoing pages.

Colonel James and his lady, after living in a polite manner for many years together, at laſt agreed to live *in as polite a* manner aſunder. The Colonel hath *kept Miſs Matthews* ever ſince, and is at length grown

to doat on her (though now very diſagreeable in her perſon, and immenſely fat) to ſuch a degree, that he ſubmits to be treated by her in the moſt tyrannical manner.

He allows his lady eight hundred pounds a year, with which ſhe devides her time between Tunbridge, Bath, and London, and paſſes about nine hours in the twenty-four at cards. Her income is lately increaſed by three thouſand pounds left her by her brother colonel Bath, who was killed in a duel about ſix years ago, by a gentleman who told the colonel he differed from him in opinion.

The noble peer and Mrs. Elliſon have been both dead ſeveral years, and both of the conſequences of their favourite vices; Mrs. Elliſon having fallen a martyr to her liquor, and the other to his amours, by which he was at laſt become ſo rotten, that he ſtunk above ground.

The attorney, Murphy, was brought to his trial at the Old-Bailey; where, after much quibbling about the meaning of a very plain act of parliament, he was at length convicted of forgery, and was ſoon afterwards hanged at Tyburn.

The witneſs for ſome time ſeemed to reform his life, and received a ſmall penſion from Booth; after which, he returned to vicious courſes, took a purſe on the highway, was detected and taken, and followed the laſt ſteps of his old maſter. So apt are men, whoſe manners have been once thoroughly corrupted, to return, from any dawn of an amendment, into the dark paths of vice.

As to Miſs Harris, ſhe lived three years with a broken heart at Boulogne, where ſhe received annually fifty pounds from her ſiſter, who was hardly prevailed on by Dr. Harriſon not to ſend her a hundred, and then died in a moſt miſerable manner.

Mr. Atkinſon upon the whole hath led a very happy life with his wife, though he hath been ſometimes obliged to pay proper homage to her ſuperior underſtanding and knowledge. This, however, he chearfully ſubmits to, and ſhe makes him proper returns of fondneſs. They have two fine boys, of whom they are

equal

equally fond. He is lately advanced to the rank of captain, and laſt ſummer both he and his wife paid a viſit of three months to Booth and his wife.

Dr. Harriſon is grown old in years, and in honour; beloved and reſpected by all his pariſhioners, and by all his neighbours. He divides his time between his pariſh, his old town, and Booth's —— at which laſt place he had, two years ago, a gentle fit of the gout, being the firſt attack of that diſtemper. During this fit, Amelia was his nurſe, and her two eldeſt daughters ſat up alternately with him for a whole week. The eldeſt of thoſe girls, whoſe name is Amelia, is his favourite; ſhe is the picture of her mother, and it is thought the doctor hath diſtinguiſhed her in his will; for he hath declared that he will leave his whole fortune, except ſome few charities, among Amelia's children.

As to Booth and Amelia, fortune ſeems to have made them large amends for the tricks ſhe played them in their youth. They have, ever ſince the above period of this hiſtory, enjoyed an uninterrupted courſe of health and happineſs. In about ſix weeks after Booth's firſt coming into the country, he went to London, and paid all his debts of honour; after which, and a ſtay of two days only, he returned into the country, and hath never ſince been thirty miles from home. He hath two boys, and four girls; the eldeſt of the boys, he who hath made his appearance in this hiſtory, is juſt come from the univerſity, and is one of the fineſt gentlemen and beſt ſcholars of his age. The ſecond is juſt going from ſchool, and is intended for the church, that being his own choice. His eldeſt daughter is a woman grown, but we muſt not mention her age. A marriage was propoſed to her the other day with a young fellow of a good eſtate, but ſhe never would ſee him more than once; 'for doctor Harriſon,' ſays ſhe, 'told me he was illiterate, 'and I am ſure he is ill-natured.' The ſecond girl is three years younger than her ſiſter; and the others are yet children.

Amelia is ſtill the fineſt woman in England of her *age. Booth himſelf* often avers ſhe is as handſome

as

as ever. Nothing can equal the ſerenity of their lives. Amelia declared to me the other day, that ſhe did not remember to have ſeen her huſband out of humour theſe ten years; and upon my inſinuating to her, that he had the beſt of wives, ſhe anſwered with a ſmile, that ſhe ought to be ſo, for that he had made her the happieſt of women.

A N

N Q U I R Y

INTO

THE CAUSES

OF

'he late Increaſe of ROBBERS, *&c.*

WITH

ıe PROPOSALS for Remedying this GROWING EVIL.

IN WHICH

preſent reigning VICES are impartially expoſed; ıd the Laws that relate to the Proviſion for the ɔOR, and to the Puniſhment of FELONS, are large- and freely examined.

jam ſunt mediocres hominum libidines, non humanæ ıdaciæ ac tolerandæ. Nihil cogitant niſi cædem, niſi cendia, niſi rapinas.

CIC. in Catil. 2da.

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

PHILIP Lord HARDWICK,

Lord High Chancellor of GREAT BRITAIN.

MY LORD,

AS the reformation of any part of our civil polity requires as much the knowledge of the ſtateſman as of the lawyer, the following ſheets are, with the ſtricteſt propriety, addreſſed to a perſon of the higheſt eminence in both theſe capacities.

The ſubject of this treatiſe cannot be thought unworthy of ſuch a protection, becauſe it touches only thoſe evils which have ariſen in the lower branches of our conſtitution. This conſideration will account for their having hitherto eſcaped your lordſhip's notice; and that alone will account for their having ſo long prevailed: but your lordſhip will not, for this reaſon, think it below your regard; ſince, however ignoble the parts may be in which the diſeaſe is firſt engendered, it will in time be ſure to affect the whole body.

The ſubject, indeed, is of ſuch importance, that we may truly apply to it thoſe words of Cicero, in his firſt book of laws: *Ad Reipublicæ formandas et ſtabilitandas vires, et ad ſanandos Populos omnis pergit Oratio.* How far I have been able to ſucceed in the execution, muſt be ſubmitted to your lordſhip's candour. I hope, I have no immodeſt opinion of my own abilities; but, in truth, I have much leſs confidence in my authority. Indeed the higheſt authority is neceſſary to any degree of ſucceſs in an attempt of this kind. Permit me, therefore, my lord, to fly to the protection of the higheſt which doth *now* exiſt, or which perhaps ever did *exiſt, in this kingdom.*

This great ſanction is, I am convinced, always ready to ſupport what really tends to the public utility: if I fail, therefore, of obtaining the honour of it, I ſhall be fully ſatisfied that I do not deſerve it, and ſhall ſit down contented with the merit of a good intent: for ſurely there is ſome praiſe due to the bare deſign of doing a ſervice to the public. Nor can my enemies, I think, deny that I am entirely diſintereſted in my endeavour, unleſs they ſhould diſcover the gratification which my ambition finds in the opportunity of this addreſs.

I am, with the moſt profound reſpect,

MY LORD,

Your Lordſhip's moſt obedient,

moſt devoted humble ſervant,

HENRY FIELDING.

PREFACE.

THERE is nothing ſo much talked of, and ſo little underſtood in this country, as the *Conſtitution*. It is a word in the mouth of every man; and t, when we come to diſcourſe of the matter, there no ſubject on which our ideas are more confuſed and rplexed. Some, when they ſpeak of the conſtitun, confine their notions to the law; others to the leſlature; others, again, to the governing or execue part; and many there are, who jumble all theſe gether in one idea. One error, however, is comon to them all: for all ſeem to have the conception ſomething uniform and permanent, as if the conſtitution of England partook rather of the nature of e ſoil than of the climate, and was as fixed and conınt as the former, not as changing and variable as e latter.

Now in this word, *The Conſtitution*, are included e original and fundamental law of the kingdom, om whence all powers are derived, and by which ıey are circumſcribed; all legiſlative and executive ıthority; all thoſe municipal proviſions which are ɔmmonly called *The Laws*; and, laſtly, the cuſtoms, ıanners, and habits of the people. Theſe, joined toether, do, I apprehend, form the political; as the ɛveral members of the body, the animal œconomy, ıith the humours and habit, compoſe that which is alled the natural conſtitution.

The Greek philoſophy will, perhaps, help us to a ɛtter idea; for neither will the ſeveral conſtituent ıarts, nor the contexture of the whole, give an adeıuate notion of the word. By the *Conſtitution* is, ineed, rather meant ſomething which reſults from he order and diſpoſition of the whole; ſomething eſembling that harmony for which the *Theban* in *Plato's Phædo* contends; which he calls ἀόρατόν τι ἠ ἀσώματον, *ſomething inviſible and incorporeal.* For many of the *Greeks* imagined the ſoul to reſult from he κρᾶσις *or compoſition* of the parts of the body; ien *theſe were properly* tempered together, as har-

mony doth from the proper compoſition of the ſeveral parts in a well-tuned muſical inſtrument: in the ſame manner, from the diſpoſition of the ſeveral parts in ſtate, ariſes that which we call the *Conſtitution*.

In this diſpoſition the laws have ſo conſiderable ſhare, that, as no man can perfectly underſtand the whole, without knowing the parts of which it is compoſed, it follows, that, to have a juſt notion of our conſtitution, without a competent knowledge of the laws, is impoſſible. Without this, the reading over our hiſtorians may afford amuſement, but will very little inſtruct us in the true eſſentials of our conſtitution. Nor will this knowledge alone ſerve our purpoſe. The mere lawyer, however ſkilful in his profeſſion, who is not verſed in the genius, manners, and habits of the people, makes but a wretched politician. Hence the hiſtorian, who is ignorant of our law, and the lawyer who is ignorant of our hiſtory, have agreed in that common error, remarked above, of conſidering our conſtitution as ſomething fixed and permanent: for the exterior form of government (however the people are changed) ſtill, in a great degree, remains what it was; and the ſame, notwithſtanding all its alterations, may be ſaid of the law.

To explain this a little farther: From the original of the lower houſe of parliament to this day, the ſupreme power hath been veſted in the king and the two houſes of parliament. Theſe two houſes have, each at different times, carried very different weights in the balance, and yet the form of government remained ſtill one and the ſame; ſo hath it happened to the law; the ſame courts of juſtice, the ſame form of trials, &c. have preſerved the notion of identity, though, in real truth, the preſent governing powers and the preſent legal proviſions bear ſo little reſemblance to thoſe of our anceſtors in the reign of king John, or indeed in later times, that, could any lawyer or ſtateſman of thoſe days be recalled to life, he would make, I believe, a very indifferent figure in Weſtminſter-hall, or in any of the parts there adjacent.

To perceive the alterations in our conſtitution, doth *in fact*, require a pretty juſt knowledge both of the people and of the laws: for either of theſe may be

greatly changed, without producing any immediate effect on the other. The alterations in the great wheels of ſtate above-mentioned, which are ſo viſible in our hiſtorians, are not noticed in our laws, as very few of the great changes in the law have fallen under the eye of our hiſtorians.

Many of both kinds have appeared in our conſtitution; but I ſhall at preſent confine myſelf to one only, as being that which principally relates to the ſubject of the following treatiſe.

If the conſtitution, as I have above aſſerted, be the reſult of the diſpoſition of the ſeveral parts beforementioned, it follows, that this diſpoſition can never be altered, without producing a proportional change in the conſtitution. 'If the ſoul,' ſays Simmias in *Plato*, 'be a harmony reſulting from the diſpoſition of the 'corporeal parts, it follows, that when this diſpoſi-'tion is confounded, and the body is torn by diſeaſes 'or other evils, the ſoul immediately (whatever be 'her divinity) muſt periſh.' This will be apparent, if we caſt our eyes a moment towards the animal œconomy; and it is no leſs true in the political.

The cuſtoms, manners, and habits of the people, do, as I have ſaid, form one part of the political conſtitution; if theſe are altered, therefore, this muſt be changed likewiſe; and here, as in the natural body, the diſorder of any part will, in its conſequence, affect the whole.

One known diviſion of the people in this nation is into the nobility, the gentry, and the commonalty. What alterations have happened among the two former of theſe, I ſhall not at preſent enquire; but that the laſt, in their cuſtoms, manners, and habits, are greatly changed from what they were, I think to make appear.

If we look into the earlieſt ages, we ſhall find the condition of this third part to have been very low and mean. The higheſt order of this rank, before the Conqueſt, were thoſe tenants in ſocage, who held their lands by the ſervice of the plough; who, as Littleton tells us, 'were to come with their plough for 'certain days in the year, to plough and ſow the de-

'meſne of the lords;' 'as the villains,' ſaith the ſame author, 'were to carry and recarry the dung of his 'lord, ſpread it upon his land, and to perform ſuch 'like ſervices.'

This latter was rightly accounted a ſlaviſh tenure. The villains were indeed conſidered in law as a kind of chattel belonging to their maſters: for though theſe had not the power of life and death over them, nor even of maiming them with impunity, yet theſe villains had not even the capacity of purchaſing lands or goods; but the lord, on ſuch purchaſe, might enter into the one, and ſeize the other for his own uſe. And as for the land which they held in villenage, though lord Coke ſays it was not only held at the will of the lord, but according to the cuſtom of the manor; yet, in antient times, if the lord ejected them, they were manifeſtly without remedy.

And as to the former, though they were accounted freemen, yet were they obliged to ſwear fealty to their lord; and though Mr. Rapin be miſtaken, when he ſays they could not alienate the land (for before the ſtatute of *Magna Charta*, chap. 32. they could have given or ſold the whole, but without any alteration of the tenure) yet was the eſtate of theſe but very mean. 'Though they are called freemen,' ſays lord Coke, 'yet they ploughed, harrowed, reaped, and mowed, '&c. for the lord;' and Bracton, *Dicuntur Socmanni eo quod deputati ſunt tantummodo ad culturam.*

Beſides ſuch as were bound by their tenures to the ſervice of agriculture, the number of freemen below the degree of gentry, and who got their livelihood in the mercantile or mechanical way, was very inconſiderable. As to the ſervants, they were chiefly bound by tenure, and thoſe of the lower ſort differed very little from ſlaves.

That this eſtate of the commonalty is greatly changed, is apparent, and to this alteration many cauſes in ſubſequent ages have contributed.

Firſt, The oath of fealty, or fidelity, which of old *time was* adminiſtered with great ceremony, became *afterwards* to be omitted; and though this fealty ſtill remained

remained incident to every ſocage tenure, yet the omiſſion of the form was not without its conſequences; for, as lord Coke ſays, ſpeaking of homage, *Prudent antiquity did, for the more ſolemnity and better memory and obſervation of that which is to be done, expreſs ſubſtances under ceremonies.*

2dly, Whereas in the antient tenures the principal reſervation was of perſonal ſervices from the inferior tenants, the rent being generally trifling, ſuch as hens, capons, roſes ſpurs, hawks, &c. afterwards, the avarice or neceſſity of the lords incited them to convert theſe for the moſt part into money, which tended greatly to weaken the power of the lord, and to raiſe the freedom and independency of the tenant.

3dly, The diſmembering manors by leaſes for years, as it flowed from the ſame ſources, ſo it produced the ſame effects. Theſe were probably very rare before the reign of Edward I. at which time the ſtatute of Glouceſter ſecured the eſtate of the tenant.

4thly, The eſtate of the villain or copyholder ſeems clearly, as I have ſaid, to have originally been holden only at the will of the lord; but the law was afterwards altered, and in the reign of Edward IV, ſome of the beſt judges were of opinion, that if the copyholder was unlawfully ejected by his lord, he ſhould have an action of treſpaſs againſt him at the common law.

From this time the eſtate of the copyholder (which, as Briton tells us, was formerly a baſe tenure) began to grow into repute; and, though ſtill diſtinguiſhed in ſome privileges from a freehold, became the poſſeſſion of many opulent and powerful perſons.

By theſe and ſuch like means the commonalty, by degrees, ſhook off their vaſſalage, and became more and more independent on their ſuperiors. Even ſervants, in proceſs of time, acquired a ſtate of freedom and independency, unknown to this rank in any other nation; and which, as the law now ſtands, is inconſiſtent with a ſervile condition.

But nothing hath wrought ſuch an alteration in this order of people, as the introduction of trade. This hath indeed given a new face to the whole nation, hath in a great meaſure ſubverted the former ſtate of affairs, and hath almoſt totally changed the manners, cuſtoms, and habits of the people, more eſpecially of the lower ſort. The narrowneſs of their fortune is changed into wealth; the ſimplicity of their manners into craft; their frugality into luxury; their humility into pride; and their ſubjection into equality.

The philoſopher, perhaps, will think this a bad exchange, and may be inclined to cry out with the poet,

——*Sævior armis*
Luxuria incubuit——
Nullum crimen abeſt, facinuſque libidinis, ex quo
Paupertas Romana perit.

Again,

Prima peregrinos obſcœna pecunia mores
Intulit, et turpi fregerunt ſæcula luxu
Divitiæ molles——

But the politician finds many emoluments to compenſate all the moral evils introduced by trade, by which the grandeur and power of the nation is carried to a pitch that it could never otherwiſe have reached; arts and ſciences are improved, and human life is embelliſhed with every ornament, and furniſhed with every comfort which it is capable of taſting.

In all theſe aſſertions he is right; but ſurely he forgets himſelf a little, when he joins the philoſopher in lamenting the introduction of luxury as a caſual evil for as riches are the *certain* conſequence of trade, ſo is luxury the no leſs *certain* conſequence of riches; nay trade and luxury do indeed ſupport each other; and this latter, in its turn, becomes as uſeful to trade, as trade had been before to the ſupport of luxury.

To prevent this conſequence therefore of a flouriſhing commerce, is totally to change the nature of things and to ſeparate the effect from the cauſe: A matter as impoſſible in the political body as in the natural. Vice and diſeaſes, with like phyſical neceſſity, ariſe from certain

certain habits in both; and to reſtrain and palliate the evil conſequences, is all that lies within the reach of art. How far it is the buſineſs of the politician to interfere in the caſe of luxury, we have attempted to ſhew in the following treatiſe.

Now, to conceive that ſo great a change as this in the people ſhould produce no change in the conſtitution, is to diſcover, I think, as great ignorance as would appear in the phyſician, who ſhould aſſert, that the whole ſtate of the blood may be entirely altered from poor to rich, from cool to inflamed, without producing any alteration in the conſtitution of the man.

To put this in the cleareſt light: there appear to me to be four ſorts of political power; that of bodily ſtrength, that of the mind, the power of the purſe, and the power of the ſword. Under the ſecond of theſe diviſions may be ranged all the art of the legiſlator and politician, all the power of laws and government. Theſe do conſtitute the civil power; and a ſtate may then be ſaid to be in good order, when all the other powers are ſubſervient to this; when they own its ſuperior excellence and energy, pay it a ready obedience, and all unite in ſupport of its rule.

But ſo far are theſe powers from paying ſuch voluntary ſubmiſſion, that they are all extremely apt to rebel, and to aſſert their own ſuperiority; but none is more rebellious in its nature, or more difficult to be governed, than that of the purſe or money. Self-opinion, arrogance, inſolence, and impatience of rule, are its almoſt inſeparable companions.

Now if theſe aſſertions are true, what an immenſe acceſſion of this power hath accrued to the commonalty by the increaſe of trade? for though the other orders have acquired an addition by the ſame means, yet this is not in the ſame proportion, as every reader, who will revolve the propoſition but a moment in his own mind, muſt be ſatisfied.

And what may we hence conclude? is that civil power, which was adapted to the government of this order of people in that ſtate in which they were at the Conqueſt, capable of ruling them in their preſent ſitua-

tion? hath this civil power kept equal pace with them in the increaſe of its force, or hath it not rather, by the remiſſneſs of the magiſtrate, loſt much of its antient energy? where is now that power of the ſheriff, which could formerly awaken and arm a whole county in an inſtant? where is that *poſſe comitatus*, which attended at his beck? what is become of the conſtitutions of Alfred, which the reader will find ſet forth at large in the following treatiſe? what of the antient conſervators of the peace? have the juſtices, on whom this whole power devolves, an authority ſufficient for the purpoſe? In ſome counties, perhaps, you may find an overgrown tyrant, who lords it over his neighbours and tenants with deſpotic ſway, and who is as regardleſs of the law as he is ignorant of it; but as to the magiſtrate of a leſs fortune, and more knowledge, every riotous independent butcher or baker, with two or three thouſand pounds in his pocket, laughs at his power, and every pettyfogger makes him tremble.

It is a common and popular complaint, that the juſtices of peace have already too much power. Indeed a very little is too much, if it be abuſed; but, in truth, this complaint proceeds from a miſtake of buſineſs for power: The buſineſs of the juſtice is indeed multiplied by a great number of ſtatutes; but I know not of any (the riot act perhaps excepted) which hath at all enlarged his power. And what the force of that act is, and how able the magiſtrate is, by means of the civil power alone, to execute it in any popular commotion, I have myſelf experienced. But when a mob of chairmen or ſervants, or a gang of thieves and ſharpers, are almoſt too big for the civil authority to ſuppreſs, what muſt be the caſe in a ſeditious tumult, or general riot of the people?

From what hath been ſaid, I may, I think, conclude, that the conſtitution of this country is altered from its antient ſtate.

2dly, That the power of the commonalty hath received an immenſe addition; and that the civil power having

having not increaſed, but decreaſed, in the ſame proportion, is not able to govern them.

What may and muſt be the conſequences of this, as well as what remedy can be applied to it, I leave to the conſideration of others: I have proceeded far enough already on the ſubject, to draw ſufficient ill-will on myſelf, from unmeaning or ill-meaning people, who either do not foreſee the miſchievous tendency of a total relaxation of government, or who have ſome private wicked purpoſe to effect from public confuſion.

In plain truth, the principal deſign of this whole work, is to rouſe the CIVIL power from its preſent lethargic ſtate; a deſign, which alike oppoſes thoſe wild notions of liberty that are inconſiſtent with all government, and thoſe pernicious ſchemes of government, which are deſtructive of true liberty. However contrary indeed theſe principles may ſeem to each other, they have both the ſame common intereſt; or, rather, the former are the wretched tools of the latter: for anarchy is almoſt ſure to end in ſome kind of tyranny.

Dr. Middleton, in his Life of Cicero, hath a fine obſervation to my preſent purpoſe, with which I will conclude this Preface.

'From the railleries of the Romans, (ſays he) on 'the *barbarity and miſery of our iſland*, one cannot help 'reflecting on the ſurpriſing fate and revolutions of 'kingdoms: how Rome, once the miſtreſs of the 'world, the ſeat of arts, empire, and glory, now 'lies ſunk in ſloth, ignorance, and poverty; enſlaved 'to the moſt cruel as well as to the moſt contemptible of tyrants, *ſuperſtition and religious impoſture*: 'while this remote country, anciently the jeſt and 'contempt of the *polite Romans*, is become the happy 'ſeat of liberty, plenty, and letters; flouriſhing in 'all the arts and refinements of civil life; yet running 'perhaps the ſame courſe which Rome itſelf had run 'before it; from virtuous induſtry to wealth; from 'wealth to luxury; from luxury to an impatience 'of *diſcipline* and corruption of morals; till, by a

'total degeneracy and loſs of virtue, being grown 'ripe for deſtruction, it falls a prey at laſt to ſome 'hardy oppreſſor; and, with the loſs of liberty, 'loſing every thing elſe that is valuable, ſinks gra- 'dually again into its original barbariſm.'

AN ENQUIRY INTO THE CAUSES OF The late Increaſe of ROBBERS, &c.

INTRODUCTION.

THE great increaſe of Robberies within theſe few years, is an evil which to me appears to deſerve ſome attention; and the rather as it ſeems (though already become ſo flagrant) not yet to have arrived to that height of which it is capable, and which it is likely to attain: For diſeaſes in the political, as in the natural body, ſeldom fail going on to their criſis, eſpecially when nouriſhed and encouraged by faults in the conſtitution. In fact, I make no doubt, but that the ſtreets of this town, and the roads leading to it, will ſhortly be impaſſable, without the utmoſt hazard; nor are we threatened with ſeeing leſs dangerous gangs of rogues among us, than thoſe which the Italians call the Banditti.

Should this ever happen to be the caſe, we ſhall have ſufficient reaſon to lament that remiſſneſs by which this evil was ſuffered to grow to ſo great a height. All diſtempers, if I may once more reſume the alluſion, the ſooner they are oppoſed, admit of the eaſier and the ſafer cure. The great difficulty of extirpating deſperate gangs of robbers, when once collected into a body, appears from our own hiſtory in former times. France hath given us a later exam-

ple

ple in the long reign of Cartouche, and his Banditti; and this under an abſolute monarchy, which affords much more ſpeedy and efficacious remedies againſt theſe political diſorders, than can be adminiſtred in a free ſtate, whoſe forms of correction are extremely ſlow and incertain, and whoſe puniſhments are the mildeſt and the moſt void of terror of any other in the known world.

For my own part, I cannot help regarding theſe depredations in a moſt ſerious light: nor can I help wondering that a nation ſo jealous of her liberties, that from the ſlighteſt cauſe, and often without any cauſe at all, we are always murmuring at our ſuperiors, ſhould tamely and quietly ſupport the invaſion of her properties by a few of the loweſt and vileſt among us. Doth not this ſituation in reality level us with the moſt enſlaved countries? If I am to be aſſaulted, and pillaged, and plundered; if I can neither ſleep in my own houſe, nor walk the ſtreets, nor travel in ſafety; is not my condition almoſt equally bad whether a licenſed or unlicenſed rogue, a dragoon or a robber, be the perſon who aſſaults and plunders me? the only difference which I can perceive is, that the latter evil appears to be more eaſy to remove.

If this be, as I clearly think it is, the caſe, ſurely there are few matters of more general concern than to put an immediate end to theſe outrages, which are already become ſo notorious, and which, as I obſerved, do ſeem to threaten us with ſuch a dangerous increaſe. What indeed may not the public apprehend, when they are informed as an unqueſtionable fact, that there are at this time a great gang of rogues, whoſe number falls little ſhort of a hundred, who are incorporated in one body, have officers and a treaſury, and have reduced theft and robbery into a regular ſyſtem. There are of this ſociety men who appear in all diſguiſes, and mix in moſt companies. Nor are they better verſed in every art of cheating, thieving, and robbing, than they are armed with every method of evading the law, if they ſhould ever be diſcovered, and an attempt made to bring them to juſtice. Here, if they fail in reſcuing the priſoner, or (which ſeldom happens)

happens) in bribing or deterring the profecutor, they have for their laſt reſource ſome rotten members of the law to forge a defence for them, and a great number of falſe witneſſes ready to ſupport it.

Having ſeen the moſt convincing proofs of all this, I cannot help thinking it high time to put ſome ſtop to the further progreſs of ſuch impudent and audacious inſults, not only on the properties of the ſubject, but on the national juſtice, and on the laws themſelves. The means of accompliſhing this (the beſt which ſuggeſt themſelves to me) I ſhall ſubmit to the public conſideration; after having firſt enquired into the cauſes of the preſent growth of this evil, and whence we have great reaſon to apprehend its further increaſe. Some of theſe I am too well verſed in the affairs of this world to expect to ſee removed; but there are others, which, without being over ſanguine, we may hope to remedy; and thus perhaps one ill conſequence, at leaſt, of the more ſtubborn political diſeaſes may ceaſe.

SECT. I.

Of too frequent and expenſive diverſions among the lower kind of people.

FIRST then, I think, that the vaſt torrent of luxury, which of late years hath poured itſelf into this nation, hath greatly contributed to produce, among many others, the miſchief I here complain of. I aim not here to ſatirize the great, among whom luxury is probably rather a moral than a political evil. But vices no more than diſeaſes will ſtop with them; for bad habits are as infectious by example, as the plague itſelf by contact. In free countries, at leaſt, it is a branch of liberty claimed by the people to be as wicked and as profligate as their ſuperiors. Thus while the nobleman will emulate the grandeur of a prince; and the gentleman will aſpire to the proper ſtate of the nobleman, the tradeſman ſteps from behind his counter into the vacant place of the gentleman. *Nor doth the* confuſion end here: it reaches the very dregs

dregs of the people, who, aſpiring ſtill to a degree beyond that which belongs to them, and not being able by the fruits of honeſt labour to ſupport the ſtate which they affect, diſdain the wages to which their induſtry would intitle them; and abandoning themſelves to idleneſs, the more ſimple and poor ſpirited betake themſelves to a ſtate of ſtarving and beggary, while thoſe of more art and courage become thieves, ſharpers, and robbers.

Could luxury be confined to the palaces of the great, the ſociety would not perhaps be much affected with it; at leaſt, the miſchiefs, which I am now intending to obviate, can never be the conſequence. For though, perhaps, there is not more of real virtue in the higher ſtate, yet the ſenſe of honour is there more general and prevalent. But there is a much ſtronger reaſon. The means bear no probable proportion to the end: for the loſs of thouſands, or of a great eſtate, is not to be relieved or ſupplied by any means of common theft or robbery.—With regard to ſuch evils, therefore the legiſlature might be juſtified in leaving the puniſhment, as well as the pernicious conſequence, to end in the miſery, diſtreſs, and ſometimes utter ruin, of a private family. But when this vice deſcends downward to the tradeſman, the mechanic, and the labourer, it is certain to engender many political miſchiefs; and among the reſt it is moſt evidently the parent of theft and robbery, to which not only the motive of want but of ſhame conduces: for there is no greater degree of ſhame than the tradeſman generally feels at the firſt inability to make his regular payments; nor is there any difficulty which he would not undergo to avoid it. Here then the highway promiſes, and hath, I doubt not, often, given relief. Nay, I remember very lately a highwayman who confeſſed ſeveral roberies before me, his motive to which, he aſſured me (and ſo it appeared) was to pay a bill that was ſhortly to become due. In this caſe, therefore, the public becomes intereſted; and conſequently the legiſlature is obliged to interpoſe.

To give a final blow to luxury by any general prohibition, if it would be adviſeable, is by no means poſſible.

oſſible. To ſay the truth, bad habits in the body olitic, eſpecially if of any duration, are ſeldom to be vholly eradicated. Palliatives alone are to be applied; ınd theſe too in a free conſtitution muſt be of the gentleſt kind, and as much as poſſible adapted to the taſte ınd genius of the people.

The gentleſt method which I know, and at the ſame time perhaps one of the moſt effectual, of ſtopping the progreſs of vice, is by removing the temptation. Now the two great motives to luxury, in the mind of man, are vanity and voluptuouſneſs. The former of theſe operates but little in this regard with the lower order of people. I do not mean that they have leſs of this paſſion than their betters; but the apparent impoſſibility of gratifying it this way deters them, and diverts at leaſt this paſſion into another channel; for we find it puts them rather on vying with each other in the reputation of wealth, than in the outward appearance of ſhew and grandeur. Voluptuouſneſs, or the love of pleaſure, is that alone which leads them into luxury. Here then the temptation is with all poſſible care to be withdrawn from them.

Now what greater temptation can there be to voluptuouſneſs, than a place where every ſenſe and appetite of which it is compounded, are fed and delighted; where the eyes are feaſted with ſhew and the ears with muſic, and where gluttony and drunkenneſs are allured by every kind of dainty; nay, where the fineſt women are expoſed to view, and where the meaneſt perſon who can dreſs himſelf clean, may in ſome degree mix with his betters, and thus perhaps ſatisfy his vanity as well as his love of pleaſure?

It may poſſibly be ſaid that theſe diverſions are cheap: I anſwer, that is one objection I have to them: was the price as high as that of a ridotto or an opera, it would, like theſe diverſions, be confined to the higher people only; beſides, the cheapneſs is really a deluſion. Unthinking men are often deceived into expence; as I once knew an honeſt gentleman, who carried his wife and two daughters to a maſquerade, being told that he could have four tickets for four guineas; but found afterwards, that in dreſſes, maſques,

'as both from gentle remiſſion will acquire ſtrength. 'From conſtant labour ariſes a certain dulneſs and 'languor of the ſpirits; nor would men with ſuch 'eagerneſs affect them, if ſport or merriment had not 'a certain natural ſweetneſs inherent in themſelves; 'the frequent uſe of which, however, will deſtroy all 'gravity and force in our minds. Sleep is neceſſary 'to our refreſhment; but if this be continued night 'and day, it will become death. There is a great 'difference between the remiſſion of any thing and its 'diſſolution. Lawgivers, therefore, inſtituted cer-'tain holydays, that the people might be compelled 'by law to merriment, interpoſing this as a neceſſary 'temperament to their labours [f].'

Thus the Greek and Latin philoſophers, though they derive the inſtitution differently, the one alledging a divine and the other a human original, both agree that a neceſſary relaxation from labour was the only end for which diverſion was invented and allowed to the people. This inſtitution, as the former of theſe great writers tells us, was groſly perverted even in his time; but ſurely neither then, nor in any age or nation, until now, was this perverſion carried to ſo ſcandalous an exceſs as it is at preſent in this kingdom, and eſpecially in and near the metropolis, where the places of pleaſure are almoſt become numberleſs: for, beſides thoſe great ſcenes of rendezvous, where the nobleman and his taylor, the lady of quality and her tirewoman, meet together and form one common aſſembly, what an immenſe variety of places have this town and its neighbourhood ſet apart for the amuſement of the loweſt order of the people; and where the maſter of the houſe, or wells, or garden, may be ſaid to angle only in the kennels, where, baiting with the vileſt materials, he catches only the thoughtleſs and taſteleſs rabble? and theſe are carried on, not on a ſingle day, or in a ſingle week; but all of them during half, and ſome during the whole year.

If a computation was made of the money expended in theſe temples of idleneſs by the artificer, the handi-

[f] Sen. De Tranquill. Animi, p. 167. edit. Lipſ. craft

craft, the apprentice, and even the common labourer, the ſum would appear exceſſive; but without putting myſelf to that trouble, I believe the reader will permit me to conclude that it is much greater than ſuch perſons can or ought to afford; eſpecially as idleneſs, its neceſſary attendant, adds greatly to the debtor's ſide in the account; and that the neceſſary conſequence muſt be ruin to many, who, from being uſeful members of the ſociety, will become a heavy burden or abſolute nuiſance to the public; it being indeed a certain method to fill the ſtreets with beggars, and the gaols with debtors and thieves.

That this branch of luxury hath grown to its preſent height, is owing partly to a defect in the laws; and this defect may, with great decency and reſpect to the legiſlature, be very truly imputed to the recency of the evil; for, as our anceſtors knew it not, they may be well excuſed for not having foreſeen and guarded againſt it. If therefore it ſhould ſeem now neceſſary to be retrenched, a new law will, I apprehend, be neceſſary for that purpoſe; the powers of the magiſtrate being ſcarce extenſive enough, under any proviſion extant, to deſtroy a hydra now become ſo pregnant and dangerous. And it would be too dangerous as well as too invidious a taſk to oppoſe the mad humours of the populace, by the force of any doubtful obſolete law; which, as I have hinted before, could not have been directly levelled at a vice, which did not exiſt at the time when the law was made.

But, while I am recommending ſome reſtraint of this branch of luxury, which ſurely appears to be neceſſary, I would be underſtood to aim at the retrenchment only, not at the extirpation, of diverſion; nay, and in this reſtraint, I confine myſelf entirely to the lower order of people. Pleaſure always hath been, and always will be, the principal buſineſs of perſons of faſhion and fortune, and more eſpecially of the ladies, for whom I have infinitely too great an honour and reſpect to *rob them of* any their leaſt amuſement. Let *them have their* plays, operas, and oratorios, their *maſquerades* and ridottos; their aſſemblies, drums, routs,

routs, riots, and hurricanes; their Ranelagh a Vauxhall; their Bath, Tunbridge, Briſtol, Scarl rough, and Cheltenham; and let them have th beaus and danglers to attend them at all theſe; i the only uſe for which ſuch beaus are fit; and I h ſeen, in the courſe of my life, that it is the only to which, by ſenſible women, they are applied.

In diverſion, as in many other particulars, the per part of life is diſtinguiſhed from the lower. the great therefore anſwer for the employment of th time, to themſelves, or to their ſpiritual governc The ſociety will receive ſome temporal advantage fr their luxury. The more toys which children of ages conſume, the briſker will be the circulation money, and the greater the increaſe of trade.

The buſineſs of the politician is only to prev the contagion from ſpreading to the uſeful part mankind, the ΕΠΙΠΟΝΟΝ ΠΕΦΥΚΟΣ ΓΕΝΟΣ [g] and this is the buſineſs of perſons of faſhion and fort too, in order that the labour and induſtry of the may adminiſter to their pleaſures, and furniſh th with the means of luxury. To the upper part mankind Time is an enemy, and (as they themſel often confeſs) their chief labour is to kill it; where with the others, time and money are almoſt ſyno mous; and as they have very little of each to ſpare, becomes the legiſlature, as much as poſſible, to ſ preſs all temptations whereby they may be induced profuſely to ſquander either the one or the other; ſi all ſuch profuſion muſt be repaired at the coſt of public.

Such places of pleaſure, therefore, as are totally apart for the uſe of the great world, I meddle with. And though Ranelagh and Vauxhall, by r ſon of their price, are not entirely appropriated to people of faſhion, yet they are ſeldom frequented any below the middle rank; and a ſtrict regard to cency is preſerved in them both. But ſurely two ſ places are ſufficient to contain all thoſe who have title to ſpend their time in this idle, though otherw

[g] Plato.

innocent way. Nor ſhould ſuch a faſhion be allowed to ſpread into every village round London, and by degrees all over the kingdom; by which means, not only idleneſs, but all kinds of immorality, will be encouraged.

I cannot diſmiſs this head, without mentioning a notorious nuiſance, which hath lately ariſen in this town; I mean, thoſe balls where men and women of looſe reputation meet in diſguiſed habits. As to the maſquerade in the Hay-market, I have nothing to ſay; I really think it a ſilly rather than a vicious entertainment; but the caſe is very different with theſe inferiour maſquerades; for theſe are indeed no other than the temples of drunkenneſs, lewdneſs, and all kind of debauchery.

SECT. II.

Of DRUNKENNESS, *a ſecond conſequence of luxury among the vulgar.*

BUT the expence of money, and loſs of time, with their certain conſequences, are not the only evils which attend the luxury of the vulgar; drunkenneſs is almoſt inſeparably annexed to the pleaſures of ſuch people; a vice by no means to be conſtrued as a ſpiritual offence alone, ſince ſo many temporal miſchiefs ariſe from it; amongſt which are very frequently robbery and murder itſelf.

I do not know a more excellent inſtitution than that of Pittacus, mentioned by Ariſtotle in his Politics [*b*]; by which a blow given by a drunken man, was more ſeverely puniſhed than if it had been given by one that was ſober; *for Pittacus*, ſays Ariſtotle, *conſidered the utility of the public (as drunken men are more apt to ſtrike) and not the excuſe, which might otherwiſe be allowed to their drunkenneſs.* And ſo far both the civil law and our own have followed this inſtitution, that neither have admitted drunkenneſs to be an excuſe for any crime.

[*b*] L. ii. c. 10.

This

This odious vice (indeed the parent of all others) as hiſtory informs us, was firſt introduced into this kingdom by the Danes, and with very miſchievous effects. Wherefore that excellent prince Edgar the peaceable, when he ſet about reforming the manners of his people, applied himſelf very particularly to the remedy of this great evil, and ordered ſilver or gold pins to be fixed to the ſides of their pots and cups, beyond which it was not lawful for any perſon to drink [*i*].

What penalty was affixed to the breach of this inſtitution, I know not; nor do I find any puniſhment in our books for the crime of drunkenneſs, till the time of Jac. I. in the fourth year of whoſe reign it was enacted, 'That every perſon lawfully convicted 'of drunkenneſs ſhall, for every ſuch offence, forfeit 'the ſum of five ſhillings, to be paid within a week 'next after his, her, or their conviction, to the hands 'of the church-wardens of the pariſh where, &c. to 'the uſe of the poor. In default of payment, the ſum 'to be levied by diſtreſs; and, in default of diſtreſs, 'the offender is to be committed to the ſtocks, there 'to remain for the ſpace of ſix hours [*k*].'

For the ſecond offence, they are to be bound to their good behaviour, with two ſureties, in a recognizance of ten pounds [*l*].

Nor is only that degree of drunkenneſs forbidden, which Mr. Dalton deſcribes, 'ſo as to ſtagger and 'real to and fro, and where the ſame legs which carry 'him into a houſe, cannot carry him out again [*m*];' for, by the ſame act of parliament, all perſons who continue drinking or tipling in any inn, victualling-houſe, or ale-houſe, in their own city, town or pariſh (unleſs, ſuch as being invited by a traveller, ſhall accompany him during his neceſſary abode there; or except labouring and handicraftmen in cities, and corporate and market towns, upon a working day, for an hour at dinner-time, in ale-houſes, where they take their diet; and except labourers and workmen,

[*i*] Echard, p. 88.
[*k*] Jac. I. cap. v.
[*l*] Jac. I. chap. v. ſect. 6.
[*m*] Dalt. chap. vii. ſect. 5.

who, during their continuance in any work, ſhall lodge or victual in any inn, &c. or except for ſome urgent and neceſſary occaſion, to be allowed by two juſtices of the peace) ſhall forfeit the ſum of three ſhillings and ſixpence, for the uſe of the poor; to be levied as before, and, for want of diſtreſs, to be put in the ſtocks for four hours [*n*].

This act hath been ſtill farther enforced by another in the ſame reign [*o*]. By the latter act, the tipler is liable, whether his habitation be within the ſame or any other pariſh. 2*dly*, The proof by one witneſs is made ſufficient; and, 3*dly*, A very extraordinary clauſe is added, by which the oath of the party offending, after having confeſſed his own crime, is made evidence againſt any other offender, though at the ſame time.

Thus we ſee the legiſlature have taken the utmoſt care not only to puniſh, but even to prevent, this vice of drunkenneſs, which the preamble of one of the foregoing ſtatutes calls a *loathſome* and *odious ſin*, and the root and foundation of many other enormous ſins, as murder, &c. Nor doth the wiſdom of our law ſtop here. Our cautious anceſtors have endeavoured to remove the temptation, and, in a great meaſure, to take away from the people their very power of offending this way. And this by going to the fountain-head, and endeavouring to regulate and reſtrain the ſcenes of theſe diſorders, and to confine them to thoſe uſes for which they were at firſt deſigned; namely, for the reſt, refreſhment, and convenience of travellers.

A curſory view of the ſtatutes on this head will demonſtrate of what conſequence to ſociety the ſuppreſſion of this vice was in the opinion of our anceſtors.

By the common law, inns and ale-houſes might be kept *ad libitum*; but if any diſorders were ſuffered in them, they were indictable as a common nuiſance.

The firſt reform which I find to have been made by parliament, was in the reign of Henry VII [*p*].

[*n*] *Jac. I. chap. iv. ſect. 4. & 1 Jac. I. chap. ix.*
[*o*] *21 Jac. I. chap. vii.* [*p*] *11 Hen. VII.*

when two juſtices were empowered to ſuppreſs an ale-houſe.

The ſtatute of Edward VI [q] is the firſt which requires a precedent licence. By this act, no man can keep an ale-houſe, without being licenced by the ſeſſions, or by two juſtices; but now, by a late ſtatute, all licences granted by juſtices out of their ſeſſions are void [r].

By the ſtatute of Charles I [s], which alters the penalties of that of Edward VI. the puniſhment for keeping an ale-houſe, or common ſelling ale, beer, cyder, and perry, without a licence, is to pay twenty ſhillings to the uſe of the poor, to be levied by diſtreſs; which, if ſatisfaction be not made within three days, is to be ſold. And if there be no goods whereon to diſtrain, and the money be not paid within ſix days after conviction, the offender is to be delivered to the conſtable, or ſome inferior officer, to be whipped. For the ſecond offence, he is to be committed to the houſe of correction for a month; and for the third, he is to be committed to the ſaid houſe, till, by order of the juſtices, at their general ſeſſions, he be diſcharged.

The conviction is to be on the view of the juſtice, confeſſion of the party, or by the oath of two witneſſes.

And by this ſtatute, if the conſtable or officer to whom the party is committed to be whipt, &c. do not execute his warrant, the juſtice ſhall commit him to priſon, there to remain till he ſhall procure ſome one to execute the ſaid warrant, or until he ſhall pay forty ſhillings to the uſe of the poor.

The juſtices, at the time of granting the licence, ſhall take a recognizance from the party not to ſuffer any unlawful games, nor other diſorders, in his houſe; which is to be certified to the ſeſſions; and the juſtices there have a power to proceed for the forfeiture [t].

[q] 5 Edw. VI. c. xxv.
[r] 2 G. II. c. xxviii. ſect. 11.
[s] 3 Car. I. cap. iv.
[t] 5 E. VI. ubi ſup.

By the ſtatute of Jac. I. [u], ale-houſe-keepers, who ſuffer townſmen to ſit tipling (unleſs in the caſes abovementioned [w], forfeit ten ſhillings to the poor; the diſtreſs to be ſold within ſix days; and if no diſtreſs can be had, the party is to be committed till the forfeiture is paid.

Vintners, who keep inns or victualling-houſes, are within this act [x].

And by two ſeveral ſtatutes [y], ale-houſe-keepers, convicted of this offence, are prohibited from keeping an ale-houſe for the ſpace of three years.

Juſtices of peace likewiſe, for any diſorders committed in ale-houſes contrary to the condition of the recognizance, may ſuppreſs ſuch houſes [z]; but then the proceeding muſt be on the recognizance, and the breach of the condition proved [a].

Now, on the conciſe view of theſe ſeveral laws, it appears, that the legiſlature have been abundantly careful on this head; and that the only blame lies on the remiſſneſs with which theſe wholeſome proviſions have been executed.

But though I will not undertake to defend the magiſtrates of former times, who have ſurely been guilty of ſome neglect of their duty; yet, on behalf of the preſent commiſſioners of the peace, I muſt obſerve, their caſe is very different. What phyſicians tell us of the animal functions, will hold true when applied to laws; both, by long diſuſe, loſe all their elaſticity and force. Froward habits grow on men, as they do on children, by long indulgence; nor will either ſubmit eaſily to correction in matters where they have been accuſtomed to act at their pleaſure. They are very different offices, to execute a new or a well known law, and to revive one which is obſolete. In the caſe of a known law, cuſtom brings men to ſubmiſſion; and in all new proviſions, the ill-will, if any, is levelled at the legiſlature, who are much more able to ſupport it than a few, or a ſingle magiſtrate. If therefore it be thought proper to ſuppreſs this vice,

[u] *Cap. ix. ubi ſup.*
[x] *1 Car. I. cap. iv.*
[z] *5 E. VI. ubi ſup.*
[w] Supra, p. 14. in the caſe of Tipplers.
[y] 7 Jac. I. cap. x. 21 Jac. I. cap. vii.
[a] Salk. 45.

the

the legiſlature muſt once more take the matter into their hands; and to this, perhaps, they will be the more inclined, when it comes to their knowledge, that a new kind of drunkenneſs, unknown to our anceſtors, is lately ſprung up amongſt us, and which, if not put a ſtop to, will infallibly deſtroy a great part of the inferiour people.

The drunkenneſs I here intend, is that acquired by the ſtrongeſt intoxicating liquors, and particularly by that poiſon called *gin*; which, I have great reaſon to think, is the principal ſuſtenance (if it may be ſo called) of more than an hundred thouſand people in this metropolis. Many of theſe wretches there are, who ſwallow pints of this poiſon within the twenty-four hours; the dreadful effects of which I have the misfortune every day to ſee, and to ſmell too. But I have no need to inſiſt on my own credit, or on that of my informers; the great revenue ariſing from the tax on this liquor (the conſumption of which is almoſt wholly confined to the loweſt order of people) will prove the quantity conſumed better than any other evidence.

Now, beſides the moral ill conſequences occaſioned by this drunkenneſs, with which, in this treatiſe, I profeſs not to deal; how greatly muſt this be ſuppoſed to contribute to thoſe political miſchiefs which this eſſay propoſes to remedy? This will appear from conſidering, that, however cheap this vile potion may be, the poorer ſort will not eaſily be able to ſupply themſelves with the quantities they deſire; for the intoxicating draught itſelf diſqualifies them from uſing any honeſt means to acquire it, at the ſame time that it removes all ſenſe of fear and ſhame, and emboldens them to commit every deſperate and wicked enterprize. Many inſtances of this I ſee daily: wretches are often brought before me, charged with theft and robbery, whom I am forced to confine before they are in a condition to be examined; and when they have afterwards become ſober, I have *plainly* perceived, from the ſtate of the caſe, that the *gin* alone was the cauſe of the tranſgreſſion; and have

been

en ſometimes ſorry that I was obliged to commit
em to priſon.

But, beyond all this, there is a political ill conſe-
ence of this drunkenneſs, which, though it doth
t ſtrictly fall within my preſent purpoſe, I ſhall be
cuſed for mentioning; it being indeed the greateſt
il of all, and which muſt, I think, awaken our le-
lature to put a final period to ſo deſtructive a prac-
e. And this is that dreadful conſequence, which
ıſt attend the poiſonous quality of this pernicious
uor to the health, the ſtrength, and the very being,
numbers of his majeſty's moſt uſeful ſubjects. I
ve not enough of phyſical knowledge, to diſplay
: ill effects which ſuch poiſonous liquors produce
the conſtitution; for theſe I ſhall refer the reader to
e phyſical account of the nature of all diſtilled ſpirituous
uors, and the effect they have on human bodies [*b*].
ıd though, perhaps, the conſequence of this poiſon,
it operates ſlowly, may not ſo viſibly appear in the
ninution of the ſtrength, health, and lives of the
:ſent generation; yet let a man caſt his eyes but a
›ment towards our poſterity, and there the dread-
confequences muſt ſtrike on the meaneſt capacity,
d muſt alarm, I think, the moſt ſluggiſh degree of
blic ſpirit. What muſt become of the infant who
conceived in *gin*; with the poiſonous diſtillations
which it is nouriſhed both in the womb and at the
aſt? Are theſe wretched infants (if ſuch can be
›poſed capable of arriving at the age of maturity)
become our future ſailors, and our future grena-
rs? Is it by the labour of ſuch as theſe, that all
emoluments of peace are to be procured us; and
the dangers of war averted from us? What could
Edward or an Henry, a Marlborough or a Cum-
land, effect with an army of ſuch wretches? Doth
this polluted ſource, inſtead of producing ſervants
the huſbandman or artificer; inſtead of provid-
recruits for the ſea or the field; promiſe only to
alms-houſes and hoſpitals, and to infect the ſtreets
h ſtench and diſeaſes?

[*b*] This was compoſed by a very learned divine, with the aſ-
ce of ſeveral phyſicians, and publiſhed in the year 1736. The
Diſtilled Spirituous Liquors the Bane of the Nation.

In

In solemn truth, there is nothing of more i consideration, nor which more loudly calls foi medy, than the evil now complained against. what can be more worthy the care of the legisl than to preserve the morals, the innocence, the l strength and lives of a great part (I will repea most useful part) of the people? So far am I, own opinion, from representing this in too seri too strong a light, that I can find no words, or phor, adequate to my ideas on this subject. T inventor of this diabolical liquor may be compa the poisoner of a fountain, whence a large city derive its waters; the highest crime, as it hath thought, of which human nature is capable. gree of villany, indeed, of which I cannot re any example: but surely, if such was ever practise governors of that city could not be thought blan did they not endeavour, to the utmost, to withho citizens from drinking the poisonous draught; such a general thirst after it prevailed, as, w told, possessed the people of Athens at the time plague [c], what could justify the not effectuall ting off all aqueducts, by which the poison wa persed among the people.

Nor will any thing less than absolute deletion on the present occasion. It is not making me 50*l.* or 500*l.* for a licence to poison; nor enla the quantity from two gallons to ten, which wi tirpate so stubborn an evil. Here may, perhap no little difficulty. To lay the axe to the still- and prohibit all distillery in general, would destr chemist. If distilling this or that spirit was forbi we know how easily all partial prohibitions are ed; nay, the chemist (was the matter confin him) would soon probably become a common dis and his shop no better than a ginshop; since w more common than for men to adopt the moral

[c] Ἔδρασαν ἐς φρέατα ἀπαύστῳ τῇ δίψῃ ξυνεχόμενοι. ran into the wells, being constantly possessed by an inex thirst. Thucydid. p. 112. edit. Hudsoni.

chief at a fire, and to work their own private emolument out of a public miſchief. Suppoſe all ſpirituous liquors were, together with other poiſon, to be locked up in the chemiſts or apothecaries ſhops, thence never to be drawn, till ſome excellent phyſician calls them forth for the cure of nervous diſtempers; or ſuppoſe the price was to be raiſed ſo high, by a ſevere impoſt, that gin would be placed entirely beyond the reach of the vulgar! or perhaps the wiſdom of the legiſlature may deviſe a better and more effectual way.

But if the difficulty be really inſuperable, or if there be any political reaſon againſt the total demolition of this poiſon, ſo ſtrong as to countervail the preſervation of the morals, health and beings of ſuch numbers of his majeſty's ſubjects; let us, however, in ſome meaſure, palliate the evil, and leſſen its immediate ill conſequences, by a more effectual proviſion againſt drunkenneſs than any we have at preſent, in which the method of conviction is too tedious and dilatory. Some little care on this head is ſurely neceſſary: for though the encreaſe of thieves, and the deſtruction of morality; though the loſs of our labourers, our ſailors, and our ſoldiers, ſhould not be ſufficient reaſons; there is one which ſeems to be unanſwerable, and that is, the loſs of our gin-drinkers: ſince, ſhould the drinking of this poiſon be continued in its preſent height during the next twenty years, there will, by that time, be very few of the common people left to drink it.

SECT. III.

Of GAMING *among the vulgar; a third conſequence of their luxury.*

I COME now to the laſt great evil which ariſes from the luxury of the vulgar; and this is gaming: a ſchool in which moſt highwaymen of great eminence have been bred. This vice is the more dangerous, as it is deceitful, and, contrary to every other *ſpecies of* luxury, flatters its votaries with the hopes *of increaſing* their wealth; ſo that avarice itſelf is

is ſo far from ſecuring us againſt its temptations, that it often betrays the more thoughtleſs and giddy part of mankind into them; promiſing riches without bounds, and thoſe to be acquired by the moſt ſudden as well as eaſy and indeed pleaſant means.

And here I muſt again remind the reader, that I have only the inferiour part of mankind under my conſideration. I am not ſo ill-bred as to diſturb the company at a polite aſſembly; nor ſo ignorant of our conſtitution, as to imagine, that there is a ſufficient energy in the executive part to controul the œconomy of the great, who are beyond the reach of any, unleſs capital, laws. Faſhion, under whoſe guidance they are, and which created the evil, can alone cure it. With patience therefore muſt we wait, till this notable miſtreſs of the few ſhall, in her good time, accompliſh ſo deſirable a change: in fact, till great men become wiſer or better; till the prevalence of ſome laudable taſte ſhall teach them a worthier manner of employing their time; till they have ſenſe enough to be reaſoned, modeſty enough to be laughed, or conſcience enough to be frightened, out of a ſilly, a ſhameful and a ſinful profligacy, attended with horrid waſte of time, and the cruel deſtruction of the families of others, or of their own.

In the mean time we may, I think, reaſonably deſire of theſe great perſonages, that they would keep their favorite vice to themſelves, and not ſuffer others, whoſe birth or fortune gives them no title to be above the terror of the laws, or the cenſure of their betters, to ſhare with them in this privilege. Surely we may give great men the ſame advice, which Archer, in the play, gives to the officers of the army; *To kick out all —— in red but their own.* What temptations can gameſters of faſhion have, to admit *inferiour* ſharpers into their ſociety? Common ſenſe, ſurely, will not ſuffer a man to riſque a fortune againſt one who hath none of his own to ſtake againſt it.

I am well appriſed that this is not much the caſe with perſons of the firſt figure; but to gentlemen (and eſpecially the younger ſort) of the ſecond degree, there fellows have found much too eaſy an acceſs. Particularly at the ſeveral public places (I might have

ſaid gaming places) in this kingdom, too little care is taken to prevent the promiſcuous union of company; and ſharpers of the loweſt kind have frequently there found admiſſion to their ſuperiors, upon no other pretence or merit than that of a laced coat, and with no other ſtock than that of aſſurance.

Some few of theſe fellows, by luckily falling in with an egregious bubble, ſome thoughtleſs young heir, or more commonly heireſs, have ſucceeded in a manner, which, if it may give ſome encouragement to others to imitate them, ſhould, at the ſame time, as ſtrongly admoniſh all gentlemen and ladies to be cautious with whom they mix in public places, and to avoid the ſharper as they would a peſt. But much the greater part of ſuch adventurers have met with a more probable and more deſerved fate; and having exhauſted their little fund in their attempts, have been reduced to a dilemma, in which it required more judgment and reſolution than are the property of many men, and more true ſenſe of honour than belongs to any debauched mind, to extricate themſelves by honeſt means. The only means, indeed, of this kind, are to quit their aſſumed ſtation, and to return to that calling, however mean and laborious, to which they were born and bred.

But, beſides that the way to this is often obſtructed with almoſt inſuperable difficulties; and falſe ſhame, at its very entrance, daſhes them in the face; how eaſily are they diſſuaded from ſuch diſagreeable thoughts, by the temptations with which fortune allures them, of a poſſibility, at leaſt, of ſtill ſupporting their falſe appearances, and of retrieving all their former hopes? How greedily, may we imagine, this enchanting alternative will be embraced by every bold mind, in ſuch circumſtances? for what but the danger of the undertaking can deter one, who hath nothing of a gentleman but his dreſs, to attain which he hath already diveſted himſelf of all ſenſe of honeſty? How eaſy is the tranſition from fraud to force? from a gameſter to a rogue? perhaps, indeed, it is civil to ſuppoſe it any tranſition at all.

From this ſource, therefore, ſeveral of our moſt notable highwaymen have proceeded; and this hath likewiſe been the ſource of many other depredations on the honeſt part of mankind. So miſchievous have been this kind of ſharpers in ſociety, that they have fallen under the particular notice of the legiſlature: for a ſtatute in the reign of queen Anne, reciting, 'That divers lewd and diſſolute perſons live at great 'expences, having no viſible eſtate, profeſſion, or 'calling, to maintain themſelves, but ſupport thoſe 'expences by gaming only;' enacts, 'That any two 'juſtices of the peace may cauſe to be brought before 'them all perſons, within their reſpective limits, whom 'they ſhall have juſt cauſe to ſuſpect to have no viſible eſtate, profeſſion, or calling, to maintain themſelves by, but do, for the moſt part, ſupport themſelves by gaming; and if ſuch perſons ſhall not make 'the contrary appear to ſuch juſtices, they are to be 'bound to their good behaviour for a twelvemonth; 'and, in default of ſufficient ſecurity, to be committed 'till they can find ſuch ſecurity; which ſecurity (in 'caſe they give it) is to be forfeited on their playing 'or betting at any one time for more than the value 'of 20*s*. [*d*].'

As to gaming in the lower claſſes of life, ſo plainly tending to the ruin of tradeſmen, the deſtruction of youth, and to the multiplication of every kind of

[*d*] 9 Annæ, chap. xiv. ſect. 6, 7. It would be of great ſervice to the public, to extend this ſtatute to idle perſons and ſharpers in general; for many ſupport themſelves by frauds, and cheating practices, even worſe than gaming; and have the impudence to appear in the dreſs of gentlemen, and at public places, without having any pretenſions of birth or fortune, or without any honeſt or viſible means of livelihood whatever. Such a law would not be without a precedent; for ſuch is the excellent inſtitution mentioned by Herodotus, in his Euterpe.—'Amaſis (ſays that hiſtorian) eſtabliſhed 'a law in Egypt, that every Egyptian ſhould annually declare before 'the governor of the province, by what means he maintained himſelf; and all thoſe who did not appear, or who could not prove 'that they had ſome lawful livelihood, were puniſhed by death. 'This law Solon introduced into Athens, where it was long inviolably preſerved as a moſt juſt and equitable proviſion.' *Herod. edit. Hudſoni*, p. 158. This puniſhment is ſurely too ſevere; but the law, under a milder penalty, is well worthy to be adopted.

fraud

fraud and violence, the legiſlature hath provided very wholeſome laws [e].

By the 33d of Henry VIII. 'Every artificer, craftſman of any handycraft or occupation, huſbandman, labourer, ſervant at huſbandry, journeyman or ſervant of artificer, mariners, fiſherman, watermen, or any ſerving men, are prohibited from playing at tables, dice, cards, &c. out of Chriſtmas; and in Chriſtmas are permitted to play only in their maſters houſes, or in his preſence, under the penalty of 20*s.* And all manner of perſons are prohibited from playing at any bowl or bowls, in any open place out of their garden or orchard, under the penalty of 6*s.* 8*d.*

'The conviction to be by action, information, bill, or otherwiſe, in any of the king's courts; one half of the penalty to the informer.

'Provided that ſervants may play at any times with their maſters, or by their licence; and all perſons, who have 100*l.* *per annum*, freehold, may give their ſervants, or others reſorting to their houſes, a licence to play within the precinct of their houſes, gardens, or orchard.'

By this ſtatute likewiſe, 'No perſon whatever, by himſelf, factor, deputy, ſervant, or other perſon, ſhall, for gain, keep, &c. any common houſe, alley, or place of bowling, coayting, claſh-coyls, half-bowl, tennis, dicing-table, or carding, or any other manner of game, prohibited by any ſtatute heretofore made, or any unlawful game invented or made, or any other new unlawful game hereafter to be invented or made; the penalty is 40*s.* *per* day, for keeping the houſe, &c. and 6*s.* 8*d.* for every perſon haunting and playing at ſuch houſe. Theſe penalties to be recovered, &c. as above.

[e] By a ſtatute made in the reign of Edward IV. now repealed, playing at ſeveral games, therein mentioned, was puniſhed by two years impriſonment, and the forfeiture of 10*l.* and the maſter of the houſe was to be impriſoned for three years, and to forfeit 20*l.* A great ſum in thoſe days!

'And all leaſes of gaming-houſes, alleys, &c. are 'made void at the election of the leſſee.'

Farther by the ſaid ſtatute, 'Power is given to all 'juſtices of peace, mayors, or other head-officers, in 'every city, &c. to enter ſuſpected houſes and places, 'and to commit the keepers of the ſaid houſes, and 'the perſons there haunting, reſorting, and playing, 'to priſon; and to keep them in priſon, till the 'keepers have found ſureties to enter into a recogni-'zance to the king's uſe, no longer to keep ſuch 'houſe, &c. and the perſons there found, to be bound, 'by themſelves, or with ſureties, &c. at the diſcre-'tion of the juſtice, &c. no more to haunt the ſaid 'places, or play at any of the ſaid games.'

And now, by the ſtatute of George II. this laſt clauſe is enforced, by giving the juſtice the ſame power on the information of two perſons, as he had before on view; and, by a more explicit power, to take ſureties or not of the party, at his diſcretion.

Laſtly, The ſtatute of Henry VIII. enjoins the juſtices, &c. to make due ſearch weekly, or once *per* month, at the fartheſt, under the penalty of forfeiting 40*s.* for every month, during their neglect.

Thus ſtands the law; by which it may appear, that the magiſtrate is armed with ſufficient authority to deſtroy all gaming among the inferiour people; and that, without his neglect or connivance, no ſuch nuiſance can poſſibly exiſt.

And yet, perhaps, the fault may not ſo totally lie at his door; for the recognizance is a mere bugbear, unleſs the party who breaks it ſhould be ſued thereon; which, as it is attended with great expence, is never done; ſo that, though many have forfeited it, not a ſingle example of an eſtreat hath been made within my remembrance.

Again, it were to be wiſhed, that the ſtatute of George II. had required no more than one witneſs to the information: for even one witneſs, as I have found by experience, is very difficult to be procured.

However, as the law now is, ſeeing that the general bent of the people oppoſes itſelf to this vice, it is certainly in a great meaſure within the magiſtrate's

power

power to ſuppreſs it, and ſo to harraſs ſuch as propoſe to find their account in it, that theſe would ſoon be diſcouraged from the undertaking; nor can I conclude without obſerving, that this hath been lately executed with great vigour within the liberty of Weſtminſter.

There are, beſides, ſeveral other proviſions in our ſtatute books againſt this deſtructive vice. By the ſtatute of queen Anne [*f*], whoever cheats at play, forfeits five times the ſum won by ſuch cheating, ſhall be deemed infamous, and ſuffer ſuch corporal puniſhment as in caſe of perjury. And whoever wins above 10*l.* at any one ſitting, ſhall likewiſe forfeit five times the ſum won. Going ſhares with the winner, and betting on his ſide, are, in both inſtances, within the act.

By the ſame act, all ſecurities for money won at play are made void; and if a mortgage be made on ſuch account, the mortgagee doth not only loſe all benefit of it, but the mortgage immediately enures to the uſe of the next heir [*g*].

By this law, perſons who have loſt above 10*l.* and have actually paid it, may recover the ſame by action within three months; and if they do not ſue for it within that time, any other perſon may [*h*]. And the defendant ſhall be liable to anſwer a bill for diſcovering ſuch ſum loſt, upon oath.

By 18 George II [*i*] whoever wins or loſes 10*l.* at play, or by betting at any one time, or 20*l.* within twenty-four hours, is liable to be indicted, and ſhall be fined five times the value of the money loſt.

By 12 George II [*k*] the games of Pharaoh, the Ace of hearts, Baſſet, and Hazard, are declared to be lotteries; and all perſons, who ſet up, maintain, and keep them, forfeit 200*l.* and all who play at them, forfeit 50*l.* The conviction to be before one juſtice of peace, by the oath of one witneſs, or confeſſion of

[*f*] 9 Annæ, chap. xiv. by which the ſtatute of 16 C. II. is enlarged and made more ſevere.
[*g*] Ibid. ſect. 1.
[*h*] 9 Annæ, chap. ix. ſect. 2.
[*i*] Chap. xxxiv.
[*k*] Chap. xxviii.

the

the party. And the juſtice neglecting his duty, ſeits 10*l.* *Note*, The proſecution againſt the kee &c. may be for a lottery, on the 8 George I, w the penalty is 500*l.*

The act of 18 George II includes the game of R poly, or other prohibited game at cards or dice, w in the penalties of the abovementioned.

I have given this ſhort ſketch of theſe ſeveral partly for the uſe and encouragement of inform and partly to inſinuate to certain perſons with decency they can openly offend againſt ſuch pl ſuch ſolemn laws, the ſevereſt of which many of th ſelves have, perhaps, been the makers of. How they ſeriouſly anſwer, either to their honour or ſcience, giving the pernicious example of a from which, as the legiſlature juſtly ſays in the amble to the 16th of Charles II, 'Many miſc 'and inconveniences do ariſe, and are daily fo 'in the encouraging of ſundry idle and diſord 'perſons in their diſhoneſt, lewd, and diſſolute co 'of life: and to the circumventing, deceiving, 'ſening, and debauching, of many of the you 'ſort, both of the nobility and gentry and others 'the loſs of their precious time, and the utter rui 'their eſtates and fortunes, and withdrawing t 'from noble and laudable employments and e 'ciſes!' Will a nobleman, I aſk, confeſs that he employ his time in no better amuſement? or he frankly own that he plays with any other than that of amuſement? Laſtly, what can a n who ſins in open defiance of the laws of his coun anſwer to the *vir bonus eſt quis?* can he ſay,

Qui conſulta patrum, qui leges juraque ſervat?

Or can he apply that celebrated line,

Oderunt peccare boni virtutis honore,

to himſelf, who owes to his greatneſs, and not to innocence, that he is not deterred from ſuch vici *Formidine pœnæ?*

SECT. IV.

Of the Laws that relate to the PROVISION *for the Poor.*

HAVING now run through the ſeveral immediate conſequences of a general luxury among the lower people, all which, as they tend to promote their diſtreſſes, may be reaſonably ſuppoſed to put many of them of the bolder kind upon unlawful and violent means of relieving the miſchief which ſuch vices have brought upon them; I come now to a ſecond cauſe of the evil, in the improper regulation of what is called the poor in this kingdom, ariſing, I think, partly from the abuſe of ſome laws, and partly from the total neglect of others; and (if I may preſume to ſay it) ſomewhat perhaps from a defect in the laws themſelves.

It muſt be matter of aſtoniſhment to any man to reflect that in a country where the poor are, beyond all compariſon, more liberally provided for than in any other part of the habitable globe, there ſhould be found more beggars, more diſtreſt and miſerable objects, than are to be ſeen throughout all the ſtates of Europe.

And yet, undoubted as this fact is, I am far from agreeing with Mr. Shaw [*l*], who ſays, 'There are 'few, if any, nations or countries where the poor are 'more neglected, or are in a more ſcandalous naſty 'condition than in England. Whether (ſays he) this 'is owing to that natural inbred cruelty, for which 'Engliſhmen are ſo much noted among foreigners, 'or to that medley of religions, which are ſo plentifully ſown, and ſo carefully cheriſhed, among us; 'who think it enough to take care of themſelves, and 'take a ſecret pride and pleaſure in the poverty and 'diſtreſſes of thoſe of another perſuaſion,' &c.

That the poor are in a very naſty and ſcandalous condition is perhaps too true; but ſure the general charge againſt the people of England, as well as the

[*l*] Vol. II. p. 1.

invidious

invidious aſperſion on particular bodies of them, is highly unjuſt and groundleſs. Nor do I know that any nation hath ventured to fix this character of cruelty on us. Indeed our inhoſpitality to foreigners hath been ſometimes remarked; but that we are cruel to one another is not, I believe, the common, I am ſure it is not the true, opinion. Can a general neglect of the poor be juſtly charged on a nation in which the poor are provided for by a tax frequently equal to what is called the land-tax; and where there are ſuch numerous inſtances of private donations, ſuch numbers of hoſpitals, alms-houſes, and charitable proviſions of all kinds?

Nor can any ſuch neglect be charged on the legiſlature; under whoſe inſpection this branch of polity hath been almoſt continually from the days of queen Elizabeth to the preſent time. Inſomuch, that Mr. Shaw himſelf enumerates no leſs than thirteen acts of parliament relating to the indigent and helpleſs poor.

If therefore there be ſtill any deficiency in this reſpect, it muſt, I think, ariſe from one of the three cauſes abovementioned; that is, from ſome defect in the laws themſelves, or from the perverſion of theſe laws; or, laſtly, from the neglect in their execution.

I will conſider all theſe with ſome attention.

The 43d of Eliz. [*m*] enacts:

Firſt, That the church-wardens of every pariſh, and two ſubſtantial houſe-holders at leaſt, ſhall be yearly appointed to be overſeers of the poor.

Secondly, That theſe overſeers ſhall, with the conſent of two juſtices of the peace, put out apprentices the children of poor people. And all married or unmarried perſons, who have no means or trade to maintain themſelves, ſhall be put to work.

Thirdly, That they ſhall raiſe by a parochial tax a convenient ſtock of flax, hemp, wool, thread, iron, and other ware and ſtuff, to ſet the poor to work.

[*m*] Chap. iii.

Fourthly,

Fourthly, That they ſhall, from the ſame tax, provide towards the neceſſary relief of the lame, impotent, old, blind, and others, being poor and not able to work.

Fifthly, That they ſhall, out of the ſame tax, put the children of poor perſons apprentices.

That theſe proviſions may all be executed, that act veſted the overſeers with the following powers; and enforced the executing of them by the following penalties.

I. The overſeers are appointed to meet once at leaſt every month in the church after divine ſervice; there, ſays the act, to conſider of ſome good courſe to be taken, and ſome meet order to be ſet down *in the premiſes*. And to do this they are enjoined by a penalty: for every one abſenting himſelf from ſuch meeting without a juſt excuſe to be allowed by two juſtices of the peace, or being negligent in his office, or in the execution of the orders aforeſaid, forfeits 20*s*.

And after the end of their year, and after other overſeers nominated, they are within four days to make and yield up to two juſtices of the peace a true and perfect account of all ſums of money by them received or aſſeſſed, and of ſuch ſtores as ſhall be in their hands, or in the hands of the poor, to work, and of all other things concerning their office, &c. And if the church-wardens and overſeers refuſe to account, they are to be committed by two juſtices till they ſhall have made a true account.

II. The overſeers and church-wardens, both preſent and ſubſequent, are empowered by warrant from two juſtices to levy all the monies aſſeſſed, and all arrearages of thoſe who refuſe to pay, by diſtreſs and ſale of the refuſers goods; and the ſubſequent overſeers may, in the ſame manner, levy the money and ſtock in the hands of the precedent: and for want of diſtreſs, the party is to be committed by two juſtices, without bail, till the ſame be paid.

III. They have a power to compel the poor to work; and ſuch as refuſe or neglect, the juſtice may commit *to the houſe* of correction or common gaol.

IV. The overſeers may compel children to be apprentices, and may bind them where they ſhall ſee convenient; till the man-child ſhall attain the age of twenty-four, or the woman-child the age of twenty-one, or till the time of her marriage; the indenture to be as effectual to all purpoſes as the covenant of one of full age.

V. They have a power to contract with the lord of the manor [*n*]; and on any parcel of ground on the waſte, to erect, at the general charge of the pariſh, convenient houſes of dwelling for the impotent poor; and to place ſeveral inmates in the ſame cottage, notwithſtanding the ſtatute [*o*] of cottages.

VI. They can compel the father and grandfather, mother and grandmother, and children of every poor, old, blind, and impotent perſon, or of any other perſon not being able to work (provided ſuch father, &c. be of ſufficient ability) at their own charges to relieve and maintain ſuch poor perſon in ſuch manner, and after ſuch rate, as ſhall be aſſeſſed by the ſeſſions, under the penalty of 20*s.* for every month's omiſſion.

VII. If no overſeers be named, every juſtice within the diviſion forfeits 5*l.*

So far this ſtatute of Elizabeth, by which the legiſlature may ſeem very fully to have provided, *Firſt*, For the abſolute relief of ſuch poor as are by age or infirmity rendered unable to work; and, *Secondly*, For the employment of ſuch as are able.

'The former of theſe,' ſays lord Hale in his diſcourſe on this ſubject, 'ſeems to be a charity of more immediate exigence; but the latter (*viz.* the employment of the poor) is a charity of greater extent, and of very great and important conſequence to the public wealth and peace of the kingdom, as alſo to the benefit and advantage of the poor.' 'And this,' as Mr. Shaw obſerves, 'would prevent the children of our poor being brought up in lazineſs and beggary, whereby beggary is entailed from generation to generation: this is certainly the greateſt charity; for

[*n*] This muſt be done by conſent and order of ſeſſions.
[*o*] Theſe cottages are never after to be applied to any other uſe.

thoug

'though he who gives to any in want, does well; 'yet he who employs and educates the poor, ſo as to 'render them uſeful to the public, does better; for 'that would be many hundred thouſand pounds *per* '*ann.* benefit to this kingdom.'

Now the former of theſe proviſions hath, perhaps, though in a very ſlovenly and inadequate manner, been partly carried into execution; but the latter, I am afraid I may too boldly aſſert, hath been utterly neglected and diſregarded. Surely this is a moſt ſcandalous perverſion of the deſign of the legiſlature, which through the whole ſtatute ſeems to have had the employment of the able poor chiefly under their conſideration: for to this purpoſe only almoſt every power in it is eſtabliſhed, and every clauſe very manifeſtly directed. To ſay the truth, as this law hath been perverted in the execution, it were, perhaps, to be wiſhed it had never been made; not becauſe it is not our duty to relieve real objects of diſtreſs; but becauſe it is ſo much the duty of every man, and I may add, ſo much the inclination of moſt Engliſhmen, that it might have been ſafely left to private charity; or a public proviſion might ſurely have been made for it in a much cheaper and more effectual manner.

To prove the abuſe of this law, my lord Hale appeals to all the populous pariſhes in England (he might, I believe, have included ſome which are not over populous) 'Indeed, ſays he, there are rates 'made for the relief of the impotent poor; and, it 'may be, the ſame relief is alſo given in a narrow 'meaſure unto ſome others that have great families, 'and upon this they live miſerably, and at beſt from 'hand to mouth; and if they cannot get work to 'make out their livelihood, they and their children 'ſet up a trade of begging at beſt; but it is rare to 'ſee any proviſion of a ſtock in any pariſh for the re-'lief of the poor; and the reaſons are principally 'theſe: 1. The generality of people that are able, 'are yet unwilling, to exceed the preſent neceſſary 'charge; they do chooſe to live for an hour rather 'than project for the future; and although poſſibly 'trebling their exhibition in one groſs ſum at the be-'ginni

'ginning of the year, to raiſe a ſtock, might in all 'probability render their future yearly payments, for 'ſeven years together, leſs by half, or two thirds, 'than what muſt be without it; yet they had rather 'continue on their yearly payments, year after year, 'though it exhauſt them in time, and make the poor 'nothing the better at the year's end. 2. Becauſe 'thoſe places, where there are moſt poor, conſiſt for 'the moſt part of tradeſmen, whoſe eſtates lie princi-'pally in their ſtocks, which they will not endure to 'be ſearched into to make them contributary to raiſe 'any conſiderable ſtock for the poor, nor indeed ſo 'much as to the ordinary contributions: but they lay 'all the rates to the poor upon the rents of lands and 'houſes, which alone, without the help of the ſtocks, 'are not able to raiſe a ſtock for the poor, although it 'is very plain that ſtocks are as well by law rateable 'as lands, both to the relief and raiſing a ſtock for 'the poor. 3. Becauſe the church-wardens and over-'ſeers, to whom this power is given, are inhabitants 'of the ſame pariſh, and are either unwilling to 'charge themſelves or to diſpleaſe their neighbours in 'charging more than they needs muſt towards the 'poor: and although it were to be wiſhed and hoped 'that the juſtices of the peace would be forward to 'enforce them if they might, though it may concern 'them alſo in point of preſent profit; yet if they 'would do any thing herein, they are not empowered 'to compel the church-wardens and overſeers to do 'it, who moſt certainly will never go about it to bur-'den, as they think, themſelves, and diſpleaſe their 'neighbours, unleſs ſome compulſory power were not 'only lodged by law, but alſo executed by ſome that 'may have a power over them to enforce it; or to 'do it, if they do it either partially or too ſparingly. '4. Becauſe people do not conſider the inconvenience 'that will in time grow to themſelves by this neglect, 'and the benefit that would in a little time accrue to 'them by putting it in practice, if they would have 'but a little patience.'

To theſe I will add a fifth reaſon: becauſe the church-wardens and overſeers are too apt to conſid-

er

their office as a mattter of private emolument; to waſte part of the money raiſed for the uſe of the poor in feaſting and riot; and too often to pervert the power given them by the ſtatute to foreign and ſometimes to the very worſt of purpoſes.

The above conſiderations bring my lord Hale to complain of ſome defects in the law itſelf; 'In which,' ſays he, 'there is no power from the juſtices of the 'peace, nor any ſuperintendant power, to compel 'the raiſing of a ſtock where the church-wardens and 'overſeers neglect it.

'The act chargeth every pariſh apart, where it 'may be they are liable to do little towards it; nei-'ther would it be ſo effectual as if three, four, five, 'or more contiguous pariſhes did contribute towards 'the raiſing of a ſtock proportionably to their poor 'reſpectively.

'There is no power for hiring or erecting a com-'mon houſe, or place, for their common work-houſe; 'which may be, in ſome reſpects, and upon ſome 'occaſions, uſeful and neceſſary.'

As to the firſt of theſe, I do not find any alteration hath been made; nor if there was, might it poſſibly produce any deſired effect. The conſequence, as it appears, would be only making church-wardens of the juſtices of peace, which many of them are already, not highly to the ſatisfaction of their pariſhes; too much power veſted in one man being too apt perhaps to beget envy.

The ſecond and third do pretty near amount to one and the ſame defect; and this, I think, is at preſent totally removed. Indeed, in my lord Hale's own time, though probably after he had written this treatiſe, a work-houſe was erected in London under the powers given by the ſtatute made in the 13 and 14 of [p] Charles II. and I believe with very good ſucceſs.

Since that time, other corporations have followed the example, as the city of Briſtol in the reign of

[p] Chap. xii.

king

king William [q], and that of Worceſter in the reign of queen Anne [r], and in other places.

And now by a late ſtatute, made in the reign of king [s] George I. the power of erecting work-houſes is made general over the kingdom.

Now either this method, propoſed by lord Hale, is inadequate to the purpoſe; or this act of parliament hath been groſsly perverted: for certain it is that the evil is not removed, if indeed it be leſſened, by the erection of work-houſes. Perhaps, indeed, one objection which my lord Hale makes to the ſtatute of Eliz. may here recur, ſeeing that there is nothing compulſory, but all left to the will and direction of the inhabitants.

But in truth the method itſelf will never produce the deſired effect, as the excellent Sir Joſiah Child well obſerves [t],—'It may be objected, ſays he, that 'this work (the proviſion for the poor) may as well 'be done in diſtinct pariſhes, if all pariſhes were 'obliged to build work-houſes, and employ their 'poor therein, as Dorcheſter and ſome others have 'done with good ſucceſs. I anſwer, that ſuch at-'tempts have been made in many places to my know-'ledge, with very good intents and ſtrenuous en-'deavours; but all that I ever heard of proved vain 'and ineffectual.' For the truth of which, I believe, we may appeal to common experience.

And, perhaps, no leſs ineffectual would be the ſcheme propoſed by this worthy gentleman, though it ſeems to promiſe fairer than that of the learned chief juſtice; yet neither of them ſeem to ſtrike at the root of the evil. Before I deliver any ſentiments of my own, I ſhall briefly take a view of the many ſubſequent proviſions with which the legiſlature have from time to time enforced and ſtrengthened the foregoing ſtatute of Elizabeth.

The power of putting out children [u] appren-

[q] 8 & 9 W. III. c. 30.
[r] 2 Annæ, c. viii.
[s] 9 George I. c. 1.
[t] Eſſay on Trade, c. ii.
[u] See 7 Jac. I. c. iii. which directs the manner of putting out apprentices, in purſuance of any gifts made to corporations, &c. for that purpoſe.

tices is enforced by the 3d of [w] Charles I. which enacts, 'That all perſons to whom the overſeers 'ſhall bind children by virtue of the ſtatute of Eliz. 'may receive and keep them as apprentices.' But there yet wanted, as lord Hale ſays, a *ſufficient compulſory for perſons to take them*; wherefore it is enacted, by 8 and 9 [x] Will. III. 'That all perſons 'to whom apprentices are appointed to be bound 'by the overſeers, with the conſent of the juſtices, 'ſhall receive them, and execute the other part of 'the indenture, under the penalty of 10*l.* for refuſing, to be recovered before two juſtices, on the 'oath of one of the church-wardens or overſeers.'

The power of ſetting the poor to work is enlarged by [y] 3 Charles I. This act gives the church-wardens and overſeers of the poor a power, with the conſent of two juſtices, or of one, if no more juſtices ſhall be within their limits, to ſet up and occupy any trade for the ſetting the poor to work.

The power of relieving the impotent poor (*i. e.* of diſtributing the public money) the only one which hath much exerciſed the minds of the pariſh officers, the legiſlature ſeems to think rather wanted reſtraining than enlarging; accordingly, in the reign of king [z] William they made an act to limit the power of the officers in this reſpect. As the act contains the ſenſe of parliament of the horrid abuſe of the ſtatute of Elizabeth, I will tranſcribe part of a paragraph from it *verbatim*.

'And whereas many inconveniencies do daily ariſe 'in cities, towns corporate, and pariſhes, where the 'inhabitants are very numerous, by reaſon of the un'limited power of the church-wardens and overſeers 'of the poor, who do frequently, upon frivolous pre'tences (but chiefly for their own private ends) give 'relief to what perſons and number they think fit, 'and ſuch perſons being entered into the collection 'bill, do become after that a great charge to the

[w] Chap. iv. ſect. 22. p. 8. The ſame clauſe is in 21 Jac. c. xxviii. par. 33.

[x] Chap. xxx. ſect. 6. [y] Chap. iv. ſect. 22. ubi ſupra.

[z] 3 & 4 W. and M. c. xi. ſect. 11.

'pariſh,

'pariſh, notwithſtanding the occaſion or pretence
'their collection oftentimes ceaſes, by which mea
'the rates for the poor are daily increaſed, contr
'to the true intent of a ſtatute made in the 43d y
'of the reign of her majeſty queen Elizabeth, inti
'led, *An act for the relief of the poor*; for remedyi
'of which, the ſtatute enacts, that for the future
'book ſhall be provided and kept in every pariſh
'the charge of the ſame pariſh) wherein the nam
'of all perſons receiving collection, &c. ſhall
'regiſtered, with the day and year of their firſt
'ceiving it. This book to be yearly, or often
'viewed by the pariſhioners, and the names of
'perſons who receive collection ſhall be called ov
'and the reaſon of the receiving it examined, an
'new liſt made; and no other perſon is allowed
'receive collection but by order of a juſtice of pea
'&c. except in caſe of peſtilential diſeaſes or ſma
'pox [*a*].'

The 8th and 9th of the ſame king, reciting the fi
of the legiſlature, *that the money raiſed only for
relief of ſuch as are as well impotent as poor, ſhould
miſapplied and conſumed by the idle, ſturdy, and diſorde
beggars*, 'Enacts that every perſon, his wife, childre
'&c. who ſhall receive relief from the pariſh, ſh
'wear a badge marked with the letter *P*, &c. in d
'fault of which, a juſtice of peace may order t
'relief of ſuch perſons to be abridged, ſuſpende
'or withdrawn, or may commit them for twenty-o
'days to the houſe of correction, there to be kept
'hard labour. And every church-warden or ov
'ſeer, who relieves any one without ſuch a badg
'being convicted before one juſtice, forfeits 20*s*.'

Whether the juſtices made an ill uſe of the pow
given them by the ſtatute of the 3d and 4th of ki
William, I will not determine; but the parliame
thought proper afterwards to abridge it; for by t
9th of [*b*] George I. the juſtices are forbidden '

[*a*] The ſame ſtatute in another part charges the overſeer, i
with applying the poor's money to their own uſe.

[*b*] Chap. xxx. ſect. 2.

'make any order for the relief of a poor perſon, 'till 'oath is firſt made of a reaſonable cauſe; and that 'application hath been made to the pariſhioners at 'the veſtry, or to two officers, and that relief hath 'been refuſed. Nor can the juſtice then give his or-'der, 'till he hath ſummoned the overſeers to ſhew 'cauſe why relief ſhould not be given.'

By the ſame ſtatute, 'Thoſe perſons to whom the 'juſtices order relief, are to be regiſtered in the 'pariſh books, as long only as the cauſe of the relief 'continues. Nor ſhall any pariſh officer be allowed 'any money given to the unregiſtered poor, unleſs on 'the moſt emergent occaſion. The penalty for charg-'ing ſuch money to the pariſh account is 5*l.* The 'conviction is to be before two juſtices.'

Laſtly, that the pariſh may in all poſſible caſes be relieved from the burden of the poor, whereas the ſtatute of Elizabeth obliges the father, mother, &c. and children, if able, to relieve their poor children and parents; ſo, by the 5th of George I. [*c*], it is provided, 'That where any wife or child ſhall be left 'by the huſband or parents a charge to any pariſh, 'the church-wardens or overſeers may, by the order 'of two juſtices, ſeize ſo much of the goods and 'chattels, and receive ſo much of the annual rents 'and profits of the lands and tenements of ſuch huſ-'band or parent, as the juſtices ſhall order, towards 'the diſcharge of the pariſh; and the ſeſſions may 'empower the church-wardens and overſeers to diſ-'poſe thereof, for the providing for the wife and 'bringing up the children, &c.'

Such is the law that relates immediately to the maintenance of the impotent poor; a law ſo very ample in its proviſion, ſo ſtrongly fortified with enforcing powers, and ſo cautiouſly limited with all proper reſtraints, that, at firſt ſight, it appears ſufficiently adequate to every purpoſe for which it was intended; but experience hath convinced us of the contrary.

And here I am well aware of the delicate dilemma to which I may ſeem reduced; ſince how ſhall I pre-

[*c*] Chap. viii.

ſume to ſuppoſe any defects in a law, which
ſlature ſeems to have laboured with ſuch incef
gence? but I am not abſolutely driven to
agreeable neceſſity, as the fault may ſo fairly
puted to the non-execution of the law; an
to the ill execution of the ſtatute of Elizab
lord chief juſtice Hale chiefly imputes the i
proviſion for the poor in his time.

Sir Joſiah Child, it is true, ſpeaks more
and charges the defects on the laws themſel
general poſition, however, which he lay
That there never was a good law made, tha
well executed, is ſurely very queſtionable. S
fore muſt be his opinion, if founded on that
and this opinion, perhaps, he would have c
had he lived to ſee the latter conſtitutions on t

But whatever defects there may be in the
in the execution of them, I much doubt
either of theſe great men hath found the n
curing them. And this I am the more for
ſay, as the legiſlature, by a total neglect of *b*
ſchemes, ſeem to give ſufficient countenanc
aſſertion.

In a matter then of ſo much difficulty, as
ſo great importance, how ſhall I venture t
my own opinion? ſuch, indeed, is the diffic
importance of this queſtion, that Sir Joſiah
thinks, *If a whole ſeſſion of parliament were*
on this ſingle concern, it would be time ſpent as
the glory of God, and good of this nation, as in a
that noble and worthy patriots of their country
engaged in.

However, under the protection of the
and with deference to the learned reader, I
ter on this ſubject, in which, I think, I m
modeſty ſay, I have had ſome experience;
which I can with truth declare, I have empl
little time. If any gentleman, who hath ha
experience, hath more duly conſidered the
or whoſe ſuperior abilities enable him to
better judgment, ſhall think proper to im
endeavours, he hath my ready conſent.

the end be effected, I ſhall be contented with the honour of my ſhare (however inconſiderable) in the means. Nay, ſhould my labours be attended only with neglect and contempt, I think I have learned (for I am a pretty good hiſtorian) to bear ſuch misfortunes without much repining.

By THE POOR, then, I underſtand ſuch perſons as have no eſtate of their own to ſupport them, without induſtry; nor any profeſſion or trade, by which, with induſtry, they may be capable of gaining a comfortable ſubſiſtence.

This claſs of the people may be conſidered under theſe three diviſions:

Firſt, Such poor as are unable to work.

2dly, Such as are able and willing to work.

3dly, Such as are able to work, but not willing.

As to the *Firſt* of theſe, they are but few. An utter incapacity to work muſt ariſe from ſome defect, occaſioned either by nature or accident. Natural incapacities are generally the moſt (perhaps the only) conſiderable ones; for as to accidental maims, how very rarely do they happen! and, I muſt add, how very nobly are they provided for, when they do happen! Again, as to natural incapacities, they are but few, unleſs thoſe two general circumſtances, one of which muſt, and the other may befal, all men; I mean, the extremes of youth and age: for, beſides theſe, the number of perſons who really labour under an utter incapacity of work, will, on a juſt inſpection, be found ſo trifling, that two of the London hoſpitals might contain them all. The reader will be pleaſed to obſerve, I ſay of thoſe who *really labour*, &c. for he is much deceived, who computes the number of objects in the nation, from the great number which he daily ſees in the ſtreets of London; among whom I myſelf have diſcovered ſome notorious cheats; and my good friend Mr. Welch, the worthy high conſtable of Holborn diviſion, many more. Nothing, as I have been well informed, is more common among theſe wretches, than for the lame, when provoked, to uſe their crutches as weapons inſtead of ſupporters; and for the

the blind, if they ſhould hear the beadle at heels, to outrun the dogs which guided them be As to diſeaſes, to which human nature is unive liable, they ſometimes (though very rarely; health is the happy portion of poverty) befal poor; and at all ſuch times they are certainly ol of charity, and entitled, by the law of God, to from the rich.

Upon the whole, this firſt claſs of the poor truly inconſiderable in number, and to provid them in the moſt ample and liberal manner w be ſo very eaſy to the public; to ſupport and ch them, and to relieve their wants, is a duty ſo tively commanded by our Saviour, and is with agreeable and delightful in itſelf, affording moſt deſirable object to the ſtrong paſſion of nay, and in the opinion of ſome, to pride vanity alſo; that, I am firmly perſuaded, it migl ſafely left to voluntary charity, unenforced by compulſive law. And if any man will profe little knowledge of human nature, and ſo mean unjuſt an opinion of the chriſtianity, I might fa humanity, of this country, as to affect a con opinion, notwithſtanding all I have ſaid, let anſwer the following inſtance, which may be c an argument *à poſteriori*, for the truth of my a tion. Such, I think, is the preſent bounty to gars; for, at a time when every man knows the tax which is raiſed for the ſupport of the poor, when all men of property muſt feel their contr tions to this tax, mankind are ſo forward to re the appearance of diſtreſs in their fellow-creat that every beggar, who can but moderately well ſonate miſery, is ſure to find relief and encour ment; and this, though the giver muſt have reaſon to doubt the reality of the diſtreſs, and v he can ſcarce be ignorant that his bounty is ill [d], and that he is encouraging a nuiſance. V

[d] This was forbidden by many ſtatutes; and by the act Henry VIII. every perſon giving any money in alms, but common boxes and common gatherings in every pariſh, twelve times as much as he gives.

then muſt be the caſe, when there ſhould be no ſuch tax, nor any ſuch contribution; and when, by relieving a known and certain object of charity, every good man muſt be aſſured, that he is not only doing an act which the law allows, but which chriſtianity and humanity too exact of him?

However, if there be any perſon who is yet unwilling to truſt the poor to voluntary charity; or if it ſhould be objected, that there is no reaſon to lay the whole burden on the worthier part of mankind, and to excuſe the covetous rich; and that a tax is therefore neceſſary to force open the purſes of theſe latter; let there be a tax then, and a very inconſiderable one would effectually ſupply the purpoſe [*e*].

I come now to conſider the *ſecond* claſs. Theſe are in reaſon, though not in fact, equally objects of the regard of the compaſſionate man, and much more worthy the care of the politician; and yet, without his care, they will be in a much worſe condition than the others: for they have none of thoſe incitements of pity which fill the pockets of the artful beggar, and procure relief for the blind, the lame, and other viſible objects of compaſſion: ſuch therefore, without a law, and without an honeſt and ſenſible execution of that law, muſt languiſh under, and often periſh with, want. A melancholy and dreadful reflexion! and the more ſo, as they are capable of being made not only happy in themſelves, but highly uſeful to the ſervice of the community.

To provide for theſe, ſeems, as I have ſaid, to have been the chief deſign of the ſtatute of Elizabeth, as well as of ſeveral laws enacted ſince; and that this deſign hath hitherto failed, may poſſibly have ariſen from one ſingle miſtake; but a miſtake which muſt be fatal, as it is an error in the firſt concoction. The miſtake I point at is, that the legiſla-

[*e*] The reader is deſired to conſider the author here as ſpeaking only of the impotent poor; and as hoping that ſome effectual means may be found out of procuring work, and conſequently maintenance, for the able and induſtrious.

ture have left the whole work to the o
They have rather told them what they ar
(*viz.* to employ the induſtrious poor) than h
ſhall do it. It is true, the original act direc
by a parochial tax, to raiſe a convenient ſtock
hemp, wool, thread, iron, and other ware a
to ſet the poor to work; a direction ſo gen
imperfect, that it can be no wonder, con
what ſort of men the overſeers of the poor hav
that it ſhould never have been carried into
tion.

To ſay the truth, this affair of finding an e
employment for the induſtrious poor, is of g
ficulty, and requires talents not very bountifu
tered by nature among the whole human
And yet, difficult as it is, it is not, I hope, imp
ble, ſeeing that it is of ſuch infinite concer
good of the community. Hands for the w
already ſuppoſed; and ſurely trade and man
are not come to ſo low an ebb, that we ſhc
be able to find work for the hands. The
of adapting only ſeems to be wanting. And
this may not be eaſy to diſcover, it is a taſk
not above the reach of the Britiſh parliament
they ſhall think proper to apply themſelves to i

Nor will it, I hope, be conſtrued preſump
me to ſay, that I have myſelf thought of a p
this purpoſe, which I am ready to produce,
ſhall have any reaſon to ſee the leaſt glimpſe o
that my labour in drawing it out at length wo
be abſolutely and certainly thrown away.

The laſt, and much the moſt numerous c
poor, are thoſe who are able to work, and n
ing. This likewiſe hath fallen under the eye
legiſlature, and proviſions have been made c
ing it; which, if in themſelves efficacious, h
leaſt failed of producing any good effect, from
neglect in the execution.

By the 43 Eliz. the church-wardens and ov
or greater part of them, with the conſent
juſtices, ſhall take order for the ſetting to
children of all ſuch parents as they ſhall

able to maintain them; as alſo, all ſuch married or unmarried perſons, as ſhall have no means to maintain themſelves, nor any ordinary trade or calling whereby to get their living.

Beſides this power of compelling the poor to work, the legiſlature hath likewiſe compelled them to become, 1. Apprentices, and, 2. Servants. We have already ſeen the power of the overſeers, with the aſſiſtance of the juſtices, to put poor children apprentices; and likewiſe to oblige their maſters to receive them. And long before, a compulſion was enacted [*f*] on poor perſons to become apprentices; ſo that any houſholder, having and uſing half a plough-land in tillage, may compel any poor perſon, under twenty-one and unmarried, to ſerve as an apprentice in huſbandry, or in any other kind of art, myſtery, or ſcience (before expreſſed in the act [*g*]: and if ſuch perſon, being ſo required, refuſe to become an apprentice, one juſtice of peace may compel him, or commit him to priſon, there to remain till he will be bound.

2dly, The poor are obliged to become ſervants.

By the 5th of Eliz. [*h*] it is enacted, 'That every 'perſon being unmarried, and every other perſon 'under the age of thirty, who hath been brought up 'in any of the ſciences, &c. of clothiers, woollen 'cloth weavers, tuckers, fullers, clothworkers, ſhearmen, dyers, hoſiers, taylors, ſhoe-makers, tanners, 'pewterers, bakers, brewers, glovers, cutlers, ſmiths, 'farriers, curriers, ſadlers, ſpurriers, turners, tappers, hat-makers or felt-makers, butchers, cooks, 'or millers, or who hath exerciſed any of theſe 'trades by the ſpace of three years or more; and 'not having in lands, rents, &c. an eſtate of 40*s*. 'clear yearly value, freehold, nor being worth in 'goods 10*l*. and ſo allowed by two juſtices of the 'country where he hath moſt commonly inhabited, 'or by the mayor, &c. nor being retained with any 'perſon in huſbandry, nor retained in any of the

[*f*] 5 *Eliz.* c. iv. ſect. 35.
[*h*] *Chap.* iv. *ſect.* 4.
[g] *Viz.* Every trade then uſed.

'above

above ſciences, or in any other art or ſcience; nor lawfully retained in houſhold, or in any office, with any nobleman, gentleman, or others; nor having a convenient farm, or other holding, in tillage, whereupon he may lawfully employ his labour, during the time that he ſhall continue unmarried, or under the age of thirty, upon requeſt made by any perſon uſing the art or myſtery wherein the perſon ſo required hath been exerciſed as aforeſaid, ſhall be retained.

'And every perſon between the age of twelve and ſixty, not being lawfully retained in the ſeveral ſervices mentioned in the ſtatute [*i*], nor being a gentleman born, or a ſcholar in either univerſity, or in any ſchool, nor having an eſtate of freehold of 40*s. per annum* value, nor being worth in goods 10*l.* nor being heir to 10*l. per annum*, or 40*l.* in goods; nor being a neceſſary or convenient ſervant lawfully retained; nor having a convenient farm or holding, nor otherwiſe lawfully retained; ſhall be compelled to be retained to ſerve in huſbandry, by the year, with any perſon uſing huſbandry within the ſame ſhire.

'Every ſuch perſon refuſing to ſerve upon requeſt, or covenanting to ſerve and not ſerving, or departing from his ſervice before the end of his term, unleſs for ſome reaſonable cauſe to be allowed before a juſtice of the peace, mayor, &c. or departing at the end of his term without a quarter's warning given before two witneſſes, may be committed by two juſtices of the peace to priſon, there to remain without bail or mainprize, till he ſhall become bound to his maſter, &c. to ſerve, &c. [*k*].

'Nor ſhall any maſter, in any of the arts and ſciences aforeſaid, retain a ſervant for leſs than a year [*l*]; nor ſhall any maſter put away a ſervant retained by this act within his term, nor at the end of the term without a quarter's warning, under the penalty of 40*s* [*m*].

[*i*] Chap. iv. ſect. 7.
[*k*] Ib. ſect. 5, 6, 9.
[*l*] Ib. ſect. 3.
[*m*] Ib. ſect. 5, 6, 8.

Arti-

'Artificers, &c. are compellable by a juſtice of 'the peace, or the conſtable or other head-officer of 'a townſhip, to ſerve in the time of hay or corn 'harveſt. The penalty of diſobedience is impriſon-'ment in the ſtocks by the ſpace of two days and one 'night [*n*].

'Women, between the age of twelve and forty, 'may be obliged, by two juſtices, to enter into ſer-'vice by the year, week, or day; or may be commit-'ted *quouſque* [*o*].'

The legiſlature, having thus appointed what perſons ſhall ſerve, have gone farther, and have directed a method of aſcertaining how they ſhall ſerve: for which uſe principally is that excellent conſtitution of 5 Elizabeth [*p*], 'That the juſtices of the peace, 'with the ſheriff of the county, if he conveniently 'may, the mayor, &c. in towns corporate, ſhall 'yearly, within ſix weeks of Eaſter, aſſemble toge-'ther, and, with the aſſiſtance of ſuch diſcreet per-'ſons as they ſhall think proper to call to them, 'and reſpecting the plenty or ſcarcity of the time, 'and other circumſtances, ſhall, within the limits of 'their commiſſion, rate and appoint the wages of 'artificers, labourers, &c. by the year, month, week, 'or day, with or without meat and drink.' Then the ſtatute enumerates ſeveral particulars, in the moſt explicit manner, and concludes with theſe general words: 'And for any other kind of reaſonable labour 'and ſervice.'

'Theſe rates are appointed to be engroſſed in 'parchment, and certified into chancery, before the '12th day of July; and before the firſt day of Sep-'tember, ſeveral printed proclamations, contain-'ing the rates, and a command to all perſons to ob-'ſerve them, are to be ſent to the ſheriff and juſtices, 'and to the mayor, &c. Theſe proclamations are to 'be entered of record with the clerk of the peace, 'to be fixed up in the market-towns, and to be 'publicly proclaimed in all the markets till Michael-'mas [*q*].

[*n*] *Chap. iv. ſect. 28.*
[*p*] *Ib. ſect. 15.*
[*o*] *Ib. ſect. 24.*
[*q*] *Ib. iv. ſect. 16.*

'And if any perſon, after the ſaid proclamations 'ſhall be ſent down and publiſhed, ſhall, by any 'ſecret ways or means, directly or indirectly retain 'or keep any ſervant, workman, or labourer, or ſhall 'give any greater wages, or other commodity, con- 'trary to the true intent of the ſtatute, or contrary to 'the rates aſſeſſed, he ſhall forfeit 5*l.* and be impri- 'ſoned by the ſpace of ten days [*r*].

'And every perſon who is retained, or takes any 'wages, contrary to the ſtatute, ſhall be impriſoned 'twenty-one days [*s*]. And every ſuch retainer, 'promiſe, gift and payment, or writing and bond for 'that purpoſe, are made abſolutely void.

'Every juſtice of peace, or chief officer, who ſhall 'be abſent at the rating of wages, unleſs the juſtices 'ſhall allow the reaſonable cauſe of his abſence, for- 'feits 10*l.* [*t*].'

That this ſtatute may, from time to time, be carefully and diligently put in execution, 'The juſtices 'are appointed to meet twice a year, to make a ſpe- 'cial and diligent enquiry of the branches and arti- 'cles of this ſtatute, and of the good execution of 'the ſame, and ſeverely to correct and puniſh any 'defaults: for which ſervice they are allowed 5*s.* '*per* day [*u*].' No inconſiderable allowance at that time!

But all this care of the legiſlature proved, it ſeems, ineffectual; for, forty years after the making this ſtatute, we find the parliament complaining, 'That 'the ſaid act had not, according to the true meaning 'thereof, been duly put in execution; and that the 'rates of wages for poor artificers, labourers, and 'other perſons, had not been rated and proportioned 'according to the politic intention of the ſaid act '[*w*].' A neglect which ſeems to have been occaſioned by ſome doubts raiſed in Weſtminſter-hall, concerning the perſons who were the ſubjects of this law. For the clearing therefore any ſuch doubt,

[*r*] Chap. iv. ſect. 18.
[*s*] Ib. ſect. 17.
[*t*] Ib. ſect. 19, 20.
[*u*] Ib. ſect. 37, 38.
[*w*] Preamble to 1 Jac. c. vi.

this ſubſequent ſtatute gives the juſtices an expreſs power 'to rate the wages of any labourers, weavers, 'ſpinſters, and workmen or workwomen whatſoever, 'either working by the day, week, month, year, or 'taking any work at any perſon's hands whatſoever, 'to be done by the great, or otherwiſe [x].'

And to render the execution of this law the more eaſy, the ſtatute of James I. enacts, 1. 'That in all 'counties where general ſeſſions are kept in ſeveral 'diviſions, the rating wages at ſuch reſpective gene-'ral ſeſſions ſhall be as effectual within the diviſion, 'as if they had been rated at the grand general 'ſeſſion [y].'

2. The method of certifying the rates in chancery appearing, I apprehend, too troubleſome and tedious, 'ſuch certificate is made no longer neceſſary, but the 'rates being aſſeſſed and engroſſed in parchment, un-'der the hands and ſeals of the juſtices, the ſheriff, 'or chief officer of towns corporate, may immediately 'proclaim the ſame [z].'

And whereas wool is the great ſtaple commodity of this kingdom, and the woollen trade its principal manufacture, the parliament have given particular attention to the wages of artificers in this trade.

For, 1. By the ſtatute of James I. [a], 'No clothier, being a juſtice of peace in any precinct or liberty, ſhall be rater of wages for any artizan depending upon the making of cloth.'

2. 'Clothiers, not paying ſo much wages to their workmen or workwomen, as are rated by the juſtices, forfeit 10s. for every offence [b].'

3. By a late ſtatute [c], 'All perſons, anywiſe concerned in employing any labourers in the woollen manufactory, are required to pay the full wages or price agreed on, in money, and not in goods, truck, or otherwiſe; nor ſhall they make any deduction from ſuch wages or price, on account of any goods ſold or delivered previous to ſuch agreement. And all ſuch wages are to be levied, on conviction, be-

[x] 1 Jac. ſect. 3. [y] Ib. ſect. 5. [z] Ib. ſect. 6.
[a] Ib. ſect. 7. [b] Ib. ſect. 7.
[c] 12 Geo. I. cap. xxxiv. ſect. 3.

'fore two juſtices, by diſtreſs; and, for want of 'diſtreſs, the party is to be committed for ſix months, 'or until full ſatisfaction is made to the party com- 'plaining. Beſides which, the clothier forfeits the 'ſum of 100*l.* [*d*].'

4. By the ſame ſtatute, 'All contracts, by-laws, '&c. made in unlawful clubs, by perſons brought up 'in, or exerciſing the art of, a wool-comber or wea- 'ver, for regulating the ſaid trade, ſettling the prices 'of goods, advancing wages, or leſſening the hours 'of work, are declared to be illegal, and void; and 'any perſon concerned in the woollen manufactures, 'who ſhall knowingly be concerned in ſuch contract, 'by-law, &c. or ſhall attempt to put it in execution, 'ſhall, upon conviction before two juſtices, ſuffer 'three months impriſonment [*e*].'

But long before this act, a general law was made [*f*], to puniſh all conſpiracies for raiſing wages, limiting hours of work, &c. among artificers, workmen, and labourers; and if ſuch conſpiracy was to extend to a general advance of wages all over the kingdom, any inſurrection of a number of perſons, in conſequence of it, would be an overt act of high treaſon.

From this curſory view it appears, I think, that no blame lies at the door of the legiſlature, which hath not only given the magiſtrate, but even private perſons, with his aſſiſtance, a power of compelling the poor to work; and *2dly*, hath allotted the fulleſt powers, and preſcribed the moſt effectual means, for aſcertaining and limiting the price of their labour.

But ſo very faulty and remiſs hath been the execution of theſe laws, that an incredulous reader may almoſt doubt whether there are really any ſuch exiſting; particularly as to that which relates to the rating the wages of labourers; a law which at firſt, it ſeems, was too careleſsly executed, and which hath ſince grown into utter neglect and diſuſe.

Hath this total diſuſe ariſen, in common with the neglect of other wholeſome proviſions, for want of

[*d*] 12 Geo. I. c. xxxiv. ſect. 4. [*e*] Ib. ſect. 1.
[*f*] 2 and 3 E. VI. c. xv.

due attention to the public good? or is the execution of this law attended with any extraordinary difficulty? or, laſtly, are we really grown, as Sir Joſiah Child ſays, wiſer than our forefathers, and have diſcovered any fault in the conſtitution itſelf; and that to retrench the price of labour by a law is an error in policy?

This laſt ſeems to me, I own, to be very ſtrange doctrine, and ſomewhat of a paradox in politics; however, as it is the ſentiment of a truly wiſe and great man, it deſerves a fair diſcuſſion. Such I will endeavour to give it; ſince no man is more inclined to reſpect the opinions of ſuch perſons; and as the revival of the law, which he oppoſes, is, I think, abſolutely neceſſary to the purpoſe I am contending for.

I will give the paſſage from Sir Joſiah at length. It is in anſwer to this poſition, *That the dearneſs of wages ſpoils the Engliſh trade.* 'Here, ſays he, the 'author propounds the making a law to retrench the 'hire of poor mens labour (an honeſt charitable 'project, and well becoming an uſurer!) the anſwer 'to this is eaſy. *Firſt*, I affirm, and can prove, he is 'miſtaken in fact; for the Dutch, with whom we 'principally contend in trade, give generally more 'wages to all their manufacturers, by at leaſt two-'pence in the ſhilling, than the Engliſh. *Secondly*, 'Wherever wages are high, univerſally throughout 'the whole world, 'tis an infallible evidence of the 'riches of that country; and wherever wages for la-'bour run low, it is a proof of the poverty of that 'place. *Thirdly*, It is multitudes of people, and 'good laws, ſuch as cauſe an encreaſe of people, 'which principally enrich any country; and if we 'retrench by law the labour of our people, we drive 'them from us to other countries that give better 'rates; and ſo the Dutch have drained us of our 'ſeamen and woollen manufacturers, and we the 'French of their artificers and ſilk manufacturers; 'and many more we ſhould, if our laws otherwiſe 'gave them fitting encouragement; of which more 'in due place. *Fourthly*, If any particular trades

'exal

'exact more here than in Holland, they are only 'such as do it by virtue of incorporations, privileges, 'and charters, of which the cure is eaſy, by an act 'of naturalization, and without compulſory laws. 'It is true, our great grandfathers did exerciſe ſuch 'policy, of endeavouring to retrench the price of la-'bour by a law (although they could never effect it) 'but that was before trade was introduced into this 'kingdom; we are ſince, with the reſt of the trading 'world, grown wiſer in this matter; and, I hope, ſhall 'ſo continue [g].'

To this I reply, 1. That the making ſuch a law is not only an honeſt, but a charitable project; as it propoſes, by retrenching the price of poor mens labour, to provide labour, and conſequently hire, for all the poor who are capable of labour. In all manufactures whatever, the lower the price of labour is, the cheaper will be the price to the conſumer; and the cheaper this price is, the greater will be the conſumption; and conſequently the more hands employed. This is likewiſe a very charitable law to the poor farmer, and never more neceſſary than at this day, when the rents of lands are rated to the higheſt degree. The great hopes which the farmer hath (indeed his common relief from ruin) is of an exportation of corn. This exportation cannot be by law, unleſs when the corn is under ſuch a particular price. How neceſſary then is it to him, that the price of labour ſhould be confined within moderate bounds, that the exportation of corn, which is of ſuch general advantage to the kingdom, ſhould turn, in any conſiderable manner, to his private profit! and what reaſon is there to imagine, that this power of limiting wages ſhould be executed in any diſhoneſt or uncharitable manner? is it not a power entruſted to all the juſtices of the county, or diviſion, and to the ſheriff, with the aſſiſtance of grave, ſober, and ſubſtantial perſons, who muſt be ſufficient judges of the matter, and who are directed to have regard to the plenty and ſcarcity of the times? is it to be ſuſpected, that many perſons

[g] Preface to his Diſcourſe on Trade.

of this kind ſhould unite in a cruel and flagitious act, by which they would be liable to the condemnation of their own conſciences, to the curſes of the poor, and to be reproached by the example of all their neighbouring counties? are not much groſſer exorbitancies to be feared on the other ſide, when the loweſt artificers, huſbandmen, and labourers, are made judges in their own cauſe; and when it is left to their own diſcretion, to exact what price they pleaſe for their labour, of the poor farmer or clothier; of whom if they cannot exact an extravagant price, they will fly to that alternative, which idleneſs often prefers, of begging or ſtealing? *Laſtly*, Such a reſtraint is very wholeſome to the poor labourers themſelves; of whom Sir Joſiah obſerves [*b*], 'That they live better in the 'deareſt countries for proviſions than in the cheap-'eſt, and better in a dear year than in a cheap, eſpe-'cially in relation to the public good; for, in a 'cheap year, they will not work above two days in 'a week; their humour being ſuch that they will not 'provide for a hard time, but juſt work ſo much, and 'no more, as may maintain them in that mean condi-'tion to which they have been accuſtomed.' Is it not therefore, upon this conceſſion, demonſtrable, that the poor man himſelf will live much better (his family certainly will) by theſe means? again, many of the poor, and thoſe the more honeſt and induſtrious, will probably gain by ſuch a law: for, at the ſame time that the impudent and idle, if left to themſelves, will certainly exact on their maſters; the modeſt, the humble, and truly laborious, may often (and ſo I doubt not but the caſe is) be oppreſſed for them, and forced to accept a lower price for their labour, than the liberality of gentlemen would allow them.

2dly, The two aſſertions contained in the next paragraph both ſeem to me ſuſpicious. Firſt, That the Dutch and other nations have done all that in them lies, to draw from us our ſeamen, and ſome of our manufacturers, is certainly true; and this they would do at any price: but that the Dutch do in general

[*b*] Diſcourſe on Trade.

give

give more wages to their manufacturers than the Engliſh, is, I believe, not the fact. Of the manufactures of Holland, the only conſiderable article which we ourſelves take of them, except linen, are toys; and to this we are induced, not becauſe the Dutch are ſuperior to our workmen in genius and dexterity (points in which they are not greatly celebrated) but becauſe they work much cheaper. Nor is, *2dly*, The immediate tranſition from trade to manufacture altogether ſo fair. The Dutch, it is true, are principally our rivals in trade in general, and chiefly as carriers; but not ſo in manufacture, particularly in the woollen manufacture. Here our chief rivals are the French, amongſt whom the price of labour is known to be conſiderably lower than with us. To this, among other cauſes (for I know there are others, and ſome very ſcandalous ones), they owe their ſucceſs over us in the Levant. It is indeed a truth, which needs no comment nor proof, that where goods are of equal value, the man who ſells cheapeſt will have the moſt cuſtom; and it is as certainly true, that he who makes up his goods in the cheapeſt manner, can ſell them ſo.

3dly, Sir Joſiah aſſerts, 'That wherever wages are 'high, univerſally throughout the world, 'tis an infallible evidence of the riches of that country; and 'wherever wages for labour run low, it is a proof of 'the poverty of that place.—If this be true, the conceſſion will do him no ſervice; for it will not prove, that to give high wages is the way to grow rich; ſince it is much more probable, that riches ſhould cauſe the advance of wages, than that high wages ſhould produce riches. This latter, I am ſure, would appear a high ſoleciſm in private life; and, I believe, it is no leſs ſo in public.

4thly, His next aſſertion, *That to retrench by law the labour of our people, is to drive them from us*, hath partly received an anſwer already. To give this argument any force, our wages muſt be reduced at leaſt below the ſtandard of other countries; which is, I *think*, very little to be apprehended; but, on the *contrary*, if the labourer ſhould carry his demands ever

little higher, as may be reaſonably expected, the ſumption of many manufactures will not only be ſined to our own people, but to a very few of thoſe ple.

Thus, I hope, I have given a full anſwer to this at man, whom I cannot diſmiſs, without obſerving anifeſt miſtake of the queſtion, which runs through his arguments; all that he advances concluding, eed, only to the *quantum* of wages which ſhall be en for labour. He ſeems rather to argue againſt ing too little, than againſt regulating what is to be en; ſo that his arguments are more proper for the ſideration of the juſtices at their meeting for ſettling rates of wages, than for the conſideration of the iſlature, in a debate concerning the expediency of above law. To evince the expediency of which, I peal to the concurrent ſenſe of parliament in ſo ny different ages; for this is not only teſtified ex-ſly in the above ſtatute of Elizabeth and James, t may be fairly implied from thoſe of Edward VI. d George I. above recited.

I have moreover, I think, demonſtrated, 1. The uity of this law; and that it is as much for the ſer-e of the labourer as of his maſter. 2. The utility it to trade: I ſhall only add the neceſſity of it, in der to execute the intention of the legiſlature, in mpelling the idle to work; for is it not the ſame ing to have the liberty of working or not at your n pleaſure, and to have the abſolute nomination of e price at which you will work? the idleneſs of the mmon people in this town is, indeed, greatly to be ributed to this liberty; moſt of theſe, if they can-t exact an exorbitant price for their labour, will re-ain idle. The habit of exacting on their ſuperiors grown univerſal; and the very porters expect to re-ive more for their work than the ſalaries of above lf the officers of the army amount to.

I conclude then, that this law is neceſſary to be re-ved (perhaps with ſome enlargements) and that ſtill on one account more; which is, to enable the ma-*trate clearly to* diſtinguiſh the corrigible from the *orrigible in* idleneſs: for when the price of labour

is once eſtabliſhed, all thoſe poor who ſhall refuſe to labour at that price, even at the command of a magiſtrate, may properly be deemed incorrigibly idle.

For theſe the legiſlature have, by ſeveral acts of parliament, provided a puniſhment, by commitment to Bridewell either for more or leſs time: and a very ſevere puniſhment this is, if being confirmed in habits of idleneſs, and in every other vicious habit, may be eſteemed ſo.

Theſe houſes are commonly called houſes of correction, and the legiſlature intended them certainly for places of correction of idleneſs at leaſt: for in many acts, where perſons are ordered to be committed to Bridewell, it is added *There to be kept to hard labour*; nay, in the ſtatute of Jac. I. [*i*] theſe houſes of correction are directed 'to be built with a conve-'nient backſide adjoining, together with mills, 'turns, cards, and ſuch like neceſſary implements, 'to ſet rogues and other idle people on work.' Again, in the ſame ſtatute, authority is given to the maſter or governor, 'To ſet to work ſuch rogues, vagabonds, 'idle and diſorderly perſons, as ſhall be brought or 'ſent unto the ſaid houſe (being able) while they 'ſhall continue in the ſaid houſe; and to puniſh them, 'by putting fetters on them and by whipping; nor 'are the ſaid rogues, &c. to have any other proviſion 'than what they ſhall earn by their labour.'

The erection of theſe houſes, as is uſual with new inſtitutions, did at firſt greatly anſwer the good purpoſes for which they were deſigned, inſomuch that my lord Coke obſerves, 'That upon the making of the 'ſtatute 39 Eliz. for the erection of houſes of correc-'tion, and a good ſpace after, whilſt juſtices of peace 'and other officers were diligent and induſtrious, there 'was not a rogue to be ſeen in any part of England.' And again he prophecies, that, 'from the erection

[*i*] Chap. iv. Theſe houſes were firſt begun to be erected Ann. 13 Eliz. the priſon for idleneſs being, before that time, the ſtocks. In the 11th year of Henry VII. vagabonds, beggars, &c. are ordered to be ſet three days and three nights in the ſtocks.

'of theſe houſes we ſhall have neither beggar nor idle 'perſon in the commonwealth [*k*].'

But this great man was a much better lawyer than he was a prophet; for whatever theſe houſes were deſigned to be, or whatever they at firſt were, the fact is, that they are at preſent, in general, no other than ſchools of vice, ſeminaries of idleneſs, and common-ſhores of naſtineſs and diſeaſe. As to the power of whipping, which the act of James I. veſts in the governor, that, I believe, is very ſeldom uſed; and, perhaps, when it is, not properly applied. And the juſtice in very few inſtances (in none of idleneſs) hath any power of ordering ſuch puniſhment [*l*].

And with regard to work, the intention of the law is, I apprehend, as totally fruſtrated. Inſomuch that they muſt be very lazy perſons indeed who can eſteem the labour impoſed in any of theſe houſes as a puniſhment. In ſome, I am told, there is not any proviſion made for work. In that of Middleſex in particular, the governor hath confeſſed to me that he hath had no work to employ his priſoners; and hath urged as a reaſon, that having generally great numbers of moſt deſperate felons under his charge, who, notwithſtanding his utmoſt care, will ſometimes get acceſs to his other priſoners, he dares not truſt thoſe who are committed to hard labour with any heavy or ſharp inſtruments of work, leſt they ſhould be converted into weapons by the felons.

What good conſequence then can ariſe from ſending idle and diſorderly perſons to a place where they are neither to be corrected nor employed; and where, with the converſation of many as bad, and ſometimes worſe than themſelves, they are ſure to be improved in the knowledge, and confirmed in the practice, of iniquity? can it be conceived that ſuch perſons will not come out of theſe houſe much more idle and diſorderly than they went in? the truth of this I have often experienced in the behaviour of the wretches

[*k*] 2 Juſt. 729. [*l*] By the laſt vagabond act, which repeals all the former, rogues and vagabonds are to be whipt, or ſent to the houſe of correction.

broug

brought before me; the moſt impudent and flagitious of whom have always been ſuch as have been before acquainted with the diſcipline of Bridewell: a commitment to which place, though it often cauſes great horror and lamentation in the novice, is uſually treated with ridicule and contempt by thoſe who have already been there.

For this reaſon, I believe, many of the worthieſt magiſtrates have, to the utmoſt of their power, declined a rigorous execution of the laws for the puniſhment of idleneſs; thinking that a ſevere reprimand might more probably work the converſion of ſuch perſons than the committing them to Bridewell. This I am ſure may, with great certainty, be concluded, that the milder method is leſs liable to render what is bad worſe, and to complete the deſtruction of the offender.

But this is a way of acting, however worthy be the motive, which is ſometimes more juſtifiable to a man's own conſcience, than it would be in the Court of King's Bench, which requires the magiſtrate to execute the laws entruſted to his care, and in the manner which thoſe laws preſcribe. And beſides the indecency of ſhewing a diſregard to the laws in being, nothing ſurely can be more improper than to ſuffer the idleneſs of the poor, the cauſe of ſo much evil to the ſociety, to go entirely unpuniſhed.

And yet, ſhould the magiſtrate do his duty as he is required, will the intent and purpoſe of the legiſlature be anſwered? The parliament was, indeed, too wiſe to puniſh idleneſs barely by confinement. Labour is the true and proper puniſhment of idleneſs, for the ſame reaſon which the excellent Dr. Swift gives why death is the proper puniſhment of cowardice. Where then is the remedy? is it to enforce the execution of the law as it now ſtands, and to reform the preſent conduct of the ſeveral Bridewells? this would, I believe, be as difficult a work as the cleanſing of the Augean ſtables of old; and would require as extraordinary a degree of political as that did of natural ſtrength, to accompliſh it. In truth, the caſe here is the ſame as with the overſeers before; the truſt is to

great for the perſons on whom it devolves: and though theſe houſes are, in ſome meaſure, under the inſpection of the juſtices of peace, yet this in the ſtatute is recommended in too general a manner to their care, to expect any good fruits from it. As 'to the true 'and faithful account which they are to yield to the 'juſtices, at the ſeſſions, of the perſons in their cuſ-'tody,' this is at preſent little more than matter of form; nor can it be expected to be any other in the hurry of a public ſeſſions, and when the ſtench ariſing from the priſoners is ſo intolerable that it is difficult to get any gentlemen to attend the court at that time. In the laſt vagrant act, indeed, two juſtices are appointed, twice or oftener, every year, to examine into the ſtate and nature of houſes of correction, &c. yet, as it gives them no power but of reporting to the ſeſſions, I believe hath not produced any good effect: for the buſineſs of the ſeſſions is ſo complicated and various, that it happens, as in all caſes where men have too much to do, that they do little or nothing effectually. Perhaps, indeed, if two or more juſtices of the peace were appointed to meet once every month at ſome convenient place, as near as poſſible to the Bridewell, there to ſummon the governor before them, to examine the accounts of his ſtock and implements for work, and to make ſuch orders (under what reſtrictions the parliament ſhall think proper) as to ſuch juſtices ſhall ſeem requiſite; this might afford a palliative at leaſt. In ſhort, the great cure for idleneſs is labour; and this is its only proper puniſhment; nor ſhould it ever be in the power of the idle perſon to commute this puniſhment for any other.

In the reign of [m] Edward VI. a moſt ſevere law, indeed, was made for the puniſhment of idleneſs.—'If any perſon (ſays the Statute) ſhall bring to two 'juſtices of peace any runagate ſervant, or any other, 'which liveth idly and loiteringly by the ſpace of three 'days, the ſaid juſtices ſhall cauſe the ſaid idle and 'loitering ſervant or vagabond to be marked with an 'hot iron on the breaſt with the letter V, and adjudge

[m] 1 Ed. VI. 13 Rep. him

'him to be ſlave to the ſame perſon that brought 'and preſented him, to have to him, his executors 'and aſſigns, for two years, who ſhall take the ſaid 'ſlave, and give him bread, water, or ſmall drink, 'and refuſe meat, and cauſe him to work, by beating, 'chaining, or otherwiſe, in ſuch work and labour as 'he ſhall put him, be it never ſo vile. And if ſuch 'ſlave abſent himſelf from his maſter within the term, 'by the ſpace of fourteen days, he ſhall be adjudged 'by two juſtices of the peace to be marked on the 'forehead, or the ball of the cheek, with a hot iron, 'with the ſign of an S, and ſhall be adjudged to be 'ſlave to his ſaid maſter for ever; and, if the ſaid ſlave 'ſhall run away a ſecond time, he ſhall be adjudged 'a felon.'

This ſtatute lived no longer than two years, indeed it deſerved no longer a date? for it was cruel, unconſtitutional, and rather reſembling the cruel temper of a Draco, than the mild ſpirit of the Engliſh law. But, *eſt modus:* there is a difference between making men ſlaves, and felons, and compelling them to be ſubjects; in ſhort, between throwing the reins on the neck of idleneſs, and riding it with ſpurs of iron.

Thus have I endeavoured to give the reader a general idea of the laws which relate to this ſingle point of employing the poor; and, as well as I am able to diſcern, of their defects, and the reaſons of thoſe defects. I have likewiſe given ſome hints for the cure; and have preſumed to offer a plan, which, in my humble opinion, would effectually anſwer every purpoſe deſired.

But 'till this plan ſhall be produced; or (which is more to be expected) 'till ſome man of greater abilities, as well as of greater authority, ſhall offer ſome new regulation for this purpoſe; ſomething, at leaſt, ought to be done to ſtrengthen the laws already made, and to enforce their execution. The matter is of the higheſt concern; and imports us not only as we are good men and good Chriſtians, but as we are good Engliſhmen; ſince not only preſerving the poor from the higheſt degrees of wretchedneſs, but the making them uſeful ſubjects, is the thing propoſed;

work,' ſays Sir Joſiah Child [*n*], *which would redound ſome hundreds of thouſands per ann. to the public advantage.* Laſtly, it is of the utmoſt importance to that point which is the ſubject matter of this treatiſe, for which reaſon I have thought myſelf obliged to give it a full conſideration. 'The want of a due proviſion, ſays lord [*o*] Hale, 'for education and relief of the 'poor in a way of induſtry, is that which fills the 'gaols with malefactors, and fills the kingdom with 'idle and unprofitable perſons, that conſume the ſtock 'of the kingdom without improving it, and that will 'daily increaſe, even to a deſolation in time. And 'this error in the firſt concoction is never remediable 'but by gibbets and whipping.'

In ſerious truth, if proper care ſhould be taken to provide for the preſent poor, and to prevent their encreaſe by laying ſome effectual reſtraints on the extravagance of the lower ſort of people, the remaining part of this treatiſe would be rendered of little conſequence; ſince few perſons, I believe, have made their exit at Tyburn, who have not owed their fate to ſome of the cauſes before mentioned. But as I am not too ſanguine in my expectations on this head, I ſhall now proceed to conſider of ſome methods to obviate the frequency of robberies, which, if leſs efficacious, are, perhaps, much eaſier than thoſe already propoſed. And if we will not remove the temptation, at leaſt we ought to take away all encouragement to robbery.

SECT. V.

Of the puniſhment of RECEIVERS OF STOLEN GOODS.

NOW one great encouragement to theft of all kinds is the eaſe and ſafety with which ſtolen goods may be diſpoſed of. It is a very old and vulgar, but a very true ſaying, 'That if there were no 'receivers there would be no thieves.' Indeed, could

[*n*] Page 88. [*o*] At the end of his diſcourſe touching the relief of the poor.

not the thief find a market for his goods, there would be an abſolute end of ſeveral kinds of theft; ſuch as ſhop-lifting, burglary, &c. the objects of which are generally goods and not money. Nay robberies on the highway would ſo ſeldom anſwer the purpoſe of the adventurer, that very few would think it worth their while to riſque ſo much with ſuch ſmall expectations.

But at preſent, inſtead of meeting with any ſuch diſcouragement, the thief diſpoſes of his goods with almoſt as much ſafety as the honeſteſt tradeſman: for firſt, if he hath made a booty of any value, he is almoſt ſure of ſeeing it advertiſed within a day or two, directing him *to bring the goods to a certain place, where he is to receive a reward* (ſometimes the full value of the booty) *and no queſtions aſked.* This method of recovering ſtolen goods by the owner, a very learned judge formerly declared to have been, in his opinion, a compoſition of felony. And ſurely, if this be proved to be carried into execution, I think it muſt amount to a full conviction of that crime. But, indeed, ſuch advertiſements are in themſelves ſo very ſcandalous, and of ſuch pernicious conſequence, that if men are not aſhamed to own they prefer an old watch or a diamond ring to the good of the ſociety, it is pity ſome effectual law was not contrived to prevent their giving this public countenance to robbery for the future.

But if the perſon robbed ſhould prove either too honeſt, or too obſtinate, to take this method of recovering his goods, the thief is under no difficulty in turning them into money. Among the great number of brokers and pawn-brokers ſeveral are to be found, who are always ready to receive a gold watch at an eaſy rate, and where no queſtions are aſked, or, at leaſt, where no anſwer is expected, but ſuch as the thief can very readily make.

Beſides the clandeſtine dealers this way, who ſatisfy their conſciences with telling a ragged fellow, or wench, that *they hope* they came honeſtly by ſilver, and gold, and diamonds; there are others, who ſcorn ſuch pitiful ſubterfuges, who engage openly with the thieves, and who have ware-houſes filled with ſtolen goods on

ly. Among the Jews, who live in a certain place in the city, there have been, and perhaps ſtill are, ſome notable dealers this way, who, in an almoſt public manner, have carried on a trade for many years with Rotterdam, where they have their ware-houſes and factors, and whither they export their goods with prodigious profit, and as prodigious impunity. And all this appeared very plainly laſt winter, in the examination of one Cadoſa, a Jew, in the preſence of the late excellent duke of Richmond, and many other noblemen and magiſtrates.

What then ſhall we ſay? is not this miſchief worthy of ſome remedy, or is it not capable of it? the noble duke (one of the worthieſt of magiſtrates, as well as of the beſt of men) thought otherwiſe, as would have appeared, had his valuable life, for the good of mankind, been prolonged.

Certain it is, that the law, as it now ſtands, is ineffectual to cure the evil. Let us ſee, therefore, if poſſible, where the defect lies.

At the common law, any one might lawfully (ſays lord Hale) have received his own goods from the felon who ſtole them [*p*]. But, if he had received them upon agreement not to proſecute, or to proſecute faintly, this would have been theftbote, puniſhable by impriſonment and ranſom.

But in neither of the foregoing caſes would the receiver of the goods have become an acceſſary to the felon. So if one man had bought another's goods of the thief, though he had known them to be ſtolen, if he had given the juſt value for them, he would not have become an acceſſary [*q*]. But if he had bought them at an undervalue, this, Sir Richard Hyde held, would have made him an acceſſary. My lord Hale differs from his opinion, and his reaſon to ſome readers may ſeem a pleaſant one; *For if there be any odds* (ſays he) *he that gives more, benefits the felon more than he that gives leſs than value.* However this, his lordſhip thinks, may be a miſdemeanour puniſhable by fine and impriſonment; but that the bare receiving of

[*p*] *Hiſt. P. C.* vol. I. p. 546. 629. ib. [*q*] Hiſt. P. C. ubi ſupra.

goods knowing them to be ſtolen makes not an acceſſary.

So ſays the great lord Hale, and ſo indeed was the law; though the judges ſeem not to have been unanimous in their opinion. In the book of *Aſſizes* [r], Scrope is ſaid to have held otherwiſe; and though Shard there quaſhed an appeal of felony for receiving ſtolen goods only, yet I cannot help obſerving, that the reporter of the caſe hath left a note of aſtoniſhment at the judgment of the court. This, ſays he, was wonderful! and wonderful ſurely it is, if he who receives, relieves, comforts, or aſſiſts a felon, ſhall be an acceſſary, that he ſhall not be ſo, who knowingly buys the goods of the felon; which is generally, I believe, the ſtrongeſt reſief, comfort, and aſſiſtance, which can be given him, and without the hope and expectation of which he would never have committed the theft or robbery.

It is unneceſſary, however, to enter further into this controverſy; ſince it is now expreſly declared by ſtatute [s], 'That the receivers of ſtolen goods, knowing 'them to be ſtolen, ſhall be deemed acceſſaries after 'the fact.'

But this ſtatute, though it removed the former abſurdity of the law, was not ſufficient to remedy the evil; there yet remaining many difficulties in bringing theſe pernicious miſcreants to juſtice, conſiſtent with legal rules. For,

1. As the offence of the acceſſary is dependent on that of the principal, he could not be tried or outlawed, till after the conviction or attainder of the principal; ſo that, however ſtrong evidence there might be againſt the receiver, he was ſtill ſafe, unleſs the thief could be apprehended.

2. If the thief on his trial ſhould be acquitted, as often happens through ſome defect of evidence in the moſt notorious caſes, the receiver, being only an acceſſary, though he hath confeſſed his crime, or though the moſt undeniable evidence could be brought againſt him, muſt be acquitted likewiſe.

[r] 27 Aſſiz. 69. [s] 3 and 4 W. and M. c. ix.

3. In

3. In petit larceny, there can be no ſuch acceſſary [*t*]: for though the ſtatute ſays, that a receiver of ſtolen goods, knowing, &c. ſhall be an acceſſary after the fact, that is, legally underſtood to mean only in caſes where ſuch acceſſary may be by law; and that is confined to ſuch felonies as are to receive judgment of death, or to have the benefit of clergy. Now, for petit larceny, which is the ſtealing goods of leſs value than a ſhilling, the puniſhment at common law is whipping; and this was properly enough conſidered as too trifling an offence to extend the guilt to criminals in a ſecond degree. But ſince juries have taken upon them to conſider the value of goods as immaterial, and to find upon their oaths, that what is proved to be worth ſeveral ſhillings, and ſometimes ſeveral pounds, is of the value of ten-pence, this is become a matter of more conſequence. For inſtance; if a pickpocket ſteal ſeveral handkerchiefs, or other things, to the value of twenty ſhillings, and the receiver of theſe, knowing them to be ſtolen, is diſcovered, and both are indicted, the one as principal, the other as acceſſary, as they muſt be; if the jury convict the principal, and find the goods to be of as high value as a ſhilling, he muſt receive judgment of death; whereas, by finding the goods (which they do upon their oaths) to be of the value of ten-pence, the thief is ordinarily ſentenced to be whipt, and returns immediately to his trade of picking pockets, and the acceſſary is of courſe diſcharged, and of courſe returns to his trade of receiving the booty. Thus the jury are perjured, the public highly injured, and two excellent acts of parliament defeated, that two miſcreants may laugh at their proſecutors, and at the law.

The two former of theſe defects are indeed remedied by a later ſtatute [*u*], which enacts, 'That the buyers 'and receivers of ſtolen goods, knowing them to be 'ſtolen, may be proſecuted for a miſdemeanor, and 'puniſhed by fine and impriſonment, though the 'principal felon be not before convicted of felony.'

[*t*] Cro. Eliz. 750. Hale. Hiſt. vol. I. p. 530. 618.
[*u*] 3 and 4 W. and M. c. ix.

This laſt ſtatute is again repeated in the 5th of queen Anne [*w*]; and there the power of the court to puniſh in the caſe of the miſdemeanor, is farther encreaſed to any other corporal puniſhment, which the court ſhall think fit to inflict, inſtead of fine and impriſonment; and, in the caſe of the felony, the acceſſary is to receive judgment of death; but the benefit of clergy is not taken away. Laſtly, by the ſtatute of George II. [*x*] the receivers of ſtolen goods, knowing, &c. are to be tranſported for fourteen years. And by the ſame ſtatute, every perſon taking money or reward, directly or indirectly, under pretence or upon account of helping any to ſtolen goods, unleſs ſuch perſon apprehend and bring to his trial the felon, and give evidence againſt him, is made guilty of felony without benefit of clergy.

And thus ſtands the law at this day; which, notwithſtanding the repeated endeavours of the legiſlature, experience ſhews us, is incapable of removing this deplorable evil from the ſociety.

The principal defect ſeems, to me, to lie in the extreme difficulty of convicting the offender; for,

1. Where the thief can be taken, you are not at liberty to proſecute for the miſdemeanor.

2. The thief himſelf, who muſt be convicted before the acceſſary is to be tried, cannot be a witneſs.

3. Without ſuch evidence, it is very difficult to convict of the knowledge, that the goods were ſtolen; which, in this caſe, can appear from circumſtances only. Such are principally, 1*ſt*, Buying goods of value, of perſons very unlikely to be the lawful proprietors. 2*dly*, Buying them for much leſs than their real value. 3*dly*, Buying them, or ſelling them again, in a clandeſtine manner, concealing them, &c. None of theſe are commonly liable to be proved; and I have known a man acquitted, where moſt of theſe circumſtances have appeared againſt him.

What then is to be done, to extirpate this ſtubborn miſchief? to prove the pernicious conſequence of

[*w*] Chap. xxxi. [*x*] Chap. xi.

which,

which, I need, I think, only appeal to the ſenſe of parliament, teſtified in ſo many repeated acts, and very ſtrongly expreſſed in their preambles.

Firſt, Might it not be proper to put an effectual ſtop to the preſent ſcandalous method of compounding felony, by public advertiſements in the newſpapers? might not the inſerting ſuch advertiſements be rendered highly criminal in the authors of them, and in the printers themſelves, unleſs they diſcover ſuch authors?

2*dly*, Is it impoſſible to find any means of regulating brokers and pawnbrokers? if ſo, what arguments are there againſt extirpating entirely a ſet of miſcreants, which, like other vermin, harbour only about the poor, and grow fat by ſucking their blood?

3*dly*, Why ſhould not the receiving ſtolen goods, knowing them to be ſtolen, be made an original offence? by which means the thief, who is often a paultry offender in compariſon of the receiver, and ſometimes his pupil, might, in little felonies, be made a witneſs againſt him: for thus the trial of the receiver would in no caſe depend on the trial, or conviction, of the thief.

4*thly*, Why may not the bare buying or taking to pawn ſtolen goods, above a certain value, be made evidence of receiving with knowledge, &c. unleſs the goods were bought in market overt (no broker's or pawnbroker's ſhop to be reputed ſuch market overt) or unleſs the defendant could prove, by a credible witneſs to the tranſaction, that he had good cauſe to regard the ſeller or pawner of the goods to be the real owner. If 20*s*. was the value limited, it would anſwer all the purpoſes contended for; and would in no wiſe interfere with the honeſt trade (if indeed it ever be ſo) between the pawnbroker and the poor.

If none of theſe methods be thought poſſible or proper, I hope better will be found out. Something ought to be done, to put an end to the preſent practice, of which I ſee daily the moſt pernicious conſequences; many of the younger thieves appearing plainly to be taught, encouraged, and employed by the receivers.

SECT. VI.

Of Laws relating to VAGABONDS.

THE other great encouragement to robbery, beſide the certain means of finding a market for the booty, is the probability of eſcaping puniſhment.

Firſt, then, The robber hath great hopes of being undiſcovered: and this is one principal reaſon why robberies are more frequent in this town, and in its neighbourhood, than in the remoter parts of the kingdom.

Whoever indeed conſiders the cities of London and Weſtminſter, with the late vaſt addition of their ſuburbs; the great irregularity of their buildings; the immenſe number of lanes, alleys, courts, and bye-places; muſt think, that, had they been intended for the very purpoſe of concealment, they could ſcarce have been better contrived. Upon ſuch a view, the whole appears as a vaſt wood or foreſt, in which a thief may harbour with as great ſecurity, as wild beaſts do in the deſarts of Africa or Arabia: for, by *wandering* from one part to another, and often ſhifting his quarters, he may almoſt avoid the poſſibility of being diſcovered.

Here, according to the method I have hitherto purſued, I will conſider, what remedy our laws have applied to this evil, namely, the *wandering* of the poor, and whether, and wherein, theſe remedies appear defective.

There is no part of our ancient conſtitution more admirable than that which was calculated to prevent the concealment of thieves and robbers. The original of this inſtitution is given to Alfred, at the end of his wars with the Danes, when the Engliſh were very much debauched by the example of thoſe barbarians, and betook themſelves to all manner of licentiouſneſs and rapine. Theſe evils were encouraged, as the hiſtorians ſay, by the vagabond ſtate of the offenders, who, having no ſettled place of abode, upon com-

mitting any offence, ſhifted their quarters, and went where it was difficult to diſcover them. To remedy this miſchief, therefore, Alfred, having limited the ſhires or counties in a better manner than before, divided them into hundreds, and theſe again into tithings, decennaries, or ten families [y].

Over every one of theſe tithings or decennaries, there was a chief, called the tithingman or burgh-holder, who had a power to call a court, and to try ſmall offences; the greater being referred to that court, which was in like manner eſtabliſhed over every hundred.

Every one of theſe heads of families were pledges to each other for the behaviour of all their family; and were likewiſe reciprocally pledges for each other to the hundred.

If any perſon was ſuſpected of a crime, he was obliged to find ſecurity for his good behaviour out of the ſame hundred and tithing. This if he could not find, he had reaſon to apprehend being treated with great ſeverity; and if any accuſed perſon, either before or after his finding bail, had fled from juſtice, the whole tithing and hundred ſhould pay a fine to the king.

In caſe of the default of appearance in a decenner, his nine pledges had one-and-thirty days to bring the delinquent forth to juſtice. If this failed, then the chief of thoſe decenners, by the vote of that and the neighbour decennaries, was to purge himſelf both of the guilt of the fact, and of being parties to the flight of the delinquent. And if they could not do this, then they were, by their own oaths, to acquit themſelves, and to bind themſelves to bring the delinquent to juſtice as ſoon as they could; and, in the mean time, to

[y] 'By theſe ten families (ſays the annotator to Rapin) we are 'not to underſtand ten houſe-keepers, but ten lords of manors, 'with all their vaſſals, tenants, labourers, and ſlaves, who, though 'they did not all live under their lord's roof, were all counted part 'of his family. As there were no little freeholders in thoſe times, 'nor for long after, ten ſuch families muſt occupy a large ſpace of 'ground, and might well conſtitute a rural tithing.' But this rural tithing would be larger than the hundred itſelf; and the very name and office of a tithingman, continued in pariſhes to this day, ſhews that lords of manors could not be here meant.

pay the damage out of the eſtate of the delinquent; and, if that were not ſufficient, then out of their own eſtate [z].

Every ſubject in the kingdom was regiſtered in ſome tithing; only perſons of the firſt rank had the privilege (ſays Mr. Rapin) [a] that their ſingle family ſhould make a tithing, for which they were reſponſible. 'All archbiſhops, biſhops, earls, barons, and 'all (ſays Bracton) who have ſok and ſac, tol and 'team, and theſe kinds of liberties, ought to have un-'der their PRIDHBURGH, all their knights, ſervants, 'eſquires; and, if any of them prove delinquent, the 'lord ſhall bring him to juſtice, or pay his fine [b].'

The maſter of the family was anſwerable for all who fed at his board, and were of his livery, and for all his ſervants of every kind, even for thoſe who ſerved him for their food only, without wages. Theſe were ſaid to be of his manupaſt; ſo were his gueſts; and if a man abode at any houſe but two nights, the maſter of that houſe was anſwerable for him [c].

In a word, ſays Bracton, every man, as well freemen as others, ought to belong to ſome frankpledge (*i. e.* to ſome decenna) unleſs he be a traveller, or belong to the manupaſt of ſome other; or unleſs he gives ſome countervailing ſecurity to the public, as dignity (*viz.* nobility), order (knighthood, or of the clergy), or eſtate (*viz.* either freehold in land, or perſonal effects *(res immobiles)* if he be a citizen.

By the laws of Edward the Confeſſor, every perſon, of the age of twelve years, ought to be ſworn in a view of frankpledge, *That he will neither become a thief himſelf, nor be any wiſe acceſſary to theft.*

This court, Briton [d] tells us, was to be holden twice a year, which was afterwards reduced to once a year by *Magna Charta*; and no man, ſays the Mirror, was, by an ancient ordinance, ſuffered to remain in the kingdom, who was not enrolled *in decenna*, and had freemen for his pledges [e].

[z] Bacon's Hiſt. Diſc. p. 43. Diſſertation on the Government of the Anglo-Saxons.
[a] Corona, cap. x.
[b] Bract. l. iii. De [ ] Bract. ubi ſup. Brit. 19. b.
[d] Brit. 36. b.
[e] Mirr. chap. i. ſect. 17. and chap. ſect. 1.

Such was this excellent conſtitution; which, even in Alfred's time, when it was in its infancy, wrought ſo admirable an effect, that, Ingulphus ſays, a traveller might have openly left a ſum of money ſafely in the fields and highways, and have found it ſafe and untouched a month afterwards [*f*]. Nay, William of Malmſbury tells us, the king ordered bracelets of gold to be hung up in the croſs-ways, as a proof of the honeſty of his people, none ever offering to meddle with them [*g*].

But this conſtitution would have been deficient, if it had only provided for the incorporating the ſubjects, unleſs it had confined them to the places where they were thus incorporated.

And therefore, by the laws of Alured or Canute, it was rendered unlawful for any of the decenners to depart from their dwelling, without the conſent of their fellow-pledges; nor were they at liberty to leave the country, without the licence of the ſheriff or governor of the ſame [*h*].

And if a perſon, who fled from one tithing, was received in another, the tithing receiving him ſhould anſwer for his deed (*i. e.* by amercement) if he was there found [*i*].

'Before this order was eſtabliſhed,' ſays Rapin, 'the meaner ſort of people might ſhift their quarters, by reaſon of their obſcurity, which prevented them from being taken notice of. But it was impoſſible for them to change their habitation, after they were obliged to bring a teſtimonial from their tithing, to enable them to ſettle and be regiſtered in another [*k*].'

'Whilſt this ancient conſtitution remained entire, ſuch peace,' ſays lord Coke, 'was preſerved within the realm, as no injuries, homicides, robberies, thefts, riots, tumults, or other offences, were committed; ſo as a man, with a white wand, might ſafely have ridden, before the Conqueſt, with much

[*f*] Script. poſt Bedam, p. 870.
[*g*] Ib. p. 44.
[*h*] Bacon, p. 44.
[*i*] Brit. ubi ſupra.
[*k*] Rapin, ubi ſup.

'money about him, without any weapon, through 'England [*l*].' Nay, even in the tumultuous times of William the Conqueror, the hiſtorians tell us, there was ſcarce a robber to be found in the kingdom.

This view of frankpledge remained long after the Conqueſt: for we find it twice repeated in one chapter of *Magna Charta* [*m*]; and there particularly it is ſaid, *Fiat autem viſus de frankplegg' ſic videlicet* QUOD PAX NOSTRA TENEATUR. Nay, Bracton, who wrote after that time, and Fleta after him, ſpeak of frankpledge as then ſubſiſting.

The ſtatute of Marlborough likewiſe, which was made the 52d of Henry III. mentions the ſame court; as doth *Briton*, who wrote ſtill later, in many places. And in the 17th of Edward II. an act was made, called, *The Statute for the View of Frankpledge* [*n*].

Nay, in the reign of Henry IV. we find an amercement for not coming to a view of frankpledge; and there the whole Court of King's Bench were of opinion, that every man, as well maſters as ſervants, were obliged to repair to this court [*o*]; and though then poſſibly it was degenerated, and become little more than form.

But in proceſs of time, this inſtitution dwindled to nothing; ſo that lord Coke might truly ſay, *Quod vera inſtitutio illius curiæ evanuit et velut umbra ejuſdem adhuc remanet*; and, a little after, ſpeaking of the frankpledge, the *Decennarii*, and the *Decenna*, he ſays, 'They are names continued only as ſhadows 'of antiquity [*p*].' Nay, this great man himſelf (if, after a moſt careful and painful peruſal of all he hath writ, as well here as in his 4th Inſtitute, and other places on the ſubject, I may be allowed to ſay ſo) ſeems to have no very clear idea concerning them; and might have fairly owned, of the original of the leet and frankpledge, what one of the ſages doth of

[*l*] 2 Inſtit. 73. [*m*] Chap. xxxiii. [*n*] But this matter was before that transferred from the decennary court to the leets and ſheriff's tourn. [*o*] Hill. 3 H. IV. Pl. 19.

[*p*] 2 Inſt. 72, 73.

an hundred, in the book of Henry VII. 'That a hundred had exiſted above a hundred years; and therefore, as to the true definition of a hundred, and whether it was compoſed of a hundred towns, or a hundred lordſhips, and whether it had anciently more or leſs juriſdiction, he frankly owned that he knew nothing of the matter [q].

The ſtatute of Marlborough [r] had perhaps given a fatal blow to the true and ancient uſe of the view of frankpledge; of which, as lord Coke ſays [s], the ſheriffs had made an ill uſe: for, in the 3d year of the ſucceeding king [t], we find the legiſlature providing againſt notorious felons, and ſuch as be openly of evil fame, that they ſhall not be admitted to bail; and, in the 13th, the ſtatute of Wincheſter, entirely altered the law, and gave us a new conſtitution on this head.

1. By this act the whole hundred is made anſwerable in caſe of robberies.

2. In order to prevent the concealment of robbers in towns, it is enacted, 1. That the gates of all walled towns ſhall be ſhut from ſun-ſetting to ſun-riſing. 2. A watch is appointed, who are to arreſt all ſtrangers. 3. No perſon is to lodge in the ſuburbs, nor in any place out of the town, unleſs his hoſt will anſwer for him. 4. The bailiffs of towns ſhall make enquiry, once within fifteen days at the fartheſt, of all perſons lodged in the ſuburbs, &c. and of thoſe who have received any ſuſpicious perſons.

3. To prevent the concealment of robbers without the towns, it is enacted, that the highways leading from one market-town to another ſhall be enlarged, and no buſhes, woods, or dykes, in which felons may be concealed, ſhall be ſuffered therein.

4. Felons are to be purſued by hue and cry.

This ſtatute, ſays lord Coke, was made againſt a gang of rogues, then called Roberdſmen, that took

[q] 8 H. VII. 3 b. [r] Chap. xxiv. By which juſtices in eyre are forbidden to amerce townſhips, becauſe all of twelve years old were not ſworn. [s] 2 Inſtit. 247.
[t] Weſtminſter I. chap. xv.

their denomination of one Robbin Hood, who lived in Yorkſhire in the reign of Richard I. and who, with his companions, harbouring in woods and deſarts, committed a great number of robberies and other outrages on the ſubject. From this arch-thief a great number of idle diſſolute fellows, who were called Drawlatches, Ribauds, and Roberdſmen, took their riſe, and infeſted this kingdom for above a century, notwithſtanding the many endeavours of the legiſlature from time to time to ſuppreſs them.

In all theſe laws, the principal aim viſibly was, to prevent idle perſons wandering from place to place, which, as we have before ſeen, was one great point of the decennary conſtitution.

Thus, by a law made in the 34th year of Edward III. a labourer departing from his ſervice into another county, was to be burned in the forehead with the letter F. And by the ſame ſtatute, if a labourer or ſervant do fly into a city or borough, the chief officer, on requeſt, was to deliver him up.

Again, in the 7th year of Richard II. the juſtices of peace are ordered to examine vagabonds; and, if they have no ſureties for their good behaviour, to commit them to priſon.

In the 11th year of Henry VII. it was enacted, that vagabonds and idle perſons ſhould be ſet on the ſtocks three days and three nights, and have no other ſuſtenance but bread and water, and then ſhall be put out of the town; and whoſoever gave ſuch idle perſons relief, forfeited 12 *d.*

By 22 Henry VIII. perſons calling themſelves Egyptians ſhall not come into the realm, under penalty of forfeiting their goods; and, if they do not depart within fifteen days after they are commanded, ſhall be impriſoned.

By the 1 and 2 Philip and Mary [*a*], Egyptians coming into the kingdom, and remaining here a month, are made guilty of felony without benefit of clergy.

[*a*] Chap. iv.

And

And thoſe who bring them into the realm, forfeit 40*l.*

By the 5 Eliz. the crime of felony without clergy is extended to all who are found in the company of Egyptians, or who ſhall counterfeit, transform, or diſguiſe themſelves as ſuch.

By 22 Henry VIII. a vagabond taken begging ſhall be whipped, and then ſworn to return to the place of his birth, or laſt abode for three years, there to put himſelf to labour.

By 27 Henry VIII. a valiant beggar, or ſturdy vagabond, ſhall be whipped for the firſt offence, and ſent to the place of his birth, &c. for the ſecond, the upper part of the griſtle of his right ear cut off; and if after that he be taken wandering in idleneſs, &c. he ſhall be adjudged and executed as a felon.

I ſhall mention no more acts (for ſeveral were made) between this and the 39th Elizabeth, when the former acts concerning vagabonds were all repealed, and the ſeveral proviſions againſt them were reduced to one law.

This act, which contained many wholeſome proviſions, remained in force a long time, but at length was totally repealed by the 12th of Queen Anne; as this was again by the 23 George II. which laſt-mentioned ſtatute ſtands now repealed by another made about ſix years ago [*w*].

I have taken this ſhort view of theſe repealed laws, in order to enforce two conſiderations. *Firſt*, That the removal of an evil, which the legiſlature have ſo often endeavoured to redreſs, is of great importance to the ſociety. *Adly*, That an evil, which ſo many ſubſequent laws have failed of removing, is of a very ſtubborn nature, and extremely difficult to be cured.

Here I hope to be forgiven, when I ſuggeſt, that the law hath probably failed in this inſtance, from want of ſufficient direction to a ſingle point. As on a former head, the diſeaſe ſeems to be no other than *idleneſs*; ſo here, *wandering* is the cauſe of the miſ-

[*w*] 17 George II. c. 5.

chief,

chief, and that alone to which the remedy ſhould be applied. This, one would imagine, ſhould be the chief, if not ſole, intent of all laws againſt vagabonds, which might, in a ſynonymous phraſe, be called laws againſt wanderers. But as the word itſelf hath obtained by vulgar uſe a more complex ſignification, ſo have the laws on this head had a more general view than to extirpate this miſchief; and by that means, perhaps, have failed of producing ſuch an effect.

I will therefore confine myſelf, as I have hitherto done on this head, to the ſingle point of preventing the poor from wandering, one principal cauſe of the encreaſe of robbers; as it is the chief means of preſerving them from the purſuit of juſtice: it being impoſſible for any thief to carry on his trade long with impunity among his neighbours, and where not only his perſon, but his way of life, muſt be well known.

Now to obviate this evil, the law, as it now ſtands, hath provided in a twofold manner. 1. By way of prevention; and, 2. By way of remedy.

As to the firſt, the ſtatute of *Elizabeth* declares [*x*], That no perſon retained in huſbandry, or in any art or ſcience in the act mentioned [*y*], after the time of his retainer is expired, ſhall depart out of any city, pariſh, &c. nor out of the country, &c. to ſerve in any other, unleſs he have a teſtimonial, under the ſeal of the city or town corporate, or of the conſtable or other head officer, and two other honeſt houſholders of the city, town, or pariſh, where he laſt ſerved, declaring his lawful departure, and the name of the ſhire and the place where he ſerved laſt. This certificate is to be delivered to the ſervant, and regiſtred by the parſon for 2*d.* and the form of it is given in the act.

And no perſon is to be retained in any other ſervice, without ſhewing ſuch teſtimonial to the chief officer of the town corporate, and in every other

[*x*] 5 Eliz. c. iv. ſect. 10. in force, though not in uſe.
[*y*] *i. e.* in almoſt every trade.

pla

place to the conſtable, curate, &c. on pain of impriſonment, till he procure a teſtimonial; and, if he cannot procure ſuch teſtimonial within twenty-one days, he ſhall be whipped, and treated like a vagabond; ſo ſhall he be if found with a forged teſtimonial. And thoſe who receive him without ſhewing ſuch teſtimonial as aforeſaid, forfeit 5*l.*

As to the 2d, the law hath been extremely liberal in its proviſions. Theſe are of two ſorts; 1. Simply compulſory; and, 2. Compulſory with puniſhment. Under the former head may be ranged the ſeveral acts of parliament relating to the ſettlement, or rather removal, of the poor.

As theſe ſtatutes, though very imperfectly executed, are pretty generally known (the nation having paid ſome millions to Weſtminſter-hall for their knowledge of them) I ſhall mention them very ſlightly in this place.

The ſtatute of Elizabeth, together with the wiſe execution of it, having made the poor an intolerable burden to the public, diſputes began to ariſe between pariſhes, to whoſe lot it fell to provide for certain individuals: for, the laws for confining the poor to their own homes being totally diſregarded, theſe uſed to ramble wherever whim or conveniency invited them. The overſeers of one pariſh were perhaps more liberal of the parochial fund than in another; or, ſometimes probably the overſeer of the pariſh of A was a friend or relation of a poor perſon of the pariſh of B, who did not chooſe to work. From ſome ſuch reaſon, the poor of one pariſh began to bring a charge on another.

To remedy ſuch inconveniences, immediately after the Reſtoration [z], a ſtatute was made, by which if any poor man, likely to be chargeable, came to inhabit in a foreign pariſh, unleſs in a tenement of 10*l.* a year, the overſeers might complain to one juſtice within forty days, and then two juſtices were

[z] 13 and 14 Car. II. c. xii.

to remove the poor perſon to the place of his laſt legal ſettlement.

By a ſecond act [a], the forty days are to be reckoned after notice given in writing to the church-warden or overſeer by the poor perſon, containing the place of his abode, number of his family, &c.

But by the ſame ſtatute, the executing of a public annual office during a year, or being charged with, and paying to, the public taxes, &c. or (if unmarried and not having a child), being lawfully hired into any pariſh, and ſerving for one year, or being bound apprentice by indenture, and inhabiting, &c. are all made good ſettlements without notice.

By a third ſtatute [b], perſons bringing a certificate ſigned by the overſeers, &c. and allowed by two juſtices, cannot be removed till they become chargeable.

By a fourth [c], no ſuch certificate perſon ſhall gain a ſettlement by any other act than by, *bona fide*, taking a leaſe of a tenement of 10*l.* *per annum*, or by executing an annual office.

By a fifth [d], no apprentice or hired ſervant of certificate perſon ſhall, by ſuch ſervice or apprenticeſhip, gain any ſettlement.

By a ſixth [e], no perſon, by any purchaſe, of which the conſideration doth not *bona fide* amount to 30*l.* ſhall gain any ſettlement longer than while he dwells on ſuch purchaſe.

So much for theſe laws of removal, concerning which there are ſeveral other acts of parliament and law caſes innumerable.

And yet the law itſelf is, as I have ſaid, very imperfectly executed at this day, and that for ſeveral reaſons.

1. It is attended with great trouble: for as the act of Ch. II. *very wiſely* requires two juſtices, and the Court of King's Bench requires them both to be preſent together (though they ſeldom are ſo) the order of removal is ſometimes difficult to be obtained, and

[a] 3 and 4 W. and M. c. xi. See 1 Jac. II. c. xvii.
[b] 8 and 9 W. III. c. xxx. [c] 9 and 10 W. III. c. xi.
[d] 12 Anne, c. xviii. [e] Geo. I. c. vii.

me

more difficult to be executed; for the pariſh to which the party is to be removed (perhaps with a family) is often in a diſtant county; nay, ſometimes they are to be carried from one end of the kingdom to another.

2. It is often attended with great expence, as well for the reaſon aforeſaid, as becauſe the pariſh removing is liable to an appeal from the pariſh to which the poor is removed. This appeal is ſometimes brought by a wealthy and litigious pariſh againſt a poor one, without any colour of right whatever.

3. The removal is often ineffectual: for as the appeal is almoſt certain to be brought, if an attorney lives in the neighbourhood; ſo is it almoſt as ſure to ſucceed, if a juſtice lives in the pariſh. And as for relief in the King's Bench, if the juſtices of peace will allow you to go thither (for that they will not always do) the delay, as well as the coſt, is ſuch, that the remedy is often worſe than the diſeaſe.

For theſe reaſons, it can be no wonder that pariſhes are not very forward to put this law in execution. Indeed, in all caſes of removal, the good of the pariſh, and not of the public, is conſulted; nay, ſometimes the good of an individual only: and, therefore the poor man, who is capable of getting his livelihood by his dexterity at any handicraft, and likely to do it by his induſtry, is ſure to be removed with his family; eſpecially if the overſeer, or any of his relations, ſhould be of the ſame occupation; but the idle poor, who threaten to rival no man in his buſineſs, are never taken any notice of, till they become actually chargeable; and if, by begging or robbing, they avoid this, as it is no man's intereſt, ſo no man thinks it his duty to apprehend them.

It cannot therefore be expected, that any good of the kind I am contending for, ſhould be effected by this branch of the law; let us therefore, in the ſecond place, take a view of that which is expreſly levelled at vagrants, and calculated, as it appears, for the very purpoſe of ſuppreſſing wanderers.

To *ſurvey* this branch will be eaſy, as all the laws *concerning* vagrants are now reduced into one act of parlia

parliament; and it is the eaſier ſtill, as this act is very clearly penned, and (which is not always the caſe) reduced to a regular and intelligible method.

By this act, then, three degrees of offences are conſtituted:

Firſt, Perſons become idle and diſorderly within the act, by, 1. Threatning to run away and to leave their wives or children to the parith. 2. Unlawfully returning to the place from whence they have been legally removed by the order of two juſtices, without bringing a certificate, &c. 3. Living idle without employment, and refuſing to work for uſual and common wages. 4. By begging in their own pariſhes.

Secondly, Perſons by, 1. Going about as patent-gatherers, or gatherers of alms under pretence of loſs by fire, or other caſualty; or, 2. Going about as collectors for priſons, gaols, or hoſpitals. 3. Being fencers and bearwards. 4. Or common players of interludes, &c. 5. Or minſtrels, jugglers. 6. Pretending to be gypſies, or wandering in ſuch habit. 7. Pretending to phyſiognomy, or like crafty ſcience, &c. 8. Uſing any ſubtle craft to deceive and impoſe on any of his majeſty's ſubjects. 9. Playing or ſitting at unlawful games. 10. Running away, and leaving wives or children, whereby they become chargeable to any pariſh. 11. Wandering abroad as petty chapmen or pedlars, not authoriſed by law. 12. Wandering abroad and lodging in ale-houſes, barns, out-houſes, or in the open air, not giving a good account of themſelves. 13. Wandering abroad and begging, pretending to be ſoldiers, mariners, ſeafaring men, or pretending to go to work at harveſt. 14. Wandering abroad and begging, are to be deemed rogues and vagabonds.

Thirdly, 1. End-gatherers offending againſt the 13 George I. entitled, *An act for the better regulation of the woollen manufactures*, &c. being convicted of ſuch offence; 2. Perſons apprehended as rogues and vagabonds eſcaping, or, 3. refuſing to go before a juſtice, or, 4. refuſing to be examined on oath, or, 5. refuſing to be conveyed by a paſs, or, 6. on examinati

amination giving a false account of themselves after warning of the punishment. 7. Rogues and vagabonds escaping out of the house of correction; &c. or, 8, those who having been punished as rogues and vagabonds, shall offend again as such, are made incorrigible rogues.

Now as to the *first* of these three divisions, it were to be wished, that persons who are found in ale-houses, night-houses, &c. after a certain hour at night, had been included; for many such, though of very suspicious characters, taken up at privy searches, fall not under any of the above descriptions. Some of these I have known discharged, against whom capital complaints have appeared, when it hath been too late. Why might not the justice be entrusted with a power of detaining any suspicious person, who could produce no known house-keeper, or one of credit, to his character, for three days, within which time he might, by means of an advertisement, be viewed by numbers who have been lately robbed? some such have been, I know, confined upon an old statute as persons of evil fame, with great emolument to the public.

But I come to the *second* head, namely, of vagabonds: and here I must observe, that *wandering* is of itself made no offence: so that unless such wanderer be either a petty chapman, or a beggar, or lodger in ale-houses, &c. he is not within the act of parliament.

Now, however useful this excellent law may be in the country, it will by no means serve the purpose in this town: for though most of the rogues who infest the public roads and streets, indeed almost all the thieves in general, are vagabonds in the true sense of the word, being wanderers from their lawful place of abode, very few of them will be proved vagabonds within the words of this act of parliament. These vagabonds do, indeed, get their livelihood by thieving, and not as petty beggars or petty chapmen; and have their lodging not in ale-houses, &c. but in private houses, where many of them resort together

together, and unite in gangs, paying each 2*d.* for night for their beds.

The following account I have had from Mr. Welch, the high conſtable of Holborn; and none who know that gentleman, will want any confirmation of the truth of it.

'That in the pariſh of St. Giles's there are great 'numbers of houſes ſet apart for the reception of 'idle perſons and vagabonds, who have their lodgings 'there for two-pence a night: that in the above 'pariſh, and in St. George, Bloomſbury, one wo- 'man alone occupies ſeven of theſe houſes, all pro- 'perly accommodated with miſerable beds from the 'cellar to the garret, for ſuch two-penny lodgers: 'that in theſe beds, ſeveral of which are in the ſame 'room, men and women, often ſtrangers to each 'other, lie promiſcuouſly, the price of a double bed 'being no more than three-pence, as an encourage- 'ment to them to lie together: that as theſe places 'are thus adapted to whoredom, ſo are they no leſs 'provided for drunkenneſs, gin being ſold in them 'all at a penny a quartern; ſo that the ſmalleſt ſum 'of money ſerves for intoxication: that in the exe- 'cution of ſearch-warrants, Mr. Welch rarely finds 'leſs than twenty of theſe houſes open for the receipt 'of all comers at the lateſt hours: that in one of 'theſe houſes, and that not a large one, he hath 'numbered fifty-eight perſons of both ſexes, the 'ſtench of whom was ſo intolerable, that it com- 'pelled him in a very ſhort time to quit the place.' Nay, I can add, what I myſelf once ſaw in the pariſh of Shore-ditch, where two little houſes were emptied of near ſeventy men and women; amongſt whom was one of the prettieſt girls I had ever ſeen, who had been carried off by an Iriſhman, to conſummate her marriage on her wedding-night, in a room where ſeveral others were in bed at the ſame time.

If one conſiders the deſtruction of all morality, decency and modeſty; the ſwearing, whoredom, and drunkenneſs, which is eternally carrying on in theſe houſes, on the one hand, and the exceſſive poverty and miſery of moſt of the inhabitants on the other

it ſeems doubtful whether they are more the objects of deteſtation, or compaſſion: for ſuch is the poverty of theſe wretches, that, upon ſearching all the above number, the money found upon all of them (except the bride, who, as I afterwards heard, had robbed her miſtreſs) did not amount to one ſhilling; and I have been credibly informed, that a ſingle loaf hath ſupplied a whole family with their proviſions for a week. Laſtly, if any of theſe miſerable creatures fall ſick (and it is almoſt a miracle, that ſtench, vermin, and want ſhould ever ſuffer them to be well) they are turned out in the ſtreets by their mercileſs hoſt or hoſteſs, where, unleſs ſome pariſh officer of extraordinary charity relieves them, they are ſure miſerably to periſh, with the addition of hunger and cold to their diſeaſe.

This picture, which is taken from the life, will appear ſtrange to many; for the evil here deſcribed, is, I am confident, very little known, eſpecially to thoſe of the better ſort. Indeed this is the only excuſe, and I believe the only reaſon, that it hath been ſo long tolerated: for when we conſider the number of theſe wretches, which, in the out-ſkirts of the town, amounts to a great many thouſands [*f*], it is a nuiſance, which will appear to be big with every moral and political miſchief. Of theſe, the exceſſive miſery of the wretches themſelves, oppreſſed with want, and ſunk in every ſpecies of debauchery, and the loſs of ſo many lives to the public, are obvious and immediate conſequences. There are ſome more remote, which, however, need not be mentioned to the diſcerning.

Among other miſchiefs attending this wretched nuiſance, the great increaſe of thieves muſt neceſſarily be one. The wonder in fact is, that we have not a thouſand more robbers than we have; indeed, that all theſe wretches are not thieves, muſt give us

[*f*] Moſt of theſe are Iriſh, againſt the importation of whom a ſevere law was made in the reign of Hen. VI. and many of the repealed vagrant acts contained a clauſe for the ſame purpoſe.

either

either a very high idea of their honeſty, or a very mean one of their capacity and courage.

Where then is the redreſs? is it not *to hinder the poor from wandering*, and this by compelling the pariſh and peace officers to apprehend ſuch wanderers or vagabonds, and by empowering the magiſtrate effectually to puniſh and ſend them to their habitations? Thus, if we cannot diſcover, or will not encourage, any cure for idleneſs, we ſhall at leaſt compel the poor to ſtarve or beg at home: for there it will be impoſſible for them to ſteal or rob, without being preſently hanged or tranſported out of the way.

SECT. VII.

Of apprehending the perſons of felons.

I COME now to a third encouragement which the thief flatters himſelf with, viz. in his hopes of eſcaping from being apprehended.

Nor is this hope without foundation: how long have we known highwaymen reign in this kingdom after they have been publicly known for ſuch? have not ſome of theſe committed robberies in open daylight, in the ſight of many people, and have afterward rode ſolemnly and triumphantly through the neighbouring towns, without any danger or moleſtation? this happens to every rogue who is become eminent for his audaciouſneſs, and is thought to be deſperate; and is, in a more particular manner, the caſe of great and numerous gangs, many of which have, for a long time, committed the moſt open outrages in defiance of the law. Officers of juſtice have owned to me, that they have paſſed by ſuch, with warrants in their pockets againſt them, without daring to apprehend them; and, indeed, they could not be blamed for not expoſing themſelves to ſure deſtruction: for it is a melancholy truth, that, at this very day, a rogue no ſooner gives the alarm, within certain purlieus, than twenty or thirty armed villains are found ready to come to his aſſiſtance.

On

On this head the law may ſeem not to have been very defective in its cautions; *firſt*, by veſting not only the officers of juſtice, but every private man, with authority for ſecuring theſe miſcreants, of which authority it may be of ſervice to the officers, as well as to the public in general, to be more particularly informed.

Firſt, By [*g*] Weſtminſter I. Perſons of evil fame are to be impriſoned without bail. By the ſtatute of Wincheſter [*h*], ſuſpicious night-walkers are to be arreſted and detained by the watch. A ſtatute made in [*i*] 5 Ed. III. reciting that many manſlaughters, felonies, and robberies had been done in times paſt, enacts, that if any perſon have an evil ſuſpicion of ſuch offenders, they ſhall be incontinently arreſted by the conſtable, and ſhall be delivered to the bailiff of the franchiſe, or to the ſheriff, to be kept in priſon till the coming of the juſtices. The 34 [*k*] Edw. III. gives power to the juſtices of peace, *inter alia*, to enquire of wanderers, and ſuch as will not labour, and to arreſt and impriſon ſuſpicious perſons, and to take ſureties of the good behaviour of perſons of evil fame, 'To the intent,' ſays the ſtatute, 'that the 'people be not by ſuch rioters, &c. troubled nor 'endamaged, nor the peace blemiſhed, nor mer-'chants nor others paſſing by the highways of the 'realm diſturbed, nor put in peril by ſuch offenders.'

Secondly, By the common law, every perſon who hath committed a felony may be arreſted and ſecured by any private man preſent at the ſaid fact, though he hath no general nor particular authority, *i. e.* though he be no officer of juſtice, nor have any writ or warrant for ſo doing; and ſuch private man may either deliver the felon to the conſtable, ſecure him in a gaol, or carry him before a magiſtrate [*l*]. And if he refuſes to yield, thoſe who arreſt may juſtify beating [*m*] him; or, in caſe of abſolute neceſſity, killing him [*n*].

[*g*] Weſtm. I. chap. xv. [*h*] Winton. chap. iv.
[*i*] 5 Edw. III. chap. xiv. [*k*] 34 Edw. III. c. 1.
[*l*] Hale's hiſt. P. C. vol. I. p. 587. vol. II. 77. [*m*] Pulc. 10. a.
[*n*] Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 588.

Nor is this arreſt merely allowed; it is enjoyned by law, and the omiſſion without ſome good excuſe is a miſdemeanor puniſhable by amercement, or fine and impriſonment [o].

Again, Every private man may arreſt another on ſuſpicion of felony, though he was not preſent at the fact [p]. But then if the party arreſted ſhould prove innocent, two circumſtances are neceſſary to juſtify the arreſt. *1ſt*, A felony muſt be actually committed; and *2dly*, there muſt be a reaſonable cauſe of ſuſpicion [q]; and common fame hath been adjudged to be ſuch cauſe [r].

But in this latter caſe my lord Hale adviſes the private perſon, if poſſible, to have recourſe to the magiſtrate, and obtain his warrant and the aſſiſtance of the [s] conſtable; for this arreſt is not required by law, nor is the party puniſhable for neglecting it; and ſhould the perſon arreſted, or endeavoured to be arreſted, prove innocent, the party arreſting him, &c. will, in a great meaſure, be anſwerable for the ill conſequence; which if it be the death of the innocent perſon occaſioned by force or reſiſtance, this will, at leaſt, be manſlaughter; and if the other ſhould be killed in the attempt, this likewiſe will amount to manſlaughter only [t].

Again, any private perſon may juſtify arreſting a felon purſued by hue and cry. This, as the word imports, is a public alarm raiſed all over the country, in which the conſtable is firſt to ſearch his own vill or diviſion, and then to raiſe all the neighbouring vills about, who are to purſue the felon with horſe and [u] foot. And this hue and cry may either be after a perſon certain, or on a robbery committed where the perſon is not known; and in the latter caſe, thoſe who purſue it may take ſuch perſons

[o] Hale, vol. I. 588. vol. II. 76, 77. [p] Lamb. l. ii. c. 3. Dalt. 403. Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 588. 3 Hen. VII. c. i.
[q] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 80. [r] Dalt. 407. 5 H. VII. 4. 5. [s] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 76. [t] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 82--3--4. [u] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 101.

as they have probable cauſe to ſuſpect [*w*], vagrants, &c.

This method of purſuit lies at the common law, and is mentioned by Bracton [*x*]; and it is enforced by many ſtatutes, as by [*y*] Weſtm. I. 'All are to be ready at the ſummons of the ſheriff, and at the cry of the county, to arreſt felons as well within franchiſes as without.' By 4 Edw. I. 'Hue and cry is ordered to be levied for all murders, burglaries, men ſlain, or in peril to be ſlain, and all are to follow it.' And laſtly, the ſtatute of Winton enacts as we have ſeen before.

And this purſuit may be raiſed, 1. By a private perſon. 2. By the country without an officer. 3. By an officer without a warrant. 4. By the warrant of a magiſtrate. And this laſt, if it can be obtained, is the ſafeſt way: for then all who aſſiſt are enabled by the ſtatutes 7 and 21 Jac. to plead the general iſſue [*z*]. The common law ſo ſtrictly enjoined this purſuit, that, if any defect in raiſing it lay in the lord of the franchiſe, the franchiſe ſhould be ſeized into the king's hands; and, if the neglect lay in the bailiff, he ſhould have a heavy fine, and a year's impriſonment, or ſuffer two years impriſonment without a fine [*a*]. And now, by a very late [*b*] ſtatute, 'If any conſtable, headborough, &c. of the hundred where any robberies ſhall happen, ſhall refuſe or *neglect* to make hue and cry after the felons with the utmoſt expedition, as ſoon as he ſhall receive notice thereof, he ſhall, for every ſuch refuſal and neglect, forfeit, 5*l*. half to the king and half to the informer.'

Now hue and cry is of three different kinds: 1. Againſt a perſon certain by name. 2. Againſt a perſon certain by deſcription. 3. On a robbery, burglary, &c. where the perſon is neither known, nor capable of being deſcribed.

When a hue and cry is raiſed, every private man is not only juſtified in purſuing; but may be obliged,

[*w*] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 103. [*x*] Lib. iii. c. 3.
[*y*] *Cap. ix.* [*z*] Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 465, vol. II. 99, 100.
[*a*] *Fleta, l. i. c.* 24. ad init. [*b*] 8 Geo. II. c. 16.

by command of the conſtable, to purſue the felon, and is puniſhable, if he diſobey, by fine and impriſonment [c]. And in this caſe, whether a felony was committed or not, or whether the perſon arreſted (provided he be the perſon named or deſcribed by the hue and cry) be guilty or innocent, or of evil or good fame, the arreſt is lawful and juſtifiable, and he who raiſed the hue and cry is alone to anſwer for the juſtice of it [d].

In this purſuit, likewiſe, the conſtable may ſearch ſuſpected houſes, if the doors be open; but breaking the door will not be juſtifiable, unleſs the felon be actually in the houſe; nor even then unleſs admittance hath been firſt demanded and denied [e]. And what the conſtable may do himſelf will be juſtifiable by any other in his aſſiſtance; at leaſt, by his command [f]. Indeed a private perſon may juſtify the arreſt of an offender by the command of a peace officer; for he is bound to be aiding and aſſiſting to ſuch officer, is puniſhable for his refuſal, and is conſequently under the protection of the law [g].

Laſtly, a private perſon may arreſt a felon by virtue of a warrant directed to him: for though he is not bound to execute ſuch warrant, yet if he doth, it is good and juſtifiable [h].

Thirdly, Officers of public juſtice may juſtify the arreſt of a felon by virtue of their office, without any warrant. Whatever therefore a private perſon may do as above, will certainly be juſtifiable in them.

And as the arreſting of felons, &c. is more particularly their duty, and their fine will be heavier for the neglect, ſo will their protection by the law be the greater: for if, in arreſting thoſe that are *probably ſuſpected*, the conſtable ſhould be killed, it is murder; on the other hand, if perſons purſued by theſe officers for felony, or *juſtifiable ſuſpicion thereof*, ſhall reſiſt or fly from them; or being apprehended, ſhall reſcue

[c] Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 588. vol. II. 102. 35 Hen. IV. Pl. 24. Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 101—2, 102, 103. [d] 29 Ed. III. 39. [e] Ib. [f] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 104. [g] Poph. 61. Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 86. [h] Dalt. 408. Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 86.

themſe

themſelves, reſiſt or fly; ſo that they cannot *otherwiſe* be apprehended or re-apprehended, and are *of neceſſity* ſlain, it is no felony in the officers, or in their aſſiſtants, though poſſibly the parties killed are innocent; for, by reſiſting the king's authority in his officers, they draw their own blood on themſelves [*i*].

Again, To take a felon or ſuſpected felon, the conſtable without any warrant may break open the door. But to juſtify this, he muſt ſhew; 1. That the felon, &c. was in the houſe. 2. That his entry was denied. 3. That it was denied after demand and notice that he was conſtable [*k*].

Laſtly, A felon may be apprehended by virtue of a warrant iſſuing from a magiſtrate lawfully authorized; in the execution of which the officer hath the ſame power, and will, at leaſt, have the ſame protection by law as in the arreſt *virtute officii*. And this warrant, if it be ſpecially directed to him, the conſtable may execute in any part within the juriſdiction of the magiſtrate; but he is only obliged to execute it within the diviſion for which he is conſtable, &c.

In the execution of a warrant for felony, the officer may break open the doors of the felon or of any perſon where he is concealed; and the breaking the doors of the felon is lawful at all events, but in breaking thoſe of a ſtranger the officer acts at his peril: for he will be a treſpaſſer if the felon ſhould not be there [*l*].

Such are the powers which the law gives for the apprehending felons (for as to the particular power of ſheriffs and coroners, and the proceſs of ſuperior courts, they may well be paſſed by in this place). Again, theſe powers we ſee are enforced with penalties; ſo that not only every officer of juſtice, but every private perſon, is obliged to arreſt a known felon, and may be puniſhed for the omiſſion.

Nor doth the law ſtop here. The apprehending ſuch felons is not only authorized and enjoined, but even encouraged, with impunity to perſons guilty themſelves of felony, and with regard to others.

[*i*] Dalt. 409. 13 Ed. IV. 4, & 9. 5 to 32. Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 86. 90, 91. [*k*] Ib. vol. I. 581. vol. II. 110.
[*l*] *Hale's hiſt.* vol. I. 582. vol. II. 117. 5 Co. 91 b.

By 3 and 4 of [*m*] William and Mary, Perſons guilty of robbery in the highway, fields, &c. who, being out of priſon, ſhall diſcover any two offenders to be convicted of ſuch robbery, are entitled to his majeſty's pardon of ſuch robberies, &c. as they ſhall have then committed.

By 10 and 11 of [*n*] William III. this is extended to burglary, and ſuch felonies as are mentioned in the act.

By the ſame act, all perſons who ſhall apprehend a felon for privately ſtealing goods to the value of 5*s.* out of ſhop, warehouſe, coach-houſe, or ſtable, by night or by day (provided the felon be convicted thereof) ſhall be entitled to a certificate, which may be aſſigned once, diſcharging ſuch apprehender or his aſſignee from all parochial offices in the pariſh or ward where ſuch felony was committed. This certificate is to be enrolled by the clerk of the peace, and cannot be aſſigned after it hath been uſed.

If any man be killed by ſuch houſe-breaker, &c. in the attempt to apprehend him, his executors or adminiſtrators ſhall be entitled to ſuch certificate.

By the 3 and 4 of [*o*] W. and M. whoever ſhall apprehend and proſecute to conviction any robber on the highway, ſhall receive of the ſheriff 40*l.* within a month after the conviction for every offender; and in caſe of the death or removal of the ſheriff, the money to be paid by the ſucceeding ſheriff within a month after the demand and certificate brought. The ſheriff on default forfeits double the ſum, to be recovered of him by the party, his executors, &c.

And if the perſon be killed in this attempt by any ſuch robber, the executors of ſuch perſon, &c. are entitled to the reward, under the like penalty.

Again, By the ſame act the horſe, furniture, arms, money, or other goods, taken with ſuch highwaymen, are given to the apprehender who ſhall proſecute to conviction, notwithſtanding the right or title of his majeſty, any body politic or lord of franchiſe, or of

[*m*] Chap. viii. [*n*] Chap. xxiii. [*o*] Chap. viii. *ubi ſupra.*

thoſe who lent or let the ſame to hire to ſuch robber, with a ſaving only of the right of ſuch perſons from whom ſuch horſes, &c. were feloniouſly taken.

By a ſtatute of queen Anne, the 40*l.* reward is extended to burglary and houſebreaking.

But though the law ſeems to have been ſufficiently provident on this head; there is ſtill great difficulty in carrying its purpoſe into execution, ariſing from the following cauſes:

Firſt, With regard to private perſons, there is no country, I believe, in the world, where that vulgar maxim ſo generally prevails, that what is the buſineſs of every man is the buſineſs of no man; and for this plain reaſon, that there is no country in which leſs honour is gained by ſerving the public. He therefore who commits no crime againſt the public, is very well ſatisfied with his own virtue; far from thinking himſelf obliged to undergo any labour, expend any money, or encounter any danger, on ſuch account.

2dly, The people are not entirely without excuſe from their ignorance of the law: for ſo far is the power of apprehending felons, which I have above ſet forth, from being univerſally known, that many of the peace officers themſelves do not know that they have any ſuch power, and often, from ignorance, refuſe to arreſt a known felon 'till they are authorized by a warrant from a juſtice of peace. Much leſs then can the compulſory part to the private perſons carry any terror of a penalty of which the generalty of mankind are totally ignorant; and of inflicting which they ſee no example.

Thirdly, So far are men from being animated with the hopes of public praiſe to apprehend a felon, that they are even diſcouraged by the fear of ſhame. The perſon of the informer is in fact more odious than that of the felon himſelf; and the thief-catcher is in danger of worſe treatment from the populace than the thief.

Laſtly, As to the reward, I am afraid that the intention of the legiſlature is very little anſwered. For not to mention that the proſecutor's title to it is too often defeated by the fooliſh lenity of juries, who, by

acquitting the priſoner of the burglary and finding him guilty of the ſimple felony only, or by finding the goods to be leſs than the value of 5s. both often directly contrary to evidence, take the caſe entirely out of the act of parliament; and ſometimes even when the felon is properly convicted, I have been told, that the money does not come ſo eaſily and fully to the pockets of thoſe who are entitled to it as it ought.

With regard to the firſt and fourth of theſe objections, I chuſe to be ſilent: to preſcribe any cure for the former, I muſt enter into diſquiſitions very foreign to my preſent purpoſe; and for the cure of the latter, when I conſider in whoſe power it is to remedy it, a bare hint will, I doubt not, ſuffice.

The ſecond objection, namely, the excuſe of ignorance, I have here endeavoured to remove, by ſetting forth the law at large.

The third therefore only remains, and to that I ſhall ſpeak more fully, as the opinion on which it is founded is of the moſt pernicious conſequence to the ſociety; for what avail the beſt of laws, if it be a matter of infamy to contribute towards their execution? The force of this opinion may be ſeen in the following inſtance: We have a law by which every perſon who drives more than ſix horſes in a waggon forfeits as many horſes as are found to exceed that number. This law is broken every day, and generally with impunity: for though many men yearly venture and loſe their lives by ſtealing horſes, yet there are very few who dare ſeize a horſe, where the law allows and encourages it, when by ſuch ſeizure he is to acquire the name of an informer: ſo much worſe is this appellation in the opinion of the vulgar than that of thief; and ſo much more prevalent is the fear of popular ſhame than of death.

This abſurd opinion ſeems to have firſt ariſen from the ſtatute of 18 [p] Eliz. entitled, *An act to redreſs diſorders in common informers.* By this ſtatute it appears, that very wicked uſes had been made of penal

[p] Chap. v.

ſtatu

ſtatutes by theſe informers, whom my lord Coke calls [q] *turbidum hominum genus*; and ſays, 'That they 'converted many penal laws, which were obſolete, 'and in time grown impoſſible or inconvenient to be 'performed, into ſnares to vex and intangle the ſub-'ject.'

By the ſtatute itſelf it appears, that it was uſual at that time among theſe perſons to extort money of ignorant and fearful people by the terror of ſome penal law; for the breach of which the informer either inſtituted a proceſs, or pretended to inſtitute a proceſs, and then brought the timorous party to a compoſition.

This offence therefore was by this act made a high miſdemeanor, and puniſhed with the pillory.

Now who that knows any thing of the nature or hiſtory of mankind, doth not eaſily perceive here a ſufficient foundation for that odium to all informers which hath ſince become ſo general: for what is more common than from the abuſe of any thing to argue againſt the uſe of it, or to extend obloquy from particulars to univerſals?

For this the common aptitude of men to ſcandal will ſufficiently account; but there is ſtill another and ſtronger motive in this caſe, and that is the intereſt of all thoſe who have broken or who intend to break the laws. Thus, the general cry being once raiſed againſt proſecutors on penal laws, the thieves themſelves have had the art and impudence to join it, and have put their proſecutors on the footing of all others: nay, I much queſtion whether, in the acceptation of the vulgar, a thief-catcher be not a more odious and contemptible name than even that of informer.

Nothing, I am ſenſible, is more vain than to encounter popular opinion with reaſon; nor more liable to ridicule than to oppoſe general contempt; and yet I will venture to ſay, that if to do good to ſociety be laudable, ſo is the office of a thief-catcher; and if to do this good at the extreme hazard of your life be honourable, then is this office honourable. True, it may be

[q] 3 Inſt. c. lxxxvii.

ſaid: but he doth this with a view to a reward. And doth not the ſoldier and the ſailor venture his life with the ſame view? for, who, as a great man lately ſaid, ſerves the public for nothing?

I know what is to be my fate in this place, or what would happen to one who ſhould endeavour to prove that the hangman was a great and an honourable employment. And yet I have read in Tournefort, of an iſland in the Archipelago, where the hangman is the firſt and higheſt officer in the ſtate. Nay, in this kingdom, the ſheriff himſelf (who was one of the moſt conſiderable perſons in his county) is in law the hangman, and Mr. Ketch is only his deputy.

If to bring thieves to juſtice be a ſcandalous office, what becomes of all thoſe who are concerned in this buſineſs, ſome of whom are rightly thought to be among the moſt honourable officers in government? if on the contrary this be, as it ſurely is, very truly honourable, why ſhould the poſt of danger in this warfare alone be excluded from all ſhare of honour?

To conclude a matter, in which, though ſerious, I will not be too tedious: what was the great Pompey in the piratic war [r]? what were Hercules, Theſeus, and other the heroes of old, *Deorum in templa recepti*— Were they not the moſt eminent of thief-catchers?

SECT. VII.

Of the difficulties which attend proſecutions.

I NOW come to a fourth encouragement which greatly holds up the ſpirits of robbers, and which they often find to afford no deceitful conſolation; and this is drawn from the remiſſneſs of proſecutors, who are often,

1. Fearful, and to be intimidated by the threats of the gang; or,

2. Delicate, and cannot appear in a public court; or,

[r] Cicero in his Oration pro Lege Manilia calls this, if I remember rightly, *Bellum Turpe*; but ſpeaks of the extirpation of theſe robbers as of the greateſt of all Pompey's exploits.

3. Indol-

3. Indolent, and will not give themſelves the trouble of a proſecution; or,

4. Avaricious, and will not undergo the expence of it; nay, perhaps find their account in compounding the matter; or,

5. Tender-hearted, and cannot take away the life of a man; or,

Laſtly, neceſſitous, and cannot really afford the coſt, however ſmall, together with the loſs of time which attends it.

The firſt and ſecond of theſe are too abſurd, and the third and fourth too infamous to be reaſoned with. But the two laſt deſerve more particular notice, as the fifth is an error ſpringing originally out of a good principle in the mind, and the ſixth is a fault in the conſtitution very eaſily to be remedied.

With regard to the former of theſe, it is certain, that a tender-hearted and compaſſionate diſpoſition, which inclines men to pity and feel the misfortunes of others, and which is, even for its own ſake, incapable of involving any man in ruin and miſery, is of all tempers of mind the moſt amiable; and though it ſeldom receives much honour, is worthy of the higheſt. The natural energies of this temper are indeed the very virtues principally inculcated in our excellent religion; and thoſe, who, becauſe they are natural, have denied them the name of virtues, ſeem not, I think, to be aware of a doctrine that denies all merit to a mind which is naturally, I may ſay neceſſarily, good.

Indeed the paſſion of love, or benevolence, whence this admirable diſpoſition ariſes, ſeems to be the only human paſſion that is in itſelf ſimply and abſolutely good; and in Plato's commonwealth or (which is more) in a ſociety acting up to the rules of *Chriſtianity*, no danger could ariſe from the higheſt exceſs of this virtue; nay, the more liberally it was indulged, and the more extenſively it was expanded, the more would it contribute to the honour of the individual, and to the happineſs of the whole.

But as it hath pleaſed God to permit human *ſocieties* to be conſtituted in a different manner, and *knaves* to form a part (a very conſiderable one, I am afraid

afraid) of every community, who are ever lying in wait to deſtroy and enſnare the honeſt part of mankind, and to betray them by means of their own goodneſs, it becomes the good-natured and tender-hearted man to be watchful over his own temper; to reſtrain the impetuoſity of his benevolence, carefully to ſelect the objects of this paſſion, and not by too unbounded and indiſcriminate an indulgence to give the reins to a courſer, which will infallibly carry him into the ambuſcade of the enemy.

Our Saviour himſelf inculcates this prudence among his diſciples, telling them, that he *ſent them forth like ſheep among wolves: be ye therefore*, ſays he, *wiſe as ſerpents, but innocent as doves.*

For want of this wiſdom, a benevolent and tender-hearted temper very often betrays men into errors not only hurtful to themſelves, but highly prejudicial to the ſociety. Hence men of invincible courage, and incorruptible integrity, have ſometimes falſified their truſt; and thoſe, whom no other temptation could ſway, have paid too little regard to the ſanction of an oath, from this inducement alone. Hence likewiſe the miſchief which I here endeavour to obviate hath often ariſen; and notorious robbers have lived to perpetrate future acts of violence, through the ill-judging tenderneſs and compaſſion of thoſe who could and ought to have proſecuted them.

To ſuch a perſon I would ſuggeſt theſe conſiderations:

Firſt, As he is a good man, he ſhould conſider, that the principal duty which every man owes, is to his country, for the ſafety and good of which all laws are eſtabliſhed; and therefore his country requires of him to contribute all that in him lies to the due execution of thoſe laws. Robbery is an offence not only againſt the party robbed, but againſt the public, who are therefore entitled to proſecution; and he who prevents or ſtifles ſuch the proſecution, is no longer an innocent man, but guilty of a high offence againſt the public good.

Secondly, As he is a good-natured man, he will behold all injuries done by one man to another with indignati

dignation. What Cicero ſays of a pirate, is as true of a robber, that he is *hoſtis humani generis*; and if ſo, I am ſure every good-natured man muſt be an enemy to him. To deſire to ſave theſe wolves in ſociety, may ariſe from benevolence; but it muſt be the benevolence of a child or a fool, who, from want of ſufficient reaſon, miſtakes the true objects of his paſſion, as a child doth when a bugbear appears to him to be the object of fear. Such tender-heartedneſs is indeed barbarity, and reſembles the meek ſpirit of him who would not aſſiſt in blowing up his neighbour's houſe, to ſave a whole city from the flames. 'It is true,' ſaid a late learned chief juſtice [*s*], in a trial for treaſon, 'here is the life of a man in the caſe, but 'then you (ſpeaking to the jury) muſt conſider likewiſe the miſery and deſolation, the blood and confuſion, that muſt have happened, had this taken effect; and put one againſt the other, I believe that 'conſideration which is on behalf of the king, will be 'much the ſtronger.' Here likewiſe is the life of a man concerned; but of what man? why, of one who being too lazy to get his bread by labour, or too voluptuous to content himſelf with the produce of that labour, declares war againſt the properties, and often againſt the perſons, of his fellow ſubjects; who deprives his countrymen of the pleaſure of travelling with ſafety, and of the liberty of carrying their money or their ordinary conveniences with them; by whom the innocent are put in terror, affronted and alarmed with threats and execrations, endangered with loaded piſtols, beat with bludgeons, and hacked with cutlaſſes, of which the loſs of health, of limbs, and often of life, is the conſequence; and all this without any reſpect to age, or dignity, or ſex. Let the good-natured man, who hath any underſtanding, place this picture before his eyes, and then ſee what figure in it will be the object of his compaſſion.

I come now to the laſt difficulty which obſtructs the proſecution of offenders; namely, the extreme poverty of the proſecutor. This I have known to be ſo ab-

[*s*] Lord chief juſtice Pratt.

ſolutely the caſe, that the poor wretch who hath been bound to proſecute, was under more concern than the priſoner himſelf. It is true, that the neceſſary coſt on theſe occaſions is extremely ſmall; two ſhillings, which are appointed by act of parliament for drawing the indictment, being, I think, the whole which the law requires; but when the expence of attendance, generally with ſeveral witneſſes, ſometimes during ſeveral days together, and often at a great diſtance from the proſecutor's home; I ſay, when theſe articles are ſummed up, and the loſs of time added to the account, the whole amounts to an expence which a very poor perſon, already plundered by the thief, muſt look on with ſuch horror (if he ſhould not be abſolutely incapable of the expence) that he muſt be a miracle of public ſpirit, if he doth not rather chooſe to conceal the felony, and ſit down ſatisfied with his preſent loſs; but what ſhall we ſay, when (as is very common in this town) he may not only receive his own again, but be farther rewarded, if he will agree to compound it?

Now how very inconſiderable would be the whole coſt of this ſuit either to the country or the nation; if the public, to whom the juſtice of peace gives his whole labour on this head *gratis*, was to defray the coſt of ſuch trials, by a kind of *forma pauperis* admiſſion. The ſum would be ſo trivial, that nothing would be felt but the good conſequences ariſing from ſuch a regulation.

I ſhall conclude this head with the words of my lord Hale: 'It is,' ſaid he, 'a great defect in the 'law, to give courts of juſtice no power to allow 'witneſſes againſt criminals their charges; whereby,' ſays he, 'many poor perſons grow weary of their at-'tendance, or bear their own charges therein, to 'their great hindrance and loſs.'

SECT

SECT. IX.

Of the TRYAL *and* CONVICTION *of* FELONS.

BUT if, notwithſtanding all the rubs which we have ſeen to lie in the way, the indictment is found, and the thief brought to his trial, ſtill he hath ſufficient hopes of eſcaping, either from the caution of the proſecutor's evidence, or from the hardineſs of his own.

In ſtreet robberies, the difficulty of convicting a criminal is extremely great. The method of diſcovering theſe is generally by means of one of the gang, who, being taken up, perhaps for ſome other offence, and thinking himſelf in danger of puniſhment, chooſes to make his peace at the expence of his companions.

But when, by means of his information, you are made acquainted with the whole gang, and have, with great trouble, and often with great danger, apprehended them, how are you to bring them to juſtice? for though the evidence of the accomplice be ever ſo poſitive and explicit, nay, ever ſo connected and probable, ſtill, unleſs it be corroborated by ſome other evidence, it is not ſufficient.

Now how is this corroborating evidence to be obtained in this caſe? Street robberies are generally committed in the dark, the perſons on whom they are committed are often in chairs and coaches, and if on foot, the attack is uſually begun by knocking the party down, and for the time depriving him of his ſenſes. But if the thief ſhould be leſs barbarous, he is ſeldom ſo incautious as to omit taking every method to prevent his being known, by flapping the party's hat over his face, and by every other method which he can invent to avoid diſcovery.

But indeed any ſuch methods are hardly neceſſary: for when we conſider the circumſtance of darkneſs, mentioned before, the extreme hurry of the action, and the terror and conſternation in which moſt perſons *are in at ſuch* a time, how ſhall we imagine it poſſible, *that they* ſhould afterwards be able, with any (the leaſt)

leaſt) degree of certainty, to ſwear to the identity of the thief, whoſe countenance is, perhaps, not a little altered by his ſubſequent ſituation, and who takes care, as much as poſſible he can, by every alteration of dreſs, and otherwiſe, to diſguiſe himſelf?

And if the evidence of the accomplice be ſo unlikely to be confirmed by the oath of the proſecutor, what other means of confirmation can be found? for as to his character, if he himſelf doth not call witneſſes to ſupport it (which in this inſtance is not incumbent on him to do), you are not at liberty to impeach it; the greateſt and moſt known villain in England, ſtanding at the bar equally *rectus in curia* with the man of the higheſt eſtimation, if they ſhould be both accuſed of the ſame crime.

Unleſs therefore the robbers ſhould be ſo unfortunate as to be apprehended in the fact (a circumſtance which their numbers, arms, &c. renders ordinarily impoſſible) no ſuch corroboration can poſſibly be had; but the evidence of the accomplice ſtanding alone and unſupported, the villain, contrary to the opinion and almoſt direct knowledge of all preſent, is triumphantly acquitted, laughs at the court, ſcorns the law, vows revenge againſt his proſecutors, and returns to his trade with a great increaſe of confidence, and commonly of cruelty.

In a matter therefore of ſo much concern to the public, I ſhall be forgiven, if I venture to offer my ſentiments.

The words of my lord Hale are theſe: 'Though a '*particeps criminis* be admiſſible as a witneſs in law, 'yet the credibility of his teſtimony is to be left to the 'jury; and truly it would be hard to take away the 'life of any perſon upon ſuch a witneſs that ſwears 'to ſave his own, and yet confeſſeth himſelf guilty of 'ſo great a crime, unleſs there be alſo very conſide-'rable circumſtances, which may give the greater cre-'dit to what he ſwears [*t*].'

Here I muſt obſerve, that this great man ſeems rather to complain of the hardſhip of the law, in taking

[*t*] Hale's hiſt. v. i. 305.

away the life of a criminal on the teſtimony of an accomplice, than to deny that the law was ſo. This indeed he could not well do; for not only the caſe of an approver, as he himſelf ſeems to acknowledge, but many later reſolutions, would have contradicted that opinion.

2dly, He allows that the credibility of his teſtimony is to be left to the jury: and ſo is the credibility of all other teſtimonies. They are abſolute judges of the fact; and God forbid that they ſhould in all caſes be tied down by poſitive evidence againſt a priſoner, though it was not delivered by an accomplice.

But ſurely, if the evidence of an accomplice be not ſufficient to put the priſoner on his defence, but the jury are directed to acquit him, though he can produce no evidence on his behalf, either to prove an *alibi*, or to his character, the credibility of ſuch teſtimony cannot well be ſaid to be left to a jury. This is virtually to reject the competency of the witneſs: for to ſay the law allows him to be ſworn, and yet gives no weight to his evidence is, I apprehend, a mere play of words, and conveys no idea.

In the third place, this great man aſſerts the hardſhip of ſuch conviction — Now if the evidence of a ſuppoſed accomplice ſhould convict a man of fair and honeſt character: it would, I confeſs, be hard; and it is a hardſhip of which, I believe, no experience can produce any inſtance. But if, on the other hand, the teſtimony of an accomplice with every circumſtance of probability attending it againſt a vagabond of the vileſt character, and who can produce no ſingle perſon to his reputation, is to be abſolutely rejected, becauſe there is no poſitive proof to ſupport it; this, I think, is in the higheſt degree hard (I think I have proved how hard) to the ſociety.

I ſhall not enter here into a diſquiſition concerning the nature of evidence in general; this being much too large a field; nor ſhall I examine the utility of thoſe rules which our law preſcribes on this head. Some of theſe rules might perhaps be opened a little *wider than they are, without either miſchief or inconvenience;* and I am the bolder in the aſſertion, as I know

know a very learned judge who concurs with this opinion. There is no branch of the law more bulky, more full of confuſion and contradiction, I had almoſt ſaid of abſurdity, than the law of evidence as it now ſtands.

One rule of this law is, that no man intereſted ſhall be ſworn as a witneſs. By this is meant pecuniary intereſt; but are mankind governed by no other paſſion than avarice? is not revenge the ſweeteſt morſel, as a divine calls it, which the devil ever dropped into the mouth of a ſinner? are not pride, hatred, and the other paſſions, as powerful tyrants in the mind of man; and is not the intereſt which theſe paſſions propoſe to themſelves by the enjoyment of their object, as prevalent a motive to evil as the hope of any pecuniary intereſt whatever?

But to keep more cloſely to the point—Why ſhall not any credit be given to the evidence of an accomplice?—My lord Hale tells us, that he hath been guilty of a great crime: and yet, if he had been convicted and burnt in the hand, all the authorities tell us, that his credit had been reſtored; a more miraculous power of fire than any which the *royal ſociety* can produce. The ſame happens, if he be pardoned.

Again, ſays lord Hale, he ſwears to ſave his own life. This is not altogether ſo: for when once a felon hath impeached his companions, and is admitted an evidence againſt them, whatever be the fate of his evidence, the impeacher always goes free. To this, it is true, he hath no poſitive title; no more hath he, if a ſingle felon be convicted on his oath. But the practice is as I mention, and I do not remember any inſtance to the contrary.

But what inducement hath the accomplice to perjure himſelf, or what reaſon can be aſſigned why he ſhould be ſuſpected of it? that he himſelf was one of the robbers, appears to a demonſtration; that he had accomplices in the robbery, is as certain. Why then ſhould he be induced to impeach A and B, who are innocent, and not C and D, who are guilty? muſt he not think that he hath a better chance of convicting the guilty than the innocent? is he not liable, if he gives a falſe information

information, to be detected in it? one of his companions may be discovered and give a true information, what will then become of him and his evidence? and why should he do this? from a motive of friendship? do the worst of men carry this passion so much higher than is common with the best? but he must not only run the risque of his life but of his soul too. The very mention of this latter risque may appear ridiculous, when it is considered of what sort of persons I am talking. But even these persons can scarce be thought so very void of understanding as to lose their souls for nothing, and to commit the horrid sins of perjury and murder without any temptation, or prospect of interest, nay, even against their interest. Such characters are not to be found in history, nor do they exist any where but in distempered brains, and are always rejected as monsters, when they are produced in works of fiction: for surely we spoil the verse rather than the sense by saying, *nemo* gratis *fuit turpissimus*. Under such circumstances, and under the caution of a good judge, and the tenderness of an English jury, it will be the highest improbability that any man should be wrongfully convicted; and utterly impossible to convict an honest man: for I intend no more than that such evidence shall put the prisoner on his defence, and oblige him either to controvert the fact by proving an *alibi*, or by some other circumstance; or to produce some reputable person to his character. And this brings me to consider the second fortress of the criminal in the hardiness of his own evidence.

The usual defence of a thief, especially at the Old Baily, is an *alibi* [*u*]: to prove this by perjury, is a common act of Newgate friendship; and there seldom is any difficulty in procuring such witnesses. I remember a felon within this twelvemonth to have been proved to be in Ireland at the time when the robbery was sworn to have been done in London, and acquitted; but he was scarce gone from the bar, when the witness was himself arrested for a robbery committed in London at that very time when he swore both he

[*u*] *i. e. That he was at another place at the time.*

and

and his friend were in Dublin: for which robbery, I think, he was tried and executed. This kind of defence was in a great measure defeated by the late baron Thompſon, when he was recorder of London, whoſe memory deſerves great honour for the ſervices he did the public in that poſt. Theſe witneſſes ſhould always be examined with the utmoſt care and ſtrictneſs, by which means the truth (eſpecially if there be more witneſſes than one to the pretended fact) will generally be found out. And as to character, though I allow it to have great weight, if oppoſed to the ſingle evidence of an accomplice, it ſhould ſurely have but little where there is good and ſtrong proof of the fact; and none at all, unleſs it comes from the mouths of perſons, who have themſelves ſome reputation and credit.

SECT. X.

Of the encouragement given to robbers by frequent pardons.

I COME now to the ſixth encouragement to felons, from the hopes of a pardon, at leaſt with the condition of tranſportation.

This I am aware, is too tender a ſubject to ſpeak to. To pardon all crimes where the proſecution is in his name, is an undoubted prerogative of the king. I may add, it is his moſt amiable prerogative, and that which, as Livy obſerves [w], renders kingly government moſt dear to the people, for in a republic there is no ſuch power. I may add farther, that it ſeems to our excellent ſovereign to be the moſt favourite part of his prerogative, as it is the only one which hath been carried to its utmoſt extent in the preſent reign.

Here, therefore, I beg to direct myſelf only to thoſe perſons who are within the reach of his majeſty's ſacred ear. Such perſons will, I hope, weigh well what I have ſaid already on the ſubject of falſe compaſſion, all which is applicable on the preſent occaſion: and ſince

[w] Dec. 1. l. ii. cap. 3. Eſſe Gratiæ locum eſſe Beneficii: et iraſci et ignoſcere poſſe (*Regem ſcilicet*) inter amicum atque inimicum Diſcrimen noſſe, Legem rem ſurdam inexorabilemque eſſe, &c.

our

our king (as was with less truth said of another [x]) *is of all men the truest image of his Maker in mercy*, I hope too much good-nature will transport no nobleman so far as it once did a clergyman in Scotland, who, in the fervour of his benevolence, prayed to God that he would graciously be pleased to pardon the poor devil.

To speak out fairly and honestly [y], though mercy may appear more amiable in a magistrate, severity is a more wholesome virtue; nay, severity to an individual may, perhaps, be in the end the greatest mercy, not only to the public in general, for the reason given above, but to many individuals, for the reasons to be presently assigned.

To consider a human being in the dread of a sudden and violent death; to consider that his life or death depend on your will; to reject the arguments which a good mind will officiously advance to itself; that violent temptations, necessity, youth, inadvertency, have hurried him to the commission of a crime which hath been attended with no inhumanity; to resist the importunities, cries, and tears of a tender wife, and affectionate children, who, though innocent, are to be reduced to misery and ruin by a strict adherence to justice. These all together form an object which, whoever can look upon without emotion, must have a very bad mind; and whoever by the force of reason can conquer that emotion, must have a very strong one.

And what can reason suggest on this occasion? first, that by saving this individual, I shall bring many others into the same dreadful situation. That the passions of the man are to give way to the principles of the magistrate. Those may lament the criminal, but these must condemn him. It was nobly said by Bias to one who admired at his shedding tears whilst he past sentence of death, 'Nature exacts my tenderness, but 'the law my rigour.' The elder Brutus [z] is a worthy pattern of this maxim; an example, says Machiavel, most worthy of being transmitted to posterity.

[x] By Dryden of Charles II. [y] Disc. l. iii. c. iii.

[z] He put his two sons to death for conspiring with Tarquin. Neither Livy nor Dionysius give any character of cruelty to Brutus; indeed the latter tells us, *that he was superior to all those passions which disturb human reason*. Τῶν ἐπιπαρατόντων τοὺς λογισμοὺς παθῶν κρατερός. And

And Dionyſius Halicarnaſſus [a] calls it a *great and wonderful action, of which the* Romans *were proud in the moſt extraordinary degree.* Whoever derives it therefore from the want of humane and paternal affections is unjuſt; no inſtances of his inhumanity are recorded. 'But the ſeverity,' ſays Machiavel, 'was not only profitable but neceſſary;' and why? becauſe a ſingle pardon granted *ex mera gratia & favore,* is a link broken in the chain of juſtice, and takes away the concatenation and ſtrength of the whole. The danger and certainty of deſtruction are very different objects, and ſtrike the mind with different degrees of force. It is of the very nature of hope to be ſanguine; and it will derive more encouragement from one pardon, than diffidence from twenty executions.

It is finely obſerved by Thucydides [b], 'That 'though civil ſocieties have allotted the puniſhment 'of death to many crimes, and to ſome of the inferior 'ſort, yet hope inſpires men to face the danger; and 'no man ever came to a dreadful end, who had not 'a lively expectation of ſurviving his wicked machi-'nations.'—Nothing certainly can more contribute to the raiſing this hope than repeated examples of ill-grounded clemency; for, as Seneca ſays, *ex clementia omnes idem ſperant* [c].

Now what is the principal end of all puniſhment? is it not, as lord [d] Hale expreſſes it, 'To deter men 'from the breach of laws, ſo that they may not of-'fend, and ſo not ſuffer at all? and is not the inflict-'ing of puniſhment more for example, and to pre-'vent evil, than to puniſh?' and therefore, ſays he, preſently afterwards, 'Death itſelf is neceſſary to be 'annexed to laws in many caſes by the prudence of 'law-givers, though poſſibly beyond the ſingle merit 'of the offence ſimply conſidered.' No man indeed of common humanity or common ſenſe can think the life of a man and a few ſhillings to be of an equal conſideration, or that the law in puniſhing theft with

[a] Page 272. Edit. Hudſon.
[b] P. 174. Edit. Hudſon.
[c] De Clementia, lib. i. c. i.
[d] Hale's hiſt. vol. i. p. 13.

deal

death proceeds (as perhaps a private perſon ſometimes may) with any view to vengeance. The terror of the example is the only thing propoſed, and one man is ſacrificed to the preſervation of thouſands.

If therefore the terror of this example is removed (as it certainly is by frequent pardons) the deſign of the law is rendered totally ineffectual; the lives of the perſons executed are thrown away, and ſacrificed rather to the vengeance than to the good of the public, who receives no other advantage than by getting rid of a thief, whoſe place will immediately be ſupplied by another. Here then we may cry out with the poet [*e*]:

— — — *Sævior Enſe*
Parcendi Rabies — — — —

This, I am confident, may be aſſerted, that pardons have brought many more men to the gallows than they have ſaved from it. So true is that ſentiment of Machiavel, that examples of juſtice are more merciful than the unbounded exerciſe of pity [*f*].

SECT. XI.

Of the manner of execution.

BUT if every hope which I have mentioned fails the thief: if he ſhould be diſcovered, apprehended, proſecuted, convicted, and refuſed a pardon; what is his ſituation then? ſurely moſt gloomy and dreadful, without any hope, and without any comfort. This is, perhaps, the caſe with the leſs practiſed, leſs ſpirited, and leſs dangerous rogues; but with thoſe of a different conſtitution it is far otherwiſe. No hero ſees death as the alternative which may attend his undertaking with leſs terror, nor meets it in the field with more imaginary glory. Pride, which is commonly the uppermoſt paſſion in both, is in both eated with equal ſatisfaction. The day appointed

[*e*] Claudian. [*f*] In his Prince.

by the law for the thief's ſhame is the day of glory in his own opinion. His proceſſion to Tyburn, and his laſt moments there, are all triumphant; attended with the compaſſion of the meek and tender-hearted, and with the applauſe, admiration, and envy of all the bold and hardened. His behaviour in his preſent condition, not the crimes, how atrocious ſoever, which brought him to it, are the ſubject of contemplation. And if he hath ſenſe enough to temper his boldneſs with any degree of decency, his death is ſpoke of by many with honour, by moſt with pity, and by all with approbation.

How far ſuch an example is from being an object of terror, eſpecially to thoſe for whoſe uſe it is principally intended, I leave to the conſideration of every rational man; whether ſuch examples as I have deſcribed are proper to be exhibited, muſt be ſubmitted to our ſuperiors.

The great cauſe of this evil is the frequency of executions: the knowledge of human nature will prove this from reaſon; and the different effects which executions produce in the minds of the ſpectators in the country where they are rare, and in London where they are common, will convince us by experience. The thief who is hanged to-day hath learnt his intrepidity from the example of his hanged predeceſſors, as others are now taught to deſpiſe death, and to bear it hereafter with boldneſs from what they ſee to-day.

One way of preventing the frequency of executions is by removing the evil I am complaining of: for this effect in time becomes a cauſe; and greatly encreaſes that very evil from which it firſt aroſe. The deſign of thoſe who firſt appointed executions to be public, was to add the puniſhment of ſhame to that of death; in order to make the example an object of greater terror. But experience hath ſhewn us that the event is directly contrary to this intention. Indeed, a competent knowledge of human nature might have foreſeen the conſequence. To unite the ideas of death and ſhame is not ſo eaſy as may be imagined, all ideas of the latter being abſorbed by the former. To prove this, I will appeal to any man who hath ſeen execu

execution, or a proceſſion to an execution; let him tell me when he hath beheld a poor wretch, bound in a cart, juſt on the verge of eternity, all pale and trembling with his approaching fate, whether the idea of ſhame hath ever intruded on his mind? much leſs will the bold daring rogue, who glories in his preſent condition, inſpire the beholder with any ſuch ſenſation.

The difficulty here will be eaſily explained, if we have recourſe to the poets (for the good poet and the good politician do not differ ſo much as ſome who know nothing of either art affirm; nor would Homer or Milton have made the worſt legiſlators of their times): the great buſineſs is to raiſe terror, and the poet will tell you, that admiration or pity, or both, are very apt to attend whatever is the object of terror in the human mind. This is very uſeful to the poet, but very hurtful on the preſent occaſion to the politician, whoſe art is to be here employed to raiſe an object of terror, and, at the ſame time, as much as poſſible, to ſtrip it of all pity and all admiration.

To effect this, it ſeems that the execution ſhould be as ſoon as poſſible after the commiſſion and conviction of the crime; for if this be of an atrocious kind, the reſentment of mankind being warm, would purſue the criminal to his laſt end, and all pity for the offender would be loſt in deteſtation of the offence. Whereas, when executions are delayed ſo long as they ſometimes are, the puniſhment and not the crime is conſidered; and no good mind can avoid compaſſionating a ſet of wretches, who are put to death we know not why, unleſs, as it almoſt appears, to make a holiday for, and to entertain, the mob.

Secondly, It ſhould be in ſome degree private. And here the poets will again aſſiſt us. Foreigners have found fault with the cruelty of the Engliſh drama, in repreſenting frequent murders upon the ſtage. In fact, this is not only cruel, but highly injudicious: a murder behind the ſcenes, if the poet knows how to manage it, will affect the audience with greater terror *than if it was acted* before their eyes. Of this we have *an inſtance* in the murder of the king in Macbeth, at *which*, when Garrick acts the part, it is ſcarce an hyperbole

hyperbole to ſay, I have ſeen the hair of the audi ſtand on end. Terror hath, I believe, been ca higher by this ſingle inſtance, than by all the b which hath been ſpilt on the ſtage.—To the po may add the prieſts, whoſe politics have never doubted. Thoſe of Egypt in particular, where ſacred myſteries were firſt deviſed, well knew the of hiding from the eyes of the vulgar what the tended ſhould inſpire them with the greateſt awe dread. The mind of man is ſo much more ca of magnifying than his eye, that I queſtion wh every object is not leſſened by being looked upon; this more eſpecially when the paſſions are concer for theſe are ever apt to fancy much more ſatisfa in thoſe objects which they affect, and much mo miſchief in thoſe which they abhor, than are real be found in either.

If executions therefore were ſo contrived, that could be preſent at them, they would be much ſhocking and terrible to the croud without doors at preſent, as well as much more dreadful to the minals themſelves, who would thus die in the ſence only of their enemies; and where the bolde them would find no cordial to keep up his ſpirits, any breath to flatter his ambition.

Lastly, The execution ſhould be in the higheſt de ſolemn. It is not the eſſence of the thing itſelf, the dreſs and apparatus of it, which make an imp ſion on the mind, eſpecially on the minds of the titude, to whom beauty in rags is never a deſirable, deformity in embroidery a diſagreeable, object.

Montaigne, who, of all men, except only Ar tle, ſeems beſt to have underſtood human nature, quiring into the cauſes why death appears more terr to the better ſort of people than to the meaner, preſſes himſelf thus: 'I do verily believe, that 'thoſe terrible ceremonies and preparations wh 'with we ſet it out, that more terrify us than 'thing itſelf; a new and contrary way of living, 'cries of mothers, wives, and children, the viſi 'aſtoniſhed and afflicted friends, the attendan 'pale and blubbered ſervants, a dark room ſe

'with burning tapers, our beds environed with phyſi-
'cians and divines, in fine, nothing but ghaſtlineſs
'and horror round about us, render it ſo formidable,
'that a man almoſt fancies himſelf dead and buried
'already [g].

'If the image of death, ſays the ſame author, was
'to appear thus dreadful to an army, they would be
'an army of whining milk-ſops; and where is the dif-
'ference but in the apparatus? thus in the field (I
'may add, at the gallows) what is encountered with
'gaiety and unconcern, in a ſickbed becomes the moſt
'dreadful of all objects.'

In Holland, the executions (which are very rare) are incredibly ſolemn. They are performed in the area before the ſtadthouſe, and attended by all the magiſtrates. The effect of this ſolemnity is inconceivable to thoſe who have not obſerved it in others, or felt it in themſelves; and to this, perhaps more than to any other cauſe, the rareneſs of executions in that country is owing.

Now the following method, which I ſhall venture to preſcribe, as it would include all the three particulars of celerity, privacy, and ſolemnity, ſo would it, I think, effectually remove all the evils complained of, and which at preſent attend the manner of inflicting capital puniſhment.

Suppoſe then, that the court at the Old Baily was, at the end of the trials, to be adjourned during four days; that, againſt the adjournment-day, a gallows was erected in the area before the court; that the criminals were all brought down on that day to receive ſentence; and that this was executed the very moment after it was pronounced, in the ſight and preſence of the judges.

Nothing can, I think, be imagined (not even torture, which I am an enemy to the very thought of admitting) more terrible than ſuch an execution; and I leave it to any man to reſolve himſelf upon reflexion, whether ſuch a day at the Old Baily, or a holiday at

[g] Montague, Eſſay 12. Tyburn

Tyburn, would make the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on the minds of every one.

Thus I have, as well as I am able, finiſhed the taſk which I propoſed, have endeavoured to trace the evil from the very fountain-head, and to ſhew whence it originally ſprings, as well as all the ſupplies it receives, till it becomes a torrent, which at preſent threatens to bear down all before it.

And here I muſt again obſerve, that if the former part of this treatiſe ſhould raiſe any attention in the legiſlature, ſo as effectually to put a ſtop to the luxury of the lower people, to force the poor to induſtry, and to provide for them when induſtrious, the latter part of my labour would be of very little uſe; and indeed all the pains which can be taken in this latter part, and all the remedies which can be deviſed, without applying a cure to the former, will be only of the palliative kind, which may patch up the diſeaſe, and leſſen the bad effects, but never can totally remove it.

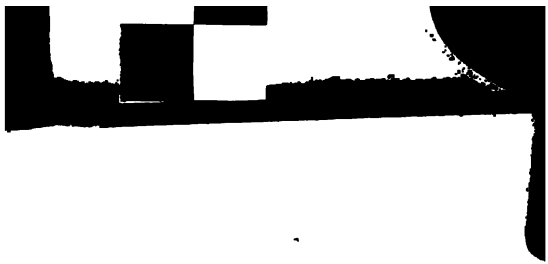
Nor, in plain truth, will the utmoſt ſeverity to offenders be juſtifiable, unleſs we take every poſſible method of preventing the offence. *Nemo ad ſupplicia exigenda provenit, niſi qui remedia conſumpſit*, ſays Seneca [b], where he repreſents the governors of kingdoms in the amiable light of parents. The ſubject, as well as the child, ſhould be left without excuſe before he is puniſhed: for, in that caſe alone, the rod becomes the hand either of the parent or the magiſtrate.

All temptations therefore are to be carefully removed out of the way; much leſs is the plea of neceſſity to be left in the mouth of any. This plea of neceſſity is never admitted in our law; but the reaſon of that is, ſays Lord Hale, becauſe it is ſo difficult to diſcover the truth. Indeed that it is not always certainly falſe, is ſufficient ſcandal to our polity; for what can be more ſhocking than to ſee an induſtrious poor creature, who is able and willing to labour,

[b] De Clementia, lib. ii. Frag.

forced

forced by mere want into diſhoneſty, and that in a nation of ſuch trade and opulence.

Upon the whole, ſomething ſhould be, nay, muſt be done, or much worſe conſequences than have hitherto happened, are very ſoon to be apprehended. Nay, as the matter now ſtands, not only care for the public ſafety, but common humanity, exacts our concern on this occaſion; for that many cart-loads of our fellow-creatures are once in ſix weeks carried to ſlaughter, is a dreadful conſideration; and this is greatly heightened by reflecting, that, with proper care and proper regulations, much the greater part of theſe wretches might have been made not only happy in themſelves, but very uſeful members of the ſociety, which they now ſo greatly diſhonour in the ſight of all Chriſtendom.

END OF VOL. XI.